

NEW ERA  
GRAMMAR  
OF  
MODERN  
IRISH

O'NOLAN

EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND LTD.

# Re-typeset by David R Smith.

daveat168@gmail.com

## Notes and Observations:

- 1 Page 18: para 38: line 11, column 2:: Redundant opening bracket. Here removed.
- 2 Page 20: para 48: line 6:: First letter of word unreadable. Consulting Dinneen suggests it should be 'r'.
- 3 Pages 21/22: para 53:: There is, in the original, a badly made page break, which ruins the sense of a table. I have repaired this break, with reference to Dinneen for confirmation of sense.
- 4 Page 30: para 83 (f): line 2:: Original has '-min', but this does not match the other examples, hence '-' is omitted.
- 5 Page 31: para 84: line 8:: 'λεανβαρθε' spelled without ponc over the 'b'. Ponc here added.
- 6 Page 33: para 93:: Unlike 19, in 99, no space left between 'ηλοι' and 'θεός'. Here ammended.
- 7 Page 41: para 102: line -2:: Fada missing from 'i' in 'τριοτά'. Fada added.
- 8 Page 50: line -9:: Period after 'ιονηα' should be a comma. Corrected so.
- 9 Also: line -6:: Period after 'preps' should be a comma. Corrected so.
- 10 Page 51: line 5:: I am worried about the O.I. reference given in Seanchló. Should it not, like other O.I. references be Times? (or Eurostile?)
- 11 Page 53: para 124 (e): line 4:: Period before comma after 'nrò' makes no sense. Omitted here.
- 12 Also, 2 lines later, 'neactar' introduced with (e). I think this should be (f), and have so emmended.
- 13 Page 56: para 127: line 15:: Between 'θεαζα' and 'cuir', we find 'jnár'. The letter 'j' has no place in Irish, so what has happened here? It looks like a typo. So 'j' omitted.
- 14 Page 57: line -5:: The 'of' in 'o- of deir' is wrongly printed in seanchló. Corrected.
- 15 Page 62: para 133: Present 3rd Pl. :: 'isligro' given without fada over initial 'i'. Assumed to be a typo, and corrected here.
- 16 Page 63: para 4°:: 'Árroócár' here was in title case, contrary to context. Lower case restored.
- 17 Page 65: para 138: line 5:: should not 'céiginnse' be hyphenated as 'céiginn-se'?
- 18 Also: para 139 line 2:: 'The root is ued,' I see this as a typo for 'The root is used,'
- 19 Page 67: para 142: line 8:: Is this a typo? "o-geobáinnse" Should there not be a hyphen before the 's'? I have corrected so.
- 20 Page 84: para 160: line 15:: (Copulative,), :: redundant comma inside brackets removed.
- 21 Page 89: f:: 'cois' missing before 'tame', or 'by' before 'the sea' is unexpected: 'cois' added.  
Also: B: sub (b), extra opening bracket before 'b': deleted.
- 22 Page 90: sub (g); line 3:: hyphen missing after 'h'. All the grammars I have read say it must be there. Dinneen does not give 'heagla' as a valid word.
- 23 Page 99: para 170: sub B: last line :: 'báinnríogáin' found without fada. Corrected here.
- 24 Page 101: para 171: sub 5 :: Stop incorrectly after '5', as '5.'. Deleted.  
Also para 172: line 9 :: Ponc missing from 1st 'c' in 'mceact'. Corrected.
- 25 Page 102: para 173: sub A: line 16, item (b) :: 'C. is better': 'T' should not be seanchló.  
Also line -5: end of line :: index 'a' should be bracketted, as '(a)'.

- 26 Page 104: para 174: line 15 :: No fada on ‘Δ’ in ‘τΔ’. Fada added.
- 27 Page 106: para 175: table :: Formatting inconsistency: Long hyphen between ‘A’ and ‘Inner.’ missing. Here restored.
- 28 Page 107: para B; item 8 :: Type-setter’s error. ‘He’ spelled with Irish ‘é’, while ‘é’ spelled with English ‘e’. Here both corrected.
- 29 Pages 110 & 111: para 179: sub II :: the sub-sub paras from (c) to (f) irregularly formatted. Here regularised.  
Also, rest of page 111 regularised with the revised format. Line boundaries affected.
- 30 Page 112: Continuing to regularise the format shows a dislocation in the context: sub-sub paras (e) 3°, 4°, & 5° look as if they are actually sub (f), (g), (h)., but have been left numbered as is for now lest there be back references made. Format regularising continued on to page 113.
- 31 Page 116; para 186: sub 3° :: widow and orphan here. ‘3°’ moved down a line.
- 32 Pages 118 & 119: para 191: sub (c) :: the subdivisions should, for uniformity, be denoted 1° — 5°, but are in fact denoted ambiguously (a) — (e). I have compromised, in case of back reference to limit the alteration to italicizing: (a) — (e).
- 33 Page 123: lines 3 & 4 :: there is a paragraph break after “C.—san.” This is wrong in format. A normal line break has been used instead.
- 34 Page 124/125: Widows and orphans. Line break adjusted
- 35 Page 128: sub-para (c): line 7 :: “λεανφαιρ σί ðe ðe”: is this repetition an error?
- 36 Page 136: para 222: lines 4-6: Typo in the English, which is also archaic. Better is:— There wasn’t ever one of the Ulster princes who didn’t feel hate and loathing for Connaught men and they for him.
- 37 Page 140: sect IV, line 3 :: I find: “the clause ζιρ . . . .” From Dinneen, I deduce that ‘ζιρ’ should be ‘ζιρ’. So corrected.
- 38 Also same page: Para IV Double Relative Construction: last line :: I find: ‘1° (Δ) is mó—’, and wonder, should ‘a’ really be seanchló? Now, though, on page 142: para 10°: line 5 :: I find ‘(a) ‘SΔ η-Διρ (a) βα ðóic le C.’, and seeing two clauses (a), I wonder. Then further down this page, I see in para 11°, incidentally, in the original incorrectly formatted as ‘11.’: line 6 :: ‘(a) ηΔ η-Διρσιρε (Δ) βα ðóic leo’. Now, I see the light: the second case, which was in Times font, should be in seanchló, like in the third case, and the first case is likewise correct. I have edited the text accordingly.
- 39 Page 143: lines 2 & 3 :: I find ‘ηυαιρ is ðóic leo . . .’, whereas just 7 lines earlier, I find: ‘ηυαιρ is ðóic leo . . .’, clearly the ponc is missing from the ‘c’ in the second case. I have restored it.
- 40 Page 145: para H: last line :: ‘is’ is an English verb in the sentence, and should not be in seanchló. Corrected here.
- 41 Page 146: para 224: line 13 :: ‘If is often omitted’ makes no sense. Context suggests it should read ‘Is is often omitted’. Corrected accordingly.
- 42 Page 149 para 236; item 3° :: ‘Is é céad- . . .’ is unaccountably printed in times face. This looks like Old Irish coding. Eurostile font used instead of Times.
- 43 Page 152: para 248: 2°: items (c) - (e) widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.
- 44 Page 154: para 254: item 2° :: widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.
- 45 Page 156: para 259: line 4 :: ‘S’ is give incorrectly in seanchló. Corrected to Times. Equality sign replaces period for uniformity of format.
- 46 Page 159: Line 1 :: ‘go’ is in the same context as ‘ζιρ’ in the following line. Surely it too, should be in seanchló. So ammended.
- 47 Page 164: lines 8 & 9: (e) widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.  
Also: lines -4 & -3: (e) widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.

- 48 Page 170: Line 4 :: We find “ζο βφυγεαδ Δ”, I would expect “ζο βφυγεαδ Δ”, properly eclipsed. “bf” is not expected in Irish.
- 49 Page 180: para (e): line 4 :: There is a double space after ‘τ.’ for τγεαρνα, before ‘cαδ’. Context suggests that there should be a comma after the abbreviation period.
- 50 Page 192: lines 3 & 4 :: Widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.
- 51 Page 194: item (m): last but 1 line :: ‘an tir sin dar’ labramur’ in Times font. Is this Old Irish? I will treat it so, and use Eurostile font..
- 52 Page 195: item (p) :: Sub-item ‘1.’ marker missing. I suspect it should follow ‘(p)’, as it follows (o) on item on previous item. Emmended accordingly.  
Also item (q): lines 4 & 5 :: Widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.  
Also item (r): lines 10 & 11 :: Widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.
- 53 Page 196: item (s): sub-item 15. :: Widows and orphans: line breaks adjusted.
- 54 Page 197: para 307: line 4 :: surely ‘o them’ should read ‘to them’. Emmended so.  
Also item (f) :: ‘ “at some time in the course of:—” :: there is no closing quote for that before ‘at’. I have added between ‘:’ and ‘—’.
- 55 Page 198: para 308: lines 1-4 :: Irish text in Times font. This looks like Old Irish. Nevertheless, it is better not to use Times. I have therefore used Eurostile.
- 56 Page 200: para 311 (b): line 6 :: ‘Δ mrc ζο léir’. This looks like a typo. Line 2 suggests that one should see ‘Δ neart ζο léir’. I have corrected accordingly.
- 57 Page 201: subpara (i) :: ‘pe ar biē . . .’ should read ‘pé ar biē . . .’. So corrected.  
Also para 312 sub (a): line 4 :: Fada missing from ‘mó’. So corrected.
- 58 Page 209: item 4º: line 1, and following :: The abbreviations ‘1.’, and ‘ll.’ for ‘line’, and ‘lines’, has very poor identity, being easily confused with ‘1.’, and ‘11.’. Therefore the abbreviation will be expanded in full in all cases.
- 59 Page 213: item H. : Last line but 3 :: ‘m’ wrongly in Irish font. Corrected to English.
- 60 Page 214: Last line but 3, end of :: ‘1. Uaim m’ should read ‘2. Uaim in’. Corrected so.
- 61 Page 219: line 13 :: Unmatched parenthesis in expression. Matched with context.
- 62 Page 229: para 354. (b) :: Ponc over the ‘s’ of ‘soud in Roman type. Postfix ‘h’ instead
- 63 Page 231: para 363. sub 7º: line 3 :: semicolon after ‘majesty’ should surely be full stop. So ammended. Also line 5 :: surely ‘lionmairēact’ should have fada over first ‘i’. So ammended.
- 64 Page 233: para 364.—B.: sub 4º: line 2 :: This looks in normal type, like a misspelling, rather than Middle English, so I have used italic.

THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR  
OF MODERN IRISH



# THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

By  
THE REV. GERALD O'NOLAN  
M.A., B.D., D.LITT.  
PROFESSOR OF IRISH. ST. PATRICK'S COLLEGE, MAYNOOTH

Dom is bleáct a reáct do ríomáð,  
Dom is eol a sceol do scaoileáð,  
Dom is áil a cáil do cúimneam,  
O's liom is cóir a glóir do niamáð.  
*(Cf. Keating's poem; 48.)*

EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND  
LIMITED  
DUBLIN AND CORK  
1934

PRINTED BY  
THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY  
OF IRELAND, LIMITED  
89 TALBOT STREET, DUBLIN



## brollać.

Do žaewalajb na hēireann toirōrim an leabrán so, le hioncas go mbeir sé 'na "bác sa bearnain" dóib i scoinnib an béarlačais, agus i scoinnib na gallbácta. Tá teanga arsa uasal againn, agus cár misde dúinn beic móróálac aisti? Tá daoine ann, agus is é is dóic leo gur rud gan rač an žramabac—gur fearr i bfab, adeirid, claoide leis an litribéacć! 'Sead, agus gan teanga ná litribéacć a čuisgint ar don tslacć! Tá dul amuđa uabásac ar an dream san. Is éacćac an cngnam an žramabac do lućt foğluma na teangan agus do lućt leiğte na litribéacća. Ní cngnam go bćí í! Oireann culaić uasal do smaoineam átuinn, ac is mó smaoineam aluinn a loicćear go minic le culaić ġlobalac ġránba do čur uime! "Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci!"

žearóid ó nualláin

as muiğ nuadac dom

7 lá 'le bríğde indiu againn.

1934.



# CONTENTS

*(The numbers at the beginning of the lines refer to the sections).*

	Page
Abbreviations	xiii

## PART I.—PHONOLOGY.

### Section

I.— The modern Irish Alphabet	1
II.— The Simple Vowels (24)	1
III.— The Diphthongs (17)	1
IV.— The Consonants (60)	1
V.— Table of Modern Irish Consonants	2
VI.— Examination of the Sounds	3
Aspiration and Eclipsis, and their causes	5
Dynamic Aspiration and Eclipsis	6

## PART II.—ACCIDENCE.

### Chapter I.—The Article.

1.— Declension	7
3.— Aspiration after	8
4.— Eclipsis „	9
5.— The form <i>nΔ h-</i>	9
7.— Survivals	10

### Chapter II.—The Noun.

8.— Various Kinds of Stems	11
10-20.— First Declension	11
21-31.— Second „	14
32-44.— Third „	16
45-51.— Fourth „	19
52-76.— Fifth „	21

### Chapter III.—The Adjective.

78.— First Declension	29
79.— Second „	29
80.— Third „	29
81.— Fourth „	30

Section	Page
82-3.—Notes	30
84.—Formation	31
85-92.—Comparison	32
93-107.—Numeral Adjectives	36
108.—Adjectives of quantity, not numerals	43
109.—Pronominal Adjectives	45

#### Chapter IV.—The Pronoun.

110.—The Personal Pronouns	47
111-115.—Prepositional Pronouns	48
116.—Notes on „ „	50
117.—G. prons. suffixed to preps.	51
118.—Suffixed -v in Verbs	51
119-120.—Demonstrative Pronouns	51
121.—Interrogative Pronouns	52
122-3.— „ Particles	52
124.—Indefinite Pronouns	53
125.—Reflexive „	54
126-7.—Relative „	54

#### Chapter V.—The Verb.

129.—Simple Verbs	53
130.—Subsidiary Forms	60
131.—Notes on Moods and Tenses	60
133-4.—Second Conjugation	62
135-152.—Compound Verbs	63
153.—The Substantive Verb	75
154.—The Copula	76
155.—Remains of Compound Verbs	77

#### Chapter VI.—Adverbs.

156-8.—Various Kinds	79
159.—Notes on the Adverbs	82

#### Chapter VII.—Conjunctions.

160-1.—Eleven different kinds	84
-------------------------------	----

#### Chapter VIII.—Prepositions.

162.—Simple and Compound. Some governing D., some A., and some either	88
--	----

Chapter IX.—Interjections—(163)	91
---------------------------------	----

**PART III.—SYNTAX.**

Section	Page
<b>Chapter I.—Syntax of the Article.</b>	
164.— Syntactical Rules	92
165.— Article in I., not in E.	95
166.— Vivid use of the Article	97
<b>Chapter II.—Syntax of the Noun.</b>	
167.— Uses of the Nominative	98
168.— The Projected „	98
169.— The Virtual „	98
170.— Apposition	99
171.— Absolute Construction	100
172.— Sense „	101
173.— The Genitive	102
174.— The Dative	104
175-6.— The Accusative	106
177.— The Vocative	108
178.— The Verbal Noun	108
179.— Phrase Nouns	110
180 — Noun Clauses	112
181.— Dynamic Aspiration	113
182.— Remarks on the Cases	113
183.— Number	113
<b>Chapter III.—Syntax of the Adjective.</b>	
184-194.—	115
<b>Chapter IV.—Syntax of the Pronoun.</b>	
195.— Fully declined. Sometimes abs.	121
196.— Virtual N. or A. of Extent in Space	121
197.— The Genitive forms	122
198.— The Dative „	122
199-216.— Prolepsis	122
200.— é, í, íað, eΔð	123
201.— Proleptic sé	123
202.— „, san	124
203.— „, so, seo	124
204.— „, é sin	124
205.— „, síðé (síðí, síð íað)	125
206-11.— „, G. sg. Δ	125
212.— Proportion Sentences	127

Section	Page
213.— Proleptic Δ (G. pl.)	129
214.— The Suffixed Pronouns 1° οε. 2° Δcu. 3° Δir, leis uime, cuige, etc. 4° ΔmlΔið	129
216.— Further remarks on proleptic Δ	132
217.— The Demonstrative Pronouns	133
218.— The Interrogative „	134
219.— Analogical ro	135
220.— Exclamatory “How!”	135
221.— Indefinite Pronouns	136
222.— The Suffixed Pronouns	136
223.— The Relative Pronouns:—	
I.— Of Extent in Degree	137
II.— Direct for Oblique:—	
A.— In Temporal Clauses	137
B.— In Modal „	138
C.— In Complex Elliptical Sentences	139
D.— In a somewhat rare construction	139
III.— The Oblique Rel. Δ <sup>n</sup> , ΔR <sup>c</sup>	139
IV.— Double Relative Construction	140
V.— Multiple Relative Sentences	143
VI.— Negative Relatives	143
VII.— Rel. in Compar. and Superl. Clauses	144
VIII.— Interrogative and Relative	144
IX.— The Compound Relative	144

### Chapter V.—Syntax of the Verb.

The Copula	146
224.— A Logical Copula	146
225.— Subject and Predicate	147
226-244.— Classification Sentences	147
245-260.— Identification „	151
261.— Note on Proper Names	156
262.— The proleptic pronoun in Type I	156
263.— Complex Elliptical Sentences	156
264-9.— Idioms with “is”	157
270.— The Substantive Verb	161
271.— Introductory “cΔ”	163
272-289.— Other Verbs	164
272.— Order of words	164
273.— Number	164

Section	Page
274.— Tense ....	165
275.— Mood ....	165
276.— The Indicative ....	166
277.— The Conditional ....	166
278.— The Subjunctive ....	167
279-285.— Syntax of Conditional Sentences ....	168
286.— Auxiliary <i>ðeim</i> ....	170
287.— Neutral „ ....	170
288.— <i>ðeirum</i> ....	171
289.— <i>þeim</i> ....	171
290.— Impersonal Verbs ....	171
291-2.— The Autonomous Forms ....	172
293.— Special uses of the Participle ....	174

### Chapter VI.—Syntax of Adverbs.

294-5.— Notes ....	176
296-8.— Expression of the Date ....	177

### Chapter VII.—Syntax of Conjunctions.

299.— <i>og</i> ; <i>og</i> , <i>na</i> ; <i>ni</i> . . . <i>na</i> ; <i>ni</i> . . . <i>na ni</i> ; <i>na na</i> . . . . <i>no na</i> ; <i>ma</i> with Condit.; <i>na ma</i> =even; <i>na</i> , than ....	179
--	-----

### Chapter VIII.—Syntax of Prepositions.

300.— Partitive <i>de</i> ....	182
301.— Defining <i>de</i> ....	183
302.— Partitive <i>og</i> ....	183
303.— Prepositional Phrases ....	184
304.— Meanings and Uses of Simple Prepositions ....	184
305.— Prepositions after Nouns and Adjectives ....	189
306.— Prepositions after Verbs ....	191
307.— Various ....	197

### Chapter IX.—Syntax of the Sentence.

308.— Ellipsis and Change of Construction ....	198
309.— Contamination, etc. ....	199
310-312.— Special Problems ....	199
313.— Repetition of Words ....	202
314.— Order of Words ....	203
315.— Simile and Metaphor ....	204
316.— Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets ....	205

Section	Page
317.— Illogical Elements in Construction	205
318.— Chiastic Construction	206
319.— Progressive Forms	206
320.— I. objective rather than subjective	206
321.— I. concrete „ „ abstract	206
322.— Difference of Colouring	207

#### PART IV.—PROSODY.

323.— The Metres	208
324.— Syllabic Metres (Ṫán Ṫíreac)	208
A.— ṪeibíṪe.—Rules. Classification of Consonants. Ex.	208
B.— RannaíṪeacṪ Mór	210
C.— RannaíṪeacṪ Mór ṪáiríṪ	211
D.— „ beas	211
E.— „ „ „	211
F.— SéadṪnaṪ (SéadṪraṪ)	212
G.— ṪeacṪnaṪ Ṫeas	212
H.— „ Mór	213
I.— Cas-ṪáiríṪne	213
J.— RionnaíṪ	213
325.— Accentual Metres	214
A.— Laoi (LaoíṪ)	214
B.— Rosc	215
C.— CaoineadṪ (ṪuireamṪ; MarṪna)	215
D.— Amrán	216

#### Appendix.—WORD FORMATION.

326-337.— A.— Verbal Nouns	221
338.— B.— Other Nouns	224
338.— I.— Combination of Adjective and Noun	224
339.— II.— Combination of Noun and Noun	224
340.— III.— Combination of Indeclinable Particle with Noun	224
341-362.— IV.— By means of Prepositional Prefixes	225
363.— V.— By means of Suffixes. A.— From Adjectives	231
364.— B.— From Nouns	233
365.— C.— From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns	236
366.— D.— From Verbs	236
367.— Formation of Adjectives	237
368.— Formation of Verbs	237



# ABBREVIATIONS.

- A.—Accusative.  
 Aes.—Aesop Δ ἑταίρις σο  
 ηέρινν.  
 ΔÓΘ.—Poems of Aongus Ó  
 Dálaigh.  
 ΔÓR.—Δοῦδζάν Ó Račáile.  
 ΔR.—δεαčá Δοῦδ Ruaið.  
 BK.—Bergin's Keating.  
 bn.—Bible Stories  
 (O'Leary).  
 br.—BRICRIU.  
 CCU.—Céad de Céoltaib  
 Ulað.  
 CΘ.—An CRAOS Deamán.  
 CMΘ.—CRÍOST MAC DÉ.  
 Conn.—Connacht.  
 ĆS.—na Ćeitre Soisgéil  
 (O'Leary).  
 D.—Dative.  
 DĖ.—Keating's "Díon-  
 ðrollac̃."  
 DΘ.—DAn DÉ (M'Kenna).  
 Dott.—Dottin, Manuel  
 d'Irlandais Moyen.  
 E.—English.  
 eis.—EISIRT (O'Leary).  
 es.—EOČAIR-SCIAT AN  
 Aifrin.  
 F.—Feminine.  
 FC.—File AN ČOMARAIG.  
 FF.—Keating's FORUS FEASA  
 FO.—Calendar of Oengus.  
 FSA.—Finn scéalta na  
 h-ARAIBE.  
 G.—Genitive.  
 G.—Guaire.  
 Gr.—Greek.  
 hAIC.—Poems of páDRAIGÍN  
 hAICÉAD.  
 Im.—Imitation of Christ.  
 K.—Keating.  
 KH.—Keating's History.  
 KP.—Keating's Poems.  
 KTB.—TRI BIOR-ĜAOIČE AN  
 ĖAIS.  
 L.—Latin.  
 lmc.—luĝaið mac Con  
 (O'Leary).  
 lo.—lAOI Oisín AR TIR NA  
 n-ÓĜ.  
 lúC.—lúcián (O'Leary).  
 M.—Munster; masculine.  
 mac.—Szealaidēac̃t na  
 macabéac̃.  
 msf.—mo sĝéal féin.  
 N.—Nominative; niam̃.  
 Neut.—Neuter.  
 nnĜ.—nAOI nĜÁĖAD AN  
 Ĝiolla Ėuib̃.  
 P.—Predicate.  
 PF.—Poems of Pearse  
 Ferriter.  
 PH.—Passions & Homilies  
 (leabAR breac̃).  
 PIM.—Primer of Irish  
 Metrics.  
 PL.—Plural,  
 pol.—P. O'Leary.  
 S.—Subject; singular;  
 séADna.  
 Ser.—Seannmóin 7 trí ficið  
 (O'L.).  
 sĝ.—Sĝoč-Ėualað  
 (O'Leary).



# GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

## PART I

### PHONOLOGY.

I.—The mod. I. alphabet has 18 letters:— $\Delta$ , e, i, o, u (vowels); b, c, d, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t (consonants). These 18 symbols have to represent 101 sounds. These sounds are:—

A.—Simple Vowels (24):—1°  $\Delta$ , o, u, e, i (short— $\Delta$ , o, u being broad, e, i being slender); the obscure vowel is represented by  $\text{ə}$ ; a, slightly different from  $\Delta$ . 2°  $\acute{\Delta}$ ,  $\acute{o}$ ,  $\acute{u}$ ,  $\acute{e}$ ,  $\acute{i}$ ;  $\acute{a}$  (long variety of last a in 1°). 3°  $\Delta$ , o, u, e, i; a—all nasal. 4° The modified vowels:— $\acute{a}$ , a (slender);  $\ddot{a}$  (broad e); y (broad  $\acute{i}$ ). 5° Ulster  $\Delta o = \acute{u}$ , with unrounded lips.

II.—Exx. of the Simple Vowels:—1°  $\text{C}\acute{\Delta}\text{p}\tau\acute{\Delta}\text{en}$ , sop, bun, eile, sin. The 2nd syllable of  $\text{c}\acute{\Delta}\text{p}\Delta\text{ll}$  has the obscure vowel; the 1st syllable, has “a.” 2°  $\tau\acute{\Delta}$ ,  $\text{b}\acute{o}$ ,  $\text{c}\acute{u}$ ,  $\tau\acute{e}$ ,  $\tau\acute{i}$ ;  $\acute{\Delta}\text{luinn}$  (W’fd.). 3°  $\text{l}\acute{\Delta}\text{m}$ ,  $\text{c}\acute{o}\text{m}\text{g}\acute{\Delta}\text{r}$ ,  $\text{cu}\text{m}\text{r}\acute{\Delta}$ ,  $\text{s}\acute{e}\text{im}$ ,  $\text{nime}$ ;  $\acute{\Delta}$  (W’fd.). 4°  $\Delta$   $\text{S}\acute{e}\acute{\Delta}\text{in}$ ,  $\text{cise}\acute{\Delta}\text{in}$ , etc.:  $\Delta$   $\text{A}\acute{\Delta}\text{air}$ ,  $\text{g}\acute{\Delta}\text{aitire}$ ;  $\text{c}\acute{\Delta}\text{ol}$ ,  $\text{d}\acute{\Delta}\text{ol}$ ;  $\text{bu}\text{r}\acute{o}\text{e}$ ,  $\text{g}\text{u}\text{r}\acute{o}\text{e}$ . 5°  $\Delta\text{o}\ddot{o}$ .

III.—B.—Diphthongs (17):—(a) Slurred:—1°  $\Delta\text{u}$  (nasal)— $\text{S}\acute{\Delta}\text{m}\text{r}\acute{\Delta}\ddot{o}$ . 2°  $\text{au}$ — $\Delta\text{nn}$ ,  $\text{d}\acute{\Delta}\text{ll}$  (M.). 3°  $\text{ou}$  (nasal)— $\text{d}\acute{o}\text{m}\text{n}\acute{\Delta}\acute{\text{c}}$  (M.). 4°  $\text{ou}$ — $\text{p}\text{oll}$ ,  $\text{g}\acute{\Delta}\text{b}\acute{\Delta}$  (M.). 5°  $\text{ay}$  (nasal)— $\text{a}\text{im}\text{leas}$ . 6°  $\text{ay}$ — $\text{c}\acute{\Delta}\text{inn}\text{t}$ ,  $\text{r}\acute{\Delta}\ddot{o}\text{arc}$ . 7°  $\text{oy}$ — $\text{d}\acute{o}\text{im}\text{inn}$ . 8°  $\text{ey}$ — $\text{f}\acute{e}\text{a}\ddot{o}\text{ma}$ ,  $\text{g}\text{e}\text{ir}\acute{o}\text{e}\text{a}\ddot{o}$ . 9°  $\text{ei}$ — $\text{e}\text{ir}\acute{o}\text{lin}$ . (b) Unslurred:—1°  $\text{ua}$ — $\text{cu}\text{an}$ ,  $\text{bu}\text{an}$ . 2°  $\text{ue}$ — $\text{cu}\text{ain}$ ,  $\text{bu}\text{ain}$ . 3°  $\text{ia}$ — $\text{f}\acute{\Delta}\text{al}$ ,  $\text{c}\acute{\Delta}\text{all}$ . 4°  $\text{ie}$ — $\text{b}\text{ri}\acute{\Delta}\text{in}$ ,  $\text{r}\acute{\Delta}\text{ain}$ . 5°  $\text{i}\acute{a}$ — $\text{s}\acute{g}\acute{e}\acute{\Delta}\text{al}$ ,  $\text{b}\acute{e}\acute{\Delta}\text{al}$  (Parts of M.). 6°  $\text{ya}$ — $\text{r}\acute{\Delta}\text{g}\acute{\Delta}\text{al}\acute{\Delta}$ . 7°  $\text{ye}$ — $\text{r}\acute{\Delta}\text{g}\acute{\Delta}\text{ail}$  (not preceded by art.). 8°  $\text{ia}$ — $\text{f}\acute{\Delta}\text{a}\ddot{o}\text{ain}$  (2nd element, slender a short).

IV.—C.—The Consonants (60):—The Consonants are divided according to:—(a) Point of articulation, into:—1. Labials. 2. Upper Dentals. 3. Lower Dentals. 4. Hard Palatals. 5. Soft Palatals. 6. Chordal—the consonant “h,” of which there are three varieties, (b) Mode of articulation, into:—1° Stop consonants. 2° Continuants. (c) Quality, into:—1. Broad, slender. 2. Nasal, non-nasal. 3. Long, short. 4. Breath, voice.

V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants

BROAD				SLENDER			
NON-NASAL		NASAL		NON-NASAL		NASAL	
Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice
I. Labials:— Stop Continuants— <b>Ḟ, Ḗ, ḥW</b>	<b>b</b> V, W, VW	<b>hm</b> <b>mċ (Ĥ)</b>	<b>m</b> <b>Ĥ. Ŵ. VŴ</b>	<b>p</b> <b>Ḟ (Ḗ)</b>	<b>b</b> V ( <b>Ḗ, ḥ</b> )	<b>hm</b> <b>mċ</b>	<b>m</b> <b>Ĥ (ḥ)</b>
II. Upper Dentals:— Stops— <b>Ṫ</b> Cont.— <b>ḥl</b>  <b>hR</b>	<b>Ḷ</b> { <b>Ḷ</b> { <b>R</b> { Contact between tongue and Approach of tip	<b>tip of</b> } <b>hn</b> teeth of tongue to teeth	<b>n</b>	<b>Ṫ</b> (Down-turned tip. Contact with blade of tongue) <b>hR</b> <b>ḥl</b>	<b>Ḷ</b> { <b>R</b> { <b>Ḷ</b> { Approach of blade of tongue to teeth Contact of blade of tongue with teeth	<b>hn</b> <b>hn</b> <b>hn</b>	<b>n</b> <b>n</b> <b>n</b>
III. Lower Dentals:— Continuants— <b>s, sh</b>	<b>Z, Zh</b>	—	—	<b>s, sh</b>	<b>z, zh</b>	—	—
IV. Hard Palatals:— Stops— Continuants—	— —	— —	— —	<b>c</b> <b>ċ (ċ)</b>	<b>ç</b> <b>ċ (ċ)</b>	<b>hnç</b> —	<b>nç</b> —
V. Soft Palatals:— Stops— <b>C</b> Cont.— <b>Ċ</b>	<b>ç</b> <b>ċ (ċ)</b>	<b>hnç</b> —	<b>nç</b> —	— —	— —	— —	— —
VI. Chordals:— <b>h (ċ, ś, Ḟ)</b>	—	<b>h (ċ, W'fd.)</b> <b>humċ!</b>	<b>—</b> {	<b>h (ċ, ś, Ḟ)</b> <b>ċíḞ,</b> <b>ċuīç, śín</b>	—	—	—

VI.—1° A vowel, diphthong or consonant is nasal, when the voice (or breath) used in its formation issues not only through the lips, but through the nasal cavity as well:— $\lambda\acute{\alpha}\tilde{m}$  ( $\Delta$ ),  $\text{ῥο}\tilde{m}\eta\Delta\acute{\epsilon}$  ( $\text{ou}$ ),  $\zeta\eta\acute{o}\tau\Delta$  ( $n$ ).

2° A diphthong is broad or slender, or both, according to the nature of the component vowels. E.g., 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 (IIIa), 1, 6 (IIIb) are broad. 9 (IIIa), 4, 8 (IIIb) are slender; 2, 7 (IIIb) are broad-slender; 8 (IIIa), 3, 5 (IIIb) are slender-broad.

3° A breath-sound is one in the production of which the vocal chords are not vibrating. Most vowels are voiced, but the final vowel of the Holy Name,  $\acute{\iota}\text{os}\Delta$ , is often unvoiced. Every breath consonant contains a breath vowel, rendered consonantal by the explosion or the audible friction accompanying its production.

4° A stop consonant is one for the production of which the column of breath (or voice) must be stopped momentarily at a certain point. The opening is followed by a puff of air (voiced or unvoiced). Hence these consonants are sometimes called Plosives, or Explosives.

5° A continuant consonant is one in the production of which there is no such stoppage, but only an approach of certain parts of the vocal organs, sufficient to cause audible friction. When the friction is absent we get a vowel. Hence the difference between vowel and consonant is one of degree. Vowels may easily become (or develop) consonants:—Eg., the  $u$ - in  $u\Delta\tilde{m}$  is often “w”; the  $\text{ῥ}$  in  $\acute{n}\acute{\iota}\text{ ῥ}\text{ῥ}u\Delta\text{ῖ}\epsilon$  is a consonantal glide between  $\acute{\iota}$  and  $\acute{u}$ . So consonants may become vowels, or, in combination with vowels, develop diphthongs.— $u\zeta\Delta\text{ῥ}$  becomes  $\acute{u}$ ;  $p\text{oll}$ ,  $\kappa\Delta\text{ῥ}\Delta\text{rc}$ , develop diphthongs.

6° A stop consonant is momentary, and cannot be continued at will. The nasal hum which, in the case of  $m$ ,  $n$ ,  $n\zeta$ , can be continued at will, is not a consonant at all, but the constituent vowel of the consonant. Cf. this vocalic hum with the frictional noise (consonantal) of, say, the English “th” in “though.” This frictional noise, can of course be continued as long as the breath lasts.

7° *m*, *n*, *ng* are not usually classified as stops. But as a complete oral stoppage is essential, we see no valid reason for excluding them from this category. *l* and *r*, are continuants, because, although an oral stoppage is required (see 8°) it is not complete, and the continuant element is consonantal, not (as in the case of *m*, *n*, *ng*) vocalic.

8° *l* and *r* are neither complete stops nor complete continuants. For “*l*” there is a stoppage at the front teeth, with an opening at the sides of the tongue; for “*r*” there is a stoppage at the sides of the tongue, the opening being in front, between the tip (broad *r*) or the blade (slender *r*) of the tongue, and the roots or ivory of the upper teeth. “*l*,” is a lateral trill, “*r*” a frontal trill. The trill is more marked in “*r*” than in “*l*,” and more marked in broad “*r*” than in slender “*r*.”

9° For all broad sounds the main body of the tongue is kept low in the mouth, and high for slender sounds.

10° The consonant “*hW*” (=wh in Eng. “what”) occurs in—*bΔ mΔiɾ uΔiɾ é ʔéΔnΔm*.

11° The consonant “*h*”:—(a) Unvoices a voiced consonant:—*líomɿΔ=líofΔ*, *ámɿΔč=afΔč*. (b) Gives up its natural quality (in M.):—*ní ɿuɿim* (*h*- slender): *ʔroičeΔʔ* (*h*- broad): *mΔiɿ*, *cΔiɿ* (*h*- broad), (c) In the 2nd syll. —*Δč* regularly attracts the accent (in M.). Not, however, if “*h*” intervenes:—*ceΔɿΔč*, *bΔcΔč*: But—*ceΔɿΔč*, *ʔleΔɿɿΔč*, etc.

12° Aspiration:—A single consonant between two vowels was aspirated:—(a) Initially:—*ceΔnn Δn ɸir mÓIR*: *Δn ɿsúil ɿlas*. (b) Medially:—*leΔʔΔR*, *ɸóɿnΔm* (<*ɸo-ɿníom*). (c) Final:—*cΔɿ*, *clúm*, *ɿnΔɿ*, etc.

13° Dynamic Aspiration:—(a) *ɿΔn cos*—legless; *ɿΔn čos*—without one particular leg. (b) *Δn čéΔʔ sɿéΔl*—the 1st story (Asp. irregular. Perhaps to distinguish from—*Δn ceΔʔ sɿéΔl*—the 100 stories), (c) *béΔn šeÁn*—S.’s wife (Regular, as *béΔn* orig. ended in a vowel). *mΔc šeÁm* (Irregular).

14° *h-* is used (where phonetically unjustified):—*do h-órðuiḡeað*, *do h-ínnseað*: but—*ð'órðuiḡ sé*, *ð'innis sé*.

15° Loss of Aspiration:—*crot*: *cruṭ*; the init. const. of Auton. vbs. often resists asp.—*ní mar a braiṭtear a biṭear*—Things are not what they seem.

16° Eclipsis:—(a) Initial:—*Ṯá Ṯtrian*—two thirds (*trian* orig. neut.); *Sliað ḡCua* (*sliað*, neut. *s-* stem, but eclipses on anal. of neut. *o-* and *n-* stems; *Ṯál ḡCais* (*Ṯál* orig. neuter). The final nasal which causes initial eclipsis appears as:—1. *n-* before a vowel—*ceol na n-éan*. 2. *m-* before *b*—*ar an mbóro*. 3. *b-* before *p*—*ar an bport*. 4. *ð* before *f*—*ar an ðfuinneois*. 5. *n-* before *ð*—*ðúnað na nðóirse*. 6. *ð-* before *t*—*ar an Ṯtalam*. 7. *ḡ-* before *c*—*torað na ḡcrann*. 8. *n* (= *nḡ*) before *ḡ*—*clann na nḡaeðeal*. Sometimes initial *s*, *sh* are eclipsed giving *z*, *zh*:—*le saogal na saogal* (= *zaoi*); *tiḡ na saḡart* (= *zaḡart*); *an suiðfá? an sínfá?* Eclipsis, therefore, practically means the voicing of a breath consonant, or the nasalizing of a voiced one.

(b) Medial:—*Coḡað*, *coḡar*, *coḡuas* (in these only the resultant sound is written). In *coiḡcríoc*, *éaḡcóir*, *éaðtrom*, and many others, the eclipsed consonant also appears. Sometimes eclipsing *n-* and the resultant sound are both written:—*comḃlioṭt*, *naonḃar*, *ðeiṭnuḃar* (in the last two *-ḃ-* is the eclipsed *f-* of *fear*). In some borrowed words *ḡ*, *ð*, appear medially for *ç*, *ṭ*:—*Cuḡean* (L. *coquina*), *saḡart* (L. *sacerdos*), *noṽlais* (L. *Natalicia*), *eaḡlais* (Ecclesia), *seḡal* (secale). In *saogal* (L. *saeculum*), *-ḡ-* because of assonance, in poetry, with *baogal*. *no*, med. and final *>nn*:—*beannaṭt* (O.I. *bendacht*), *aiḡreann*, etc.

(c) Final Eclipsis:—*Céað* (<cent-), 100; *céað* (<cintu-), first; *ðéað* (<dent-); *foṽmað* (<forment-), envy; *bríḡro*, *cúḡ*, *ðéaḡ*, etc. Sometimes final *t* > *ð*:—*aiṭcío*, disease (<L. *accidit*); *ceað*, permission (<L. *li-cet*); *lnro*, Shrovetide (<L. *initium*); *ṭríonóro* (<L. *Trinitatem*). When an eclipsing word ends *now* with the sound “*h*,” the latter unvoices

the following initial (already voiced by eclipsis), so that the eclipsis is nullified:—*deic cinn, seacht tíobhlaití an Spioraio Naoim* (*seacht* here follows *deic*). In:—*deic mbliana*, “*ml*” is unvoiced.

(d) Dynamic Eclipsis:—Eclipsis, like Aspiration, is sometimes contrary to phonetic law, and the sg. n. is then used dynamically (as in *trí capall*, on the analogy of *trí céad*):—

*trí téada ba binn, trí créachta sa tír,  
trí naoim-leinb naoimcha tuḡ gear-searc do Chríost;  
A dtrí mbéal, a dtrí gcroíde, a dtrí saor-corp fá líg,  
A dtrí n-éadan ba ḡléigéal aḡ daolaiḃ is díct*

(a) Ó'R. 46) —

Three melodious strings, three glens in the earth,  
Three sainted, holy children who fondly loved Christ,  
Their three mouths, their three hearts, their three noble  
bodies beneath a stone, Their three fair, bright foreheads  
the prey of chafers—it is ruin!



## PART II.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE ARTICLE (1—7).

1.—There is no indefinite article in Irish. The definite article is declined thus:—

Singular.

M.		F.		
N.A. before vowel	}	N.A.D. (before vowels	}	
G. „ ś-		and consonants other than ś-)		Δn‘
All other cases:—	Δn	N.A. (before ś-)		Δn τ-
		G. (before consonants)		nΔ
		( „ vowels)		nΔ h-

Plural.

N.A.D. (before consonants):	nΔ
( „ vowels):	nΔ h-
G. (before consonants):	nΔ <sup>n</sup>
( „ vowels):	nΔ n-

Dual.

M. and F. (in all cases):— Δn.

Examples:—M. sg.—Δn fear so, this man; do’n fear so, to this man; ar an bfeair so, on this man; Δn τ-Δčair p. Ó laogaire, Fr. P. O’Leary; Δn τ-Δrán so nΔ beΔčΔv, this Bread of Life; ceann Δn fear seo, this man’s head; leabair Δn Δčar p. Ó laogaire, Fr. P. O’Leary’s books; gile Δn tsolais, (the) brightness of the light.

F. sg.—**ṬÁ AN ÓRṬÓS SAN BRISTE**, that thumb is broken; **ṬÁ AN ṬEAN SO BREOITE**, this woman is sick; **AN ṬSÚIL ṬEAS AṬÁ TINN** (it is) the right eye that is sore; **ṬÁ FEAR NA MNÁ SAN AR BUILE**, that woman's husband is mad; **BÁRR NA H-ÓRṬÓIGE** (the) top of the thumb.

Pl. M. and F.—**NA FIR SEO**, these men; **NA H-ÓRṬÓZA SAN**, those thumbs; **Cumann NA mḂAN**, the women's Association; **ceol NA n-ÉAN**, the music of the birds.

Dual.—**AN ṬÁ ŠAZART ṬO**, those two priests (taken separately); **AN ṬÁ ASPAL ṬÉAZ**, the twelve Apostles; **AN ṬÁ ḂRÓIS SEO**, these two shoes.

2.—The article was originally an adjective formed from the two demonstratives, **sin** (**sAN**) and **to** (**ṬA**). (Cf. Lat. *is-tum*, *is-tam*). **To-** and **ta-** being, in the article, pretonic, appeared at first as **ṬO-**, **ṬA-**. After prepositions which originally ended in a consonant, the initial **s-** of the article appears, but is usually written with the preposition. E.g.—**AS AN**, **AS NA**; **ins AN**, **ins NA**; **leis AN**, **leis NA**; **ṬAR SAN ÁṬ**, over the ford (but frequently lost here—nearly always in the Pl.—**ṬAR NA BEARṬAIB**). Also this **s-** appears after **ṬO** and **ṬE** (with the Pl.), **ṬO**, **to** (in certain phrases), **ó** (in Pl.) and **tré**. Thus:—**ṬO SNA ṬAOINE sin**, to those persons; **Ṭus AN lÁ inṬiu**, until to-day. Especially in such phrases as:—**seacṬmáin is lÁ inṬiu**, this day week; **Ṭrés AN mḂiṬ suṬáin**, through life everlasting. Instead of **Ṭrés AN**, Munster Irish uses **ṬRÍṬ AN**; but **ṬRé sna** in the Pl.

3.—The article *aspirates*:—

(a) N.A. sg. F.—This is phonetically irregular in the A., which follows the N. in modern Irish. **Ṭ** and **Ṭ** resist this aspiration in both cases. E.g.—**AN ṬÚIL sin**, that desire; **AN ṬOIL**, Will; **AN Ṭuisgint**, Intelligence.

(b) D. sg. of all genders—but not always. Many irregularities arise from the widespread confusion of D. and A., after prepositions which originally governed both cases. **AR AN ḂÓRṬ**, on the table (properly D., but used in U. for A. as well). **AR AN mḂÓRṬ** (properly A., but used in M. for D. as well). Thus, **ṬÁ sé AR AN ḂÓRṬ** (*rest*) would

be right according to the old distinction; but *do* *chai* *se* *anuas* *ar* *an* *mbóro* *é* (motion).

(c) G. sg. M.—*níl* *leigeas* *le* *faḡáil* *ac* *leigeas* *an* *báis*, the only remedy is that of death. *o* and *τ* resist aspiration. *tiḡearna* *an* *tailim*, the landlord; *beaḡa* *an* *buine*, Man's life.

(d) The form *an* *τ-* is always due to an aspirated *s*:—  
1°. In *an* *τ-achair*, *an* *τ-urlár*, *an* *τ-arán*, the father, the floor, the bread (N. sg. M.), the *τ-* is due to the aspiration of the final *-s* of *the article* itself; *ś=h*, which, acting on the *-o-* of the article, changed it into *τ-* (\**sindos* *athir*). In mod. I. the A. follows the N.

2°. In *an* *tsaḡairt*, of the priest (G. sg. M.), and *an* *tsúil*, the eye (N. sg. F.) *τ-* comes from *o-* of the article under the influence of the aspirated *s-* of *the noun*. (\**Sindi* *shagairt*; \**sinda* *shúlis*). The *s* in these cases is aspirated, though undotted. It is better not to say that the article prefixes *τ-* to the noun. The *τ-* is an integral part of the article itself.

#### 4.—The article *eclipses*:—

(a) G. Pl.—*Ceol* *na* *n-éan* (*n-* before vowels), the birds' music; *cur* *na* *bḡear* *le* *céile*, uniting the men.

(b) Eclipsis in the sg. after prepositions which originally governed an A. still remains to some extent, but has been disturbed considerably. (See 3 (b) above).

#### 5.—The article, before vowels, appears as *na* *h-*

(a) In G. sg. F.—*l* *lár* *na* *h-oróce*, in the middle of the night. The *h-* is due to the aspiration of final *-s* of the article, which, in G. sg. F. was \**sindas* (. *innah-*, *na* *h-*).

(b) In N.A.D. pl.—(Irregular in M., *na* *h-éisḡ*, the fishes=O.I. *ind* *éisḡ*. Irregular also in D. pl.—*do* *sna* *h-éiníob*, to the little birds).

6.—The only extant use of the neuter sg. article is what is now called the compound relative. E.g., *Δ*

n-órðuigeann sé òúinn, the (thing which) he orders us (all that he orders us).

7.—Two other notable survivals of special forms of the article are:—

(a) An té, he who, they who (. . O.I. int-í, N.sg. M. of the article, with the deictic particle -í, seen in Gk. houtos-í; Lat. qui . . quo-i).

(b) The noun nò, thing, developed partly from O.I. an-í (Neut. of int-í), that which, the thing which; and partly from ní, the Neut. of O.I. nech=anyone.

The word té is now an indeclinable noun, and can be used either of an individual or of a class; as also of either gender.

“An té òionn síos buailtear cos air,

An té òionn suas ólтар deoç air.” (Proverb).

(They who are down are trodden under foot, they who are successful are toasted.)

## CHAPTER I.

### THE NOUN (8—76).

8.—For the purposes of Declension, Nouns are divided according to the ending of the stem, which may either be vocalic or consonantal. Hence we arrive at the following scheme, which, however, has been much disturbed, owing to the confusion of different types:—

First Decl.	Second Decl.	Third Decl.	Fourth Decl.	Fifth Decl.
O- stems.	Δ- stems	l and U- stems.	lo- and 1Δ- stems.	Consonan- tal stems.

9.—There were three genders in O.I., but the Neuter has to a great extent fallen into disuse. Nouns are now generally reckoned as M. or F.

### FIRST DECLENSION.

10.—All the nouns of this declension are now M., and all end, in N. sg., in a broad consonant, except ζΔ, spear (11), and Ɔ1Δ, God (15).

11.—The Voc. sg., and pl., is preceded by the particle Δ. There are five cases—Nom., Gen., Dat., Ace, Voc. In modern Irish the Acc, in most instances, has the same form as the Nom. Examples:—

**ƑEAR**, a man. Sg.—D.A.N.—ƑEAR. V.G. ƑIR.

**CeΔnn**, head. „ „ ceΔnn. „ cinn. (D. often cionn).

**ScéΔl**, story (originally Neut.)—D.A.N.—scéΔl. V.G. sceil—So:—éΔn, bird; néΔll, cloud; ƑEAR, grass. Genitive—éin, néll, ƑÉIR.

**FOLT**, hair.—Sg. D.A.N, **folt**. V.G. **fuilt**. So:—**cnoc**, hill; **son**, sound; **poll**, hole; **tor**, bush. V.G. **cnuic**, **suin**, **puill**, **tuir**.

**IASC**, fish. Sg. D.A.N.—**iasc** V.G. **éisc**. But **rian**, track (G. **riain**); **srian**, bridle (G. **sriain**); **brian**, Brian (G. **briain**); **biað**, food (G. **bíð**); **biaðal**, devil (G. **biaðail**).

**LEASTAR**, cask, helpless person.—Sg.—D.A.N, **leastar**. V.G. **leastair**. So:—**clairëam**, sword; **solas**, light; **sólás**, consolation; **aingeal**, angel; **bóçar**, road. V.G.—**clairim**, **solais**, **sóláis**, **aingil**, **bóchair**.

Nouns ending in **-ac**, **-eac** have **-ais**, **-is** in V.G. Thus:—

**UALAC**, burden. Sg. D.A.N.—**ualac**. V.G. **ualais**. So:—**donac**, fair; **mullac**, summit; **bealac**, path; **éadac**, cloth; **órlac**, inch. V.G.—**donais**, **mullais**, **bealais**, **éadais**, **órlais**.

**ḡA**, spear, dart, sting, beam, belongs to this declension. G. **ḡa**, **ḡae**, **ḡaoi**. N.A. pl. **ḡaoi**, **ḡaeḡe**, **ḡaoiḡe**. G. pl. **ḡaḡ**, **ḡaeḡe**. D. pl. **ḡaoib**, **ḡaeḡib**.

**COILEAC**, cock.—Sg. D.A.N. **coileac**. V.G. **coilis**. So:—**mairtíneac**, cripple. V.G. **mairtínis**.

**MAC**, son. Sg. D.A.N.—**mac**, V.G. **mic** (O.I. **maic**; mid. I. **meic**).

**LEANB**, child. Sg. D.A.N.—**leanb**, V.G. **leimb**.

### Plural.

12.—	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>FEAR.—</b>	<b>fir</b>	<b>fear</b>	<b>fearaib</b>	<b>a fëara</b>
<b>CEANN</b>	<b>cinn</b>	<b>ceann</b>	<b>ceannaib</b>	<b>a cëanna</b>
<b>SCÉAL</b>	<b>scéala</b>	<b>scéal</b>	<b>scéalaib</b>	<b>a scéala</b>
<b>FOLT.—</b>	<b>fuilt</b>	<b>folt</b>	<b>foltaib</b>	<b>a folta</b>
<b>IASC.—</b>	<b>éisc</b>	<b>iasc</b>	<b>iascaib</b>	<b>a iasca</b>
<b>LEASTAR.—</b>	<b>leastair</b>	<b>leastar</b>	<b>leastruib</b>	<b>a leastra</b>
<b>CLAIRëAM.—</b>	<b>clairimḡe</b>	<b>clairëam</b>	<b>clairimḡib</b>	<b>a clairimḡe</b>
<b>SÓLÁS.—</b>	<b>soillse</b>	<b>soillse</b>	<b>soillsib</b>	<b>a soillse</b>
<b>SÓLÁS.—</b>	<b>sóláis</b>	<b>sólás</b>	<b>sólásuib</b>	<b>a sólása</b>
<b>AINGEAL.—</b>	<b>aingle</b>	<b>aingeal</b>	<b>aingilb</b>	<b>a aingle</b>
<b>BÓÇAR.—</b>	<b>bóitre</b>	<b>bóçar</b>	<b>bóitrib</b>	<b>(a bóitre)</b>

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>Ualaċ.—</b>	ualaiġe	ualaċ	ualaiġib	Δ ualaiġe
<b>Δonaċ.—</b>	Δonaiġe	Δonaċ	Δonaiġib	(Δ Δonaiġe)
<b>bealaċ.—</b>	bealaiġe	bealaċ	bealaiġib	(Δ bealaiġe)
<b>Éaðaċ.—</b>	éaðaiġe	éaðaċ	éaðaiġib	(Δ éaðaiġe)
<b>Órlaċ.—</b>	órlaiġe	órlaċ	órlaiġib	(Δ órlaiġe)
<b>Coileāċ.—</b>	coilīġ	coileāċ	coileāċaib	Δ coileāċa
<b>mac.—</b>	mic	mac	macaib	Δ maca
<b>leanb.—</b>	leanbái	leanb	leanbáib	Δ leanbái

**13.—**Note.—**Scéala**, news; **scéalta**, stories; **claiðmte**, soillse, **angle**, **bóitre**; **ualaiġe**, **Δonaiġe**, **bealaiġe**, **éaðaiġe**, **órlaiġe**; **mic**, **leanbái**.

**14.—****Ualaċ**, **Δonaċ**, **bealaċ**, **éaðaċ**, **órlaċ** form their pl. in **-aiġe** under the influence of **teaċ**, a Neut. s- stem. O.I. pl. **tiġe**. Forms enclosed within brackets (**12**) occur only rarely.

**15.—**N.B.—**ḡia**, God, belongs to this declension. (Lat.—*deus*, *divus*). G. sg.—**ḡé**. V.—**Δ ḡia**. Pl.—**ḡéite**.

**16.—**Many nouns which originally belonged to this declension have passed into others:—**Scáτ**, shadow; **urcóib**, harm; **Δois**, age; **τrian**, a third; **seob**, **seorb**, jewel. G. now—**scáċa** (3rd), **urcóibe** (2nd), **Δoise** (2nd), **τriana** (3rd), **seorb** (1st), **seorbe** (2nd), **seoba** (3rd). **ḡeaman**, demon, has N.A. pl. **ḡeamna** (O.I. *demn(a)e*) owing to Lat. *daemonia* (*Thurn.*). But **ḡeamin** also occurs in mod. I.

**17.—**The Dual:—Used after **ḡá**, two. It is (with rare exceptions) the same in form as the D. sg., and does not change for case. E.g., **ḡá fear**, two men. **ḡá aspirates**.—**ḡá ceann**, **iasc**, **leashtar**, **claiðeam**, **solas**, **bóċtar**, **ḡrl**. The G. pl. is sometimes used as G. Dual:—**lán do ḡá súl**, the full of your two eyes. (**Súl** is 2nd and 3rd declension).

**18.—**Many nouns in **-aċ**, owing to the loss (in speech) of the final **-ċ**, pass into the 4th declension in the pl. Thus:—**ionġna(aċ)**, wonder; **maðra(aċ)**, dog; **slabra(aċ)**,

chain; **MARȢA(ġ)**, bargain, market. Pl.—**IONȢNAÍ**, **MAġRAÍ**, **SLAġRAÍ**, **MARȢAÍ**. Note the pl.—**ġÓIRSE** (**ġORAS**, door), **ÉISSE** (**ÉISEAS**, learned man).

**19.**—Plurals in **-A:**—**CAOR**, berry; **ġEOR**, tear; **ȢOCAL**, word; **ȢIAĊ**, debt; **ȢRUAC**, brink; **SCÉAL**, story; **MEACAN**, parsnip; **PEANN**, pen; **SEOġ**, jewel; **SLÁN**, surety. Pl.—**CAORA**, **ġEORA**, **ȢOCLA** (also **ȢOCAIL**), **ȢIAĊA**, **ȢRUACĊA**, **SCÉALA** (news), **MEACNA**, **PEANNA** (also **pinn**), **SEOĊA** (see **16**), **SLÁNA**.

**20.**—Plurals in **-TA**, **-ĊA:**—**CEOL**, music; **ġÁN**, poem; **ġÚN**, fort; **NÉAL**, cloud; **SEOL**, sail; **COȢAġ**, war; **CUAN**, harbour; **CÉAġ**, hundred; **SCÉAL**, story; **LÍON**, net. Pl. **ceolĊA**, **ġÁNTA**, **ġÚNTA**, **néalĊA**, **seolĊA**, **coȢĊA**, **cuanta**, **céaġĊA** (but **céaġ** after numerals:—**ȢRÍ CÉAġ**, **seacht ġcéaġ**, 300, 700), **scéalĊA** (but **scéala**=news), **líonta**. **COȢAġ** comes from **caĊ**, battle (**u-** stem) with the prep, **con-** prefixed.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

**21.**—All nouns of this declension end, in N. sg., in a broad or slender consonant. All are F.—

		V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>COS</b> ,	foot.—	<b>cos</b>	<b>coise</b>	<b>cois</b>
<b>ȢRÓȢ</b> ,	shoe.—	<b>ȢRÓȢ</b>	<b>ȢRÓISE</b>	<b>ȢRÓIS</b>
<b>long</b> ,	ship	<b>long</b>	<b>luinge</b>	<b>luing</b>
<b>CLANN</b> ,	children.—	<b>clann</b>	<b>clainne</b>	<b>clainn</b>
<b>ȢRIAN</b> ,	sun.—	<b>ȢRIAN</b>	<b>ȢRéine</b>	<b>ȢRéin</b>
<b>ȢIAN</b> ,	pain.—	<b>Ȣian</b>	<b>péine</b>	<b>péin</b>
<b>SCIAN</b> ,	knife.—	<b>scian</b>	<b>scine</b>	<b>scin</b> ( <b>scian</b> )
<b>CIALl</b> ,	sense.—	<b>ciall</b>	<b>céille</b>	<b>céill</b>
<b>ȢÉAȢ</b> ,	branch.—	<b>ȢÉAȢ</b>	<b>Ȣéise</b>	<b>Ȣéis</b>
<b>ȢRÉAM</b> ,	root	<b>ȢRÉAM</b>	<b>Ȣréime</b>	<b>Ȣréim</b>
<b>SPÉAR</b> .	sky.—	<b>spéar</b>	<b>spéire</b>	<b>spéir</b> .

**22.**—

<b>lil</b> ,	<b>lily</b> .—	<b>lil</b>	<b>lile</b>	<b>lil</b>
<b>luiġ</b> ,	<b>herb</b> .—	<b>luiġ</b>	<b>luiġe</b>	<b>luiġ</b>
<b>ȡUais</b> ,	<b>prize</b> .—	<b>ȡUais</b>	<b>ȡUaise</b>	<b>ȡUais</b>
<b>Áic</b> ,	<b>place</b> .—	<b>Áic</b>	<b>Áice</b>	<b>Áic</b> .



23.—Nouns in -eac̃, -ac̃, have -ige, -aige in G., and -ig̃, -aig̃ in D.—

	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>Cailleac̃</b> , hag.—	cailleac̃	caillige	caillig̃
<b>blátc̃</b> , buttermilk.—	blátc̃	blátaige	blátaig̃
<b>lačac̃</b> , mud, mire.—	lačac̃	lačaige	lačaig̃.

But note the monosyllabic nouns:—

<b>beac̃</b> , bee.—	V.A.N. beac̃.	G. beice.	D. beic̃
<b>Sceac̃</b> , briar.—	„ sceac̃	„ sceice	„ sceic̃
<b>Creac̃</b> , plunder.—	„ creac̃	„ creice	„ creic̃

24.—Syncope often takes place in G.sg.—**buir̃ean**, company; **bruig̃ean**, palace. G.—**buir̃one**, **bruig̃ne**.

25.— <b>Deoc̃</b> , drink.—	V.A.N. deoc̃.	G. òige	D. òig̃
<b>muc</b> , pig.—	„ muc	„ muice	„ muic̃

26.—**ζό**, lie, deceit (now 4th declension, G. **ζό**) originally belonged to this declension (O.I. G. sg., **gue**). **τοῖλ**, will (G. now **τοῖle**, **τοῖla**. O.I. G. **tuile**); **γαβάλ** (and all verbals in -άλ), O.I. **gabál**, G. -ae, now G. -a (3rd); **pearsa** (G. now -n (5th), originally N. **persan**, G. **persine** (L. **persona**); **litir** (orig. **Δ-** stem, L. **litera**), G. now **litre**, **litreac̃**, Pl. **litre**, **litreac̃a** (due to K-stems).

27.—

Plural.

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>Cos</b> , foot.—	cosa	cos	cosaib̃	Δ cosa
<b>brós̃</b> .—	brós̃a	brós̃	brós̃aib̃	Δ brós̃a
<b>long̃</b> .—	long̃a	long̃	long̃aib̃	Δ long̃a
<b>Clann</b> .—	clanna	clann	clannaib̃	Δ clanna
<b>ḡrian</b> .—	ḡriana	ḡrian	ḡrianaib̃	Δ ḡriana
<b>ḡrian</b> .—	ḡriana	ḡrian	ḡrianaib̃	Δ ḡriana
<b>pian</b> .—	piaña	piaña	piañaib̃	Δ piaña
<b>Scian</b> .—	sciana	scian	scianaib̃	Δ sciana
<b>Ciall</b> .—	—	—	—	—
<b>ḡéas̃</b> .—	ḡéas̃a	ḡéas̃	ḡéas̃aib̃	Δ ḡéas̃a
<b>Fréam̃</b> .—	fréam̃a(̃a)	fréam̃(̃a)	fréam̃a(̃a)ib̃	Δ fréam̃a(̃a)
<b>Spéar̃</b> .—	spéar̃a	spéar̃a	spéar̃aib̃	Δ spéar̃a
<b>lil</b> .—	lile	lil	lilib̃	Δ lile

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
luib.—	luibeanna	luibeann(Δ)	luibeannaiḃ Δ luibeanna	
ḡuais.—	ḡuaiseanna	ḡuaiseann(Δ)	ḡuaiseannaiḃ Δ ḡuaiseanna	
áit.—	áiteanna(-ΔČA)	áiteann	áiteannaiḃ Δ áiteanna	
Cailleac.—	cailleacA	cailleac	cailleacaiḃ Δ cailleacA	
beac.—	beacA	beac	beacaiḃ Δ beacA	
Sceac.—	sceacA	sceac	sceacaiḃ Δ sceacA	
Creac.—	creacA	creac	creacaiḃ Δ creacA	
ḡeoč.—	ḡeočA	ḡeoč	ḡeočaiḃ Δ ḡeočA	
muc.—	mucA	muc	mucaiḃ Δ mucA	

**28.**—The Dual.—(Same in form, in all cases, as D. sg.). (Δn ḡÁ) čois, ḡróig, luig, čéill, žéig, řréim, spēir, lil, luib, ḡuais, áit, čailliž, ḡeic, sceic, čreic, ḡig, muc.

**29.**—**bean**, a woman.—N.A. pl.—mnÁ. G. ban. D. mnáiḃ. V. Δ mnÁ. N.B.—This noun, and the F. of the article are the only Δ- stems that follow the original declension. The G. sg. in -e in the 2nd declension is irregular.

**30.**—Note the *strong* plurals in **-anna**, **-acA**:—

Cúis, cause (cúiseanna); béim, stroke (béimeanna); ḡuais, contrivance (ḡuaiseanna); ḡeil, lathe (ḡeiteanna); léim, leap (léimeanna); scoil, school (scoileanna); céim, step (céimeanna); řeis, festival (řeiseanna); sráio, street (sráioeanna); páirc, field (páirceanna); uair, hour, time (uairreanna, uaireanna); of these, béim, céim, léim, réim, were nn-stems, and belong by right to the 5th declension. Scol, scoil, has also a pl. scolacA (U.).

**31.**—Plurals in **-acA**, **-eacA**:—

litir, letter; obair, work; paidir, prayer; óráio, speech; uḡ, egg; ciúmais, edge; truaill, scabbard; leac, stone; coisřeois, fortnight; aibíḃ, habit, costume.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

**32.**—This declension includes:—

(a) M. nouns in **-óir**, **-ḡóir**, **-Δḡóir**, **-uir**, **-neoir**:—  
bÁḡóir, boatman; řiḡeΔḡóir, weaver; ḡočtúir, doctor; čáilluíir, tailor; scriḡneoir, writer.

(b) Abstracts, Collectives, and others, in **-ΔĆτ**. All F. except **ῥυαĆτ**, cold, M. and monosyllabic nouns like **ceαĆτ**, lesson; **céαĆτ**, plough; **τpaĆτ**, river bank; **reαĆτ**, statute. **TeαĆτ**, coming, and **banntpaĆτ**, women-folk, are M. and F.

(c) Other nouns ending in consonants (M. or F., as a rule, according as the final consonant is broad or slender). Names of males, however, are M.—**λιαιζ**, physician, surgeon.

**33.**—I- stems in O.I. (as in Lat.) were M., F. or Neuter. U- stems (as in Lat.) were M. or Neuter.

## EXAMPLES.

**34 (a).**—

<b>ḃÁḃÓIR.</b> —N.A.V.D.	<b>ḃÁḃÓIR</b>	G.	<b>ḃÁḃÓRA.</b>
<b>ḤIḡEΔḃÓIR</b>	„	<b>ḤIḡEΔḃÓIR</b>	„ <b>ḤIḡEΔḃÓRA</b>
<b>ḂOĆTÚIR.</b> —	„	<b>ḂOĆTÚIR</b>	„ <b>ḂOĆTÚRA</b>
<b>ṬÁILLIÚIR.</b> —	„	<b>ṬÁILLIÚIR</b>	„ <b>ṬÁILLIÚRA</b>
<b>SCRÍḂNEÓIR.</b> —	„	<b>SCRÍḂNEOIR</b>	„ <b>SCRÍḂNEORA</b>

**35 (b).**—

<b>ḃEΔNNAĆτ.</b> —N.A.V.D.	<b>ḃEΔNNAĆτ</b>	G.	<b>ḃEΔNNAĆṬA</b>
<b>MAḤḤAĆτ.</b> —	„	<b>MAḤḤAĆτ</b>	„ <b>MAḤḤAĆṬA</b>
<b>ḤYAĆτ.</b> —	„	<b>ḤYAĆτ</b>	„ <b>ḤYAĆṬA.</b>

**36 (c).**—

<b>CNÁḡ,</b> bone (M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>cnáḡ</b>	G.	<b>cnáḡA</b>
<b>ḡNÍOḡ,</b> deed (M)	„	<b>ḡníoḡ</b>	„	<b>ḡníoḡA</b>
<b>RUḂ,</b> thing (M)	„	<b>RUḂ</b>	„	<b>RUḂA</b>
<b>REΔNn,</b> star (M)	„	<b>REΔNn</b>	„	<b>REΔNNA.</b>

**37 (d).**—

<b>ḤUIL,</b> blood (F)	N.A.V.D.	<b>ḤUIL</b>	G.	<b>ḤOLA</b>
<b>ḤEOIL,</b> flesh (F)	„	<b>ḤEOIL</b>	„	<b>ḤEOḤA</b>
<b>ṬÁIN,</b> multitude (F)	„	<b>ṬÁIN</b>	„	<b>ṬÁNA</b>
<b>MUIR,</b> sea (M.F.)	„	<b>MUIR</b>	„	<b>MAṬA</b> (orig. Neuter)
<b>ḤIAIḡ,</b> physician (M)	„	<b>ḤIAIḡ</b>	„	<b>ḤEΔḡA.</b>

## 38.—

<b>BIČ</b> ,	world	(M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>bič</b>	G.	<b>beΔčΔ</b>
<b>FIOS</b> ,	knowledge	(M)	„	<b>fios</b>	„	<b>feΔsΔ</b>
<b>LIOS</b> ,	fort	(M)	„	<b>lios</b>	„	<b>leΔsΔ</b>
<b>leAs</b> ,	improvement	(M)	„	<b>leAs</b>	„	<b>leΔsΔ</b>
<b>CIČ</b> ,	shower	(M)	„	<b>cič</b>	„	<b>ceΔčΔ</b>
<b>CUIŲ</b> ,	share	(F)	„	<b>cuiŲ</b>	„	<b>coŲΔ</b>
<b>CRIOS</b> ,	girdle	(M)	„	<b>crios</b>	„	<b>creΔsΔ</b>
<b>ŲRUIM</b> ,	back	(M)	„	<b>Ųruim</b>	„	<b>ŲromΔ</b>
<b>ŲROM</b> ,	human back	(M)	„	<b>Ųrom</b>	„	<b>ŲromΔ</b>
<b>RIČ</b> ,	running	(F)	„	<b>rič</b>	„	<b>reΔčΔ</b>
<b>FIOŲ</b> ,	tree, wood	(M)	„	<b>fioŲ</b>	„	<b>feΔŲΔ</b>

39.—**CRÓ** (G. *id.* F.), gore, blood, death (O.I. *crú*, G. *cró*); and **cnó**, nut, M. or F. (G. *id.*, Pl. *cnÁ*, *cnóite*; O.I. *cnú*, G. *cnó*, F.) belong to this declension, the ending being obscured by the long vowel.

## 40.—Changes:—

**FRAIŠ**, F., rafters (O.I. G. *frega*, wall, partition). G. now **fraiše**. Pl. **fraščΔčΔ**.

**ŠRAIŠ**, F., stud of horses (O.I. G. *grega*). G. now **šraiše**.

**čAILM**, F., sling (O.I. G. *telma*). G. now **čailme**. Pl. **čailmeΔčΔ**.

**ŲORUS**, M., door (O.I. Neut. G. *doirseo*). G. now **Ųorus**. Pl. **Ųóirse**.

**Δmus**, M., hit, etc. (O.I. G. *aimseo*). G. now **Δmuís**.

**čÓmus**, M., guess, riddle (<\*to-fo-mess. O.I. G. *toimseo*, now **čómuís**).

**líon**, M., number, etc. (O.I. G. *lina*, now **lín**).

41.—**ŠníomΔRčΔ**, used as N. pl. of **šníom**, is really the pl. of **šníomRAŲ** (Collective), deeds. Cf. **connΔRčΔ**, compacts, covenants, pl. of **connRAŲ**.

## Plural.

42.—	<b>bÁŲóIR</b>	<b>fIŠeΔŲóIR</b>	<b>ŲoččÚIR</b>	<b>SCRÍŲneoir</b>
V.A.N.G.	<b>bÁŲóIRÍ</b>	<b>fIŠeΔŲóIRÍ</b>	<b>ŲoččÚIRÍ</b>	<b>SCRÍŲneoirÍ</b>
D.	<b>bÁŲóIRÍŲ</b>	<b>fIŠeΔŲóIRÍŲ</b>	<b>ŲoččÚIRÍŲ</b>	<b>SCRÍŲneoirÍŲ</b>

43.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
beannaċt.—	beannaċta	beannaċt	beannaċtaiḃ
mallac̃t.—	mallac̃ta	mallac̃t	mallac̃taiḃ
Cnám.—	cnáma	cnám	cnámairḃ
ḡníom̃.—	ḡníom̃arċta	ḡníom̃arċta	ḡníom̃arċtaiḃ
Ruḃ.—	ruḃaí	ruḃaí	ruḃaíḃ
Reann.—	reanna	reann	reannairḃ

44.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
ṡáin.—	ṡáinte	ṡáinte	ṡáintirḃ
Muir.—	muire	muir	muirirḃ
liaiḡ.—	leaḡa	liaiḡ	leaḡairḃ
lios.—	leasa	lios	leasairḃ
Ciċ.—	ceac̃ana	ceac̃ana	ceac̃anairḃ
Cuiḃ.—	coḃac̃a	coḃac̃a	coḃac̃airḃ
Crios	creasa	crios	creasairḃ
ḡruim (ḡrom)	ḡromanna	ḡromanna	ḡromannairḃ

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

45.—This includes:—

(a) Personal nouns in —airḃe (—uirḃe), —aire (—ire), —all M.

(b) Diminutives in —ín. All M.— Originally o— stems (1st declension).

(c) Abstracts in —e, formed from adjectives. All F. nowadays.

(d) All nouns ending in vowels, except ḡia, ḡa (1st decl.); cró, cnó (3rd decl.), and those which belong to the 5th decl. (consonantal stems).

(e) Note especially that lá, day (G. lae, Poet, laoi, D. lá, ló) and ó, ua, grandson (V.G. uí, N.A. pl. uí) belong to this declension, and *are the only nouns that preserve traces, in the sg. of the original inflections.*

## EXAMPLES.

## Singular.

46.—(a) ḡairḃe, thief, M. ṡeac̃aire, messenger, M.

(b) Cairín, girl, M. báirḃín, little boat. M.

(c) **Ḑéine**, ardour, intensity, F. **Óige**, youth. F.

(d) **Croiḁe**, heart, M. **Ḑuine**, person, M. **Ḑiaḁnaise**, testimony, F. **Oiḁce**, night, F. **Aiḁne**, acquaintance, F. **Ré**, life, time, space, F.

**47.**—All the nouns in these classes (**46**) are *the same in all cases in the sg.*,—except with regard to aspiration and eclipsis. **lá** and **ó** are inflected as indicated in **45** (e).

### Plural.

**48. Ḑaḁaiḁe.**—V.A.N.G.—**Ḑaḁaiḁe**. D **Ḑaḁaiḁiḁ**. So all nouns with this termination, and others ending in —ḁe, —ḁe, e.g., **Croiḁe**, heart, **Riḁe**, forearm. Pl.—**Croiḁe**, **Riḁe**.

**Teaḁtaire.**—V.A.N.G.—**Teaḁtairi**. D.—**Teaḁtairiḁ**. So **Teaḁtairi**, *etc.*

**Caílin.**—V.A.N.G.—**Caílini**. D.—**Caíliniḁ**. So all nouns in —ín.

**Ḑéine**, 7rl.—These abstracts are not used in the pl.

**Ḑuine.**—V.A.N.G.—**ḁaoine**. D.—**ḁaoiniḁ**.

**Oiḁce.**—V.A.N.G.—**oiḁceanta** (following **laeḁeanta**, pl. of **lá**, day). Also **oiḁcí**, and (in Donegal) —**anna**.

**Aiḁne**, commandment—V.A.N.G.—**aiḁeanta**. D.—**aiḁeantaḁ**.

**Ré.**—V.A.N.G.—**réiḁe**. D.—**réiḁiḁ**.

**Reiḁe**, ram.—V.A.N.G.—**reiḁí**. D.—**reiḁiḁ**.

**lá.**—V.A.N.G.—**laeḁe**, **láíḁe**, **laeḁeanta**. D.—**laeḁiḁ**, **láíḁiḁ**, **laeḁeantaḁ**.

**Ó, ua.**—V.A.N.—**uí**. G.—**ó, ua**. D.—**uíḁ** (often used for N. in place names, e.g., **Uíḁ Laoḁaire**).

**49.**—Plurals in —ḁe:—In addition to the nouns specified in **48** (under **Ḑaḁaiḁe**) the following add —ḁe:—**Caoi**, way, *etc.* F.; **ḁaoi**, fool, M.; **ḁraoi**, druid, M.; **ḁlaoi**, curl, F.; **laoi**, lay, F.; **ḁínné**, witness, M.; **míle**, thousand, mile, M. (but after numerals the pl. is **míle**,—O.I. *mili*—**trí míle**, **seāḁt míle**, 3,000, 7,000);

ré, life, F.; ní, thing, M.; saoi, sage, M. Of these ḡsaoi, saoi, ḡraoi are properly consonantal stems. Plurals:—caoiċe, ḡsaoiċe, ḡraoiċe, ḡlasoiċe, lasoiċe, fínnéċe, mílċe, réiċe, neíċe (niċe), saoiċe.

50.—Plurals in —te:—léine, shirt, F., baile, town, M., sloinne, surname, M., teine, fire, F., cúinne, corner, M. Pl.—léinte (also léinteáċa), bailte (also bailtí, bailteáċa), sloinnte, teinte (also teinteáċa), cúinnte (also cúinní).

51.—múille, mule, M.—Pl.—múillí, múillte.

ḡnó, work, M.—Pl.—ḡnóċa, ḡnóċaí.

Uinge, ounce, ingot, F.—Pl.—uingeáċa.

easna, rib, lath, F.—Pl.—easnaí, easnaċa, easnaiċeáċa.

### FIFTH DECLENSION.

52.—We have in Irish stems ending in:—1° τ- or ḡ-. 2° c-. 3° ḡ-. 4° n-. 5° nn-. 6° -nτ (>ḡ). 7° r. 8° -s.

In 1°—6°, the characteristic consonant of the stem disappears in the N. sg. (except in ḡéaḡ, tooth, teeth), but generally reappears in the G. sg., so that we have the syllables -aḡ, -aċ, -ḡ (ríog), -an, -ann, -aḡ (from -ant), serving in mod. I. as G. endings. The original G. ending is lost. In 7° the characteristic consonant (-r) appears in *all* the cases; while in 8°, it (-s) *disappears* in all (except mí, month, G. míosa. Here it is preserved by the originally preceding -n).

### T. and D. Stems.

#### Singular.

53.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
teangā, tongue, F.—	teangā	teangāḡ	teangāiḡ
ḡleo, strife, noise, M.—	ḡleo	ḡliaḡ	ḡliaiḡ
saoi, sage, M.—	saoi	suaḡ	saoi
ḡraoi, druid, magician, M.—	ḡraoi	ḡruaḡ	ḡraoi
Cré, earth, dust, clay, F.—	Cré	Criaḡ	Criaiḡ
ḡé, spark, dust, smoke, F.—	ḡe	ḡiaḡ *	ḡiaiḡ

\* Now mostly ḡéiċe. I nḡeire na ḡéiċe—at the point of death.

V.A.N.      G.      D.

Cion, sin, fault, M. and F.— cion.      cionad̃.      cionaid̃.

**54.**—Many of these stems have passed over to the 4th declension:—**TEANGA**, *teine*, *file*, *léine*. **TROIĞ**, foot, F., has now G. in *-e*, or *-če*. All these nouns show the original nature of the stem in the pl., where the dental appears:—**TEANGTAČA**, *teinte*, *filí* (from *filead̃*), *léintead̃*, *troiğče*. **MÍLE**, soldier, orig. G. *mílead̃* (Lat. miles, milit-is) has now passed over to the 1st decl. N.—*mílead̃*, G. *mílir̃*.

## C- (K-) Stems.

**55.**—

V.A.N.      G.      D.

<b>CAČAIR</b> , city, F.	CAČAIR	CAČRAČ	CAČAIR (CAČRAIĞ)
<b>NAČAIR</b> , snake, F.	NAČAIR	NAČRAČ	NAČAIR (NAČRAIĞ)
<b>CRÁIN</b> , female, sow, F.	CRÁIN	CRÁNAČ	CRÁIN (CRÁNAIĞ)
<b>CAORA</b> , sheep, ewe, F.	CAORA	CAORAČ	CAORA (CAOIRIĞ)
<b>SAIL</b> , willow, beam, F.	SAIL	SALAČ	SAIL (SAILIĞ)
<b>Ceo</b> , mist, M.	ceo	CIAČ (ceoiğ)	now ceo

**56.**—Many nouns not originally belonging to this declension have been attracted to it, especially in the pl. Thus:—**DAIR**, oak, F., has G. sg. *daire*, *darac̃*, *daraiğe*; **TEAMAIR**, Tara, G. *teamrac̃* (O.I.G. *Temro*); **CAČAOIR**, chair, G. *cačaoireac̃* (A. pl. in P.H. p. 163 *cathaire*); **AILL**, cliff, F. (G. *aille*) has pl. *ailltreac̃*, as well as *aille*; so **AČAIR**, **MÁČAIR**, **BRÁČAIR**, **DRIOTÁIR**, **SIÚR**, **DRIOFÚR** (*deirb̃síúr*), all of them r- stems, have pl. *ait̃treac̃*, *máit̃treac̃*, *bráit̃treac̃*, *driotáireac̃*, *siúrac̃*, *deirb̃séarac̃*. The mod. *sceac̃*, G. *sceice* (**23**), however, was, in early Irish, N. *scé*, G. *sciac̃*. For other plurals in *-ad̃* see **30**.

## G- Stems.

**57.**—**RÍ**, King, M.—N.A.V. *rí*. G. *ríog̃*. D. *ríğ̃*. In the sg., however, *ğ̃* usually disappears, so that all cases are *rí*. N. pl. *ríğče*. **BRÍ**, a hill, M. N.A.V. *brí*. G. *breağ̃*. D. *bríğ̃*.



## N- Stems.

58.— V.A.N. **CÚ**, hound, F. (M. in O.I.). G. con. D. coin.

„ **EASCÚ**, eel. G. eascon. D. eascoin.

„ **BRÓ**, quern, F. G. brón. D. bróin.

„ **BREIČEAM**, judge M. G. breičeamhan (breičim). D. breičeamhan (breičim).

**ḡobnait** (Girl's name); **naoiðe**, babe, M.F.; **talaim**, earth, M.F.; **múma**, Munster, F.; **Alba**, Scotland, F. also belong to this declension.

**teangā** (53) and **pearsa** (orig. a- stem) have been attracted to this declension. G. teangan, pearsan. D. teangain, pearsain.

## NN- Stems.

59.—

V.A.N.	— <b>BRÚ</b> , womb, F.	G. bronn	D. bruinn
„	— <b>EIRE</b> , Ireland, F.	„ éireann	„ éirinn
„	— <b>ḡUALA</b> , shoulder, F.	„ ḡualann	„ ḡualainn.

Like these are declined—**ḡbula**, Host, F.; **ḡaða**, smith, M.; **ḡbda**, river, F.; **ðíle**, deluge, F.

60.—The old Neuters:—**ainm**, M.F., **béim**, F., **céim**, M.F., **léim**, F., **réim**, F., **ḡreim**, M., **tuicim**, F., **naidom**, F. (mostly **snaidom**, F., now), **maidom**, M.F., **seinm**, M., **ḡairm**, F. **foḡluim**, F., belonged originally to this declension. Owing to a short G. ending (—s, instead of —os) they dropped —nn in G. sg. which is now:—**ainme**, **béime**, **céime**, **léime**, **réime**, **ḡreama**, **tuicme**, **naðoma** (**snaidome**), **maðoma**, **seanma** (**seinme**), **ḡarma**, **foḡluma**. They are generally put in 2nd or 3rd declension, but they are nn- stems, and —nn- generally appears in the pl.—**ainmanna** (**ainmneada**), **béimeanna**, **céimeanna**, **léimeanna**, **réimeanna**, **ḡreamanna**, **naðomanna**, **maðomanna**, **ḡarmanna**. **Tuicim**, **seinm**, **foḡluim** do not occur in pl. **Im**, butter, M. (G. ime) and **míor**, portion, F. (G. míre; Pl. míoranna) also belong to this declension.

**61.**—Many of the nouns in **59** tend to use D. sg. as N. and inflect according to 2nd declension. V.A.N.D. **broinn**, **Ablainn**, **Abainn**, **óílinn**. G. **broinne** (**bruinne**), **Ablainne**, **Abainne**, **óílinne**.

**62.**— NT- Stems.

N.A.	— <b>CARA</b> , friend, M.F.	G. <b>carao</b>	D. <b>caraid</b>
V.	— <b>Fice</b> , twenty, F.	„ <b>ficéao</b>	„ <b>ficíao</b>
„	— <b>Áma</b> , enemy, M.F.	„ <b>ámáo</b>	„ <b>ámáao</b>
„			
„	— <b>Deao</b> , tooth, teeth, M.	„ <b>deao</b> (Orig. Neut. Now 1st declension)	
„	— <b>uaða</b> (Proper Name)	„ <b>uaðat</b> (t=d).	
		<b>máḡ uaðat</b> , Maynooth.	

**63.**— R- Stems.

V.A.N.D.	— <b>Ačair</b> , father, M. G. <b>ačar</b> .	
„	— <b>Máčair</b> , mother, F. G. <b>máčar</b> .	
„	— <b>Bráčair</b> , kinsman, friar, M. G. <b>bráčar</b> .	
„	— <b>Oriočair</b> , brother, M. G. <b>oriočar</b> .	
„	— <b>Siúr</b> , sister, female relative, nun, F. G. <b>seáčar</b> ( <b>siúire</b> , <b>siúra</b> , <b>seáčrac</b> . D. sometimes <b>siair</b> ).	
„	— <b>Orifíúr</b> (= <b>Deirbösiúr</b> ), sister, F. G. <b>oriféar</b> ( <b>deirböseáčar</b> ).	

**64.**— S- Stems.

(V.)A.N.D.	— <b>Sliab</b> , mountain, M. G. <b>sléibe</b> .	
(V.)A.N.	— <b>Teac</b> , house, M. „ <b>tiḡe</b> . D. <b>tiḡ</b> .	
(V.)A.N.	— <b>Máḡ</b> , plain, F. „ <b>muḡe</b> ( <b>maiḡe</b> ). D. <b>muḡ</b> .	
V.A.N.	— <b>leac</b> , side, F. „ <b>leiḡe</b> . D. <b>leiḡ</b> .	
„	— <b>Uḡ</b> (Munster <b>uö</b> ), egg, F. G. <b>uiḡe</b> ( <b>uibhe</b> ). D. <b>uiḡ</b> ( <b>uib</b> ).	

In Munster generally M. G. **uib**.

V.A.N.D.	— <b>ḡleann</b> , glen, M. G. <b>ḡleanna</b> (O.I. <b>glinne</b> ).	
„	— <b>neam</b> , sky, heaven, F. G. <b>neime</b> , <b>nime</b> .	

**Clú**, fame, M.F. (G. **clú**), and **ḡné**, species, F. (G. **ḡné**) are s- stems. O.I. G. **gnee**, **clua**=**cluae**).

## Plural of Consonantal Stems.

**65.**—Consonantal stems form their pl.—(a) By attenuating the G. sg. (b) By adding **-a** to G. sg. (c) By adding **-e** to G. sg. (d) Some by adding **-í**. (e) Some by adding **-ača**, **-anna**, **-če**, or **-za**.

**66.**—Outside **s-** stems (which in O.I. had pl. in **-e**), and neuter **nn-** stems (which had N. pl. in **-nn**), the N. pl. ended in a slender consonant (method a). The other methods are due, partly to **s-** stems, and partly to confusion between the N. pl. and the A. pl. (which latter, except in neuter **nn-** stems, ended in a vowel in O.I.).

**67(a).**—Pl. in a slender consonant:—

**CÚ**, N. pl. **cuin** (**cona**, **cointe**, **cuinte**). G. **con**. D. **conaib**

**CAORA**, N. pl. **caoirig**. G. **caorač**. D. **caoračaiḃ**

**LAČA**, N. pl. **lačain**. G. **lačan**. D. **lačanaib**

**FÍCE**, N. pl. **fíciḃ** (**fíciḃí**). G. **fícead**. D. **fíceadaiḃ** (**fíciḃíḃ**).

**CÓMURSA**, N. pl. **cómursain** (Or **-na**). G. **cómursan**. D. **cómúrsanaib**.

**BREIČEAM**, N. pl. **breičeamain** (**breičim**). G. **breičeamán**. D. **breičeamnaiḃ**.

**68(b).**—Plurals in **-a**:—

**PEARSA**, N. pl. **pearsana**. G. **pearsan**. D. **pearsanaib**.

**NAOIḂE**, N. pl. **naoiḃeana**. G. **naoiḃean**. D. **naoiḃeanaib**.

**Ceo**, mist (G. sg. **ciac**, **ceoiḡ**). N. pl. **ceoča**.

Also—**cómursana**, **máža**, **míosa**.

**69(c).**—Plurals in **-e**:—

**CARA**, N. pl. **cáirḃe**; **námá**, **náimḃe**; **ḡaḃa**, **ḡaiḃne**; **ḡuala**, **ḡuailne**; **aḃa**, **aiḃne**.

**70(d).**—Plurals in **-í**:—**aḃa**, **aiḃnní**; **aḃla**, **aḃlainní** (**aḃlanna**); **fíce**, **fíciḃí** (**'na ḃfíciḃíḃ**, in scores).

**71(e).**—Strong Plurals:—**teac**, **tiḡte** (O.I. **tige**); **rí**, **ríḡte** (O.I. A. **rioga**); **ačair**, **aičrcača**, etc. (see **56**);

CAČAOIR, CAČAOIREAČA; TEANGA, TEANGČAČA; SAOI, SAOIČE; DRAOI, DRAOIČE; CION, fault, M.F., CIONTA (these last four were dental stems); AINM, AINMNEAČA; CRÉ, earth, F. (G. sg. CRIAÖ, D. CRIAIO. But, in modern prose, G.D. CRÉ) CREIÖEANNA; TEINE, TEITITE; FILE, FILÍ (O.I. filid, later filiöe, and so filí); LÉINE, shirt, F., LÉINTEAČA; CEO, CEOÖANNA (also regular CEOČA, A c- stem); BRÓ, BRÓINTE (*double* pl. An n- stem); TALAM, TALMAINTE (*double* pl.) TAILTE, TALTA; BÉIM, BÉIMEANNA (and many others. See 60. Final A irregular); SLIAB, SLEIÖTE (O.I. slé(i)be); GLEANN, GLEANNTA (O.I. glinne), GLEANNTAÍ (Ulster); LEAČ, side (s- stem), LEAČANNA, LEIČEANNA; UŠ (uö), UIŠEAČA, UIÖEAČA. Also, regular, UIŠE, UIÖE (s- stem); TÍR, TÍORČA.

72.—These endings— **-ANA, -ANNA, -AČA, -TE, -TA** (**-ČE, -ČA**), **-ANNTA, -TEAČA, -Í**—are due to the influence of n-, nn-, c- and dental stems. The endings **-ANNTA, -TEAČA** are combinations of **-ANN** and **-TA**, and of **-TE** and **-AČA** respectively. They have made their way not only into the declension of vocalic stems, but interchange amongst the consonantal stems themselves. Thus:—

- (a) ČE, ČA, TA are attached to s- stems: TIŠČE, TÍORČA, sléiöte, gLEANNTA; and to n- stems: BRÓINTE, TALMAINTE.
- (b) AČA (properly belonging to c- stems) is attached to:—1° R- stems: AIČREAČA, MÁIČREAČA, etc. 2° Dental stems:—LÉINTEAČA, TEANGČAČA. 3° The s- stem UŠ, UÖ, UIŠEAČA UIÖEAČA. 4° nn- stems: AINMNEAČA.
- (c) **-ANA, -ANNA** (from n- and nn- stems) are attached to—1° c- stems: CEOÖANNA (the ö is only “padding” between vowels). 2° t- and d- stems: CREIÖEANNA. 3° s- stems: LEAČANNA, MÍONNA (mÍOSA).
- (d) **-Í** (from dental stems, iö, iöe, í) is attached to—1°. The nt- stem FÍČE, pl. FÍČIOÍ (FÍČIO, regular). 2° The nn- stems, AÖA, AÖLA, pl. AIÖNNÍ, AÖLAINNÍ.
- (e) In Rathlin Irish plurals in **-AN, -EAN, -ANN**, are common with all stems:—

Τά μο ἔροιθε βριστε, βρούτε,  
 Is tric na deoir a rič ōo mo súilean (C-Ĉ.U. 102),—  
 My heart is bruised and broken, and frequent tears have  
 run from my eyes.

So also:—βρόζαν (a- stem), cáirdean (nt- stem),  
 βαταν (io- stem), mnán, women (a- stem), fearann  
 (o- stem), etc.

**73.** A unique *diphthongal* stem is βό, cow, F. Sg.  
 V.A.N.G. βό. D. buin (due to coin). Pl. N.A.V. βα.  
 G. βό. D. βυαιβ.

**74 (a).**—The G. pl. of consonantal stems is often the  
 same as G. sg.—except in neut. nn- stems, and s- stems,  
 which lose the characteristic consonant in G. sg. R-  
 stems are also different, because they take -αῖα in the  
 pl. N. plurals in -αῖα, -αννα, -αννα, -ῖα, -ῖα, τα, -τα, -ί,  
 often retain these endings in the G. pl.

(b).—The D. pl. ends in:—1° -αιβ, when the N. pl.  
 ends in -α, or in a slender consonant. 2° -ιβ, when N. pl.  
 ends in -ε. 3° -ίβ, when N. pl. ends in -ί.

(c).—The V. pl. ends in:—1° -α, when D. pl. ends  
 in -αιβ. 2° -ε, when D. pl. ends in -ιβ (-ιβ is replaced  
 by -ε). 3° -ί, when N. pl. ends in -ί.

**75.**—Indeclinable nouns:—Some proper names like  
 Íosa, pádraig, gearóio, Siubán, Muiris. Also the two  
 common nouns, τοζα, choice (objective), ροζα, choice  
 (subjective). In the line—“Is tu mo ροζαιν ἔαρ mnáio  
 an domáin” (L.O.), ροζαιν is used for the sake of asso-  
 nance with domáin.

**76.**—Mumá, Munster, is an n- stem. Ulaio (N. pl.  
 o- stem)=Ultonians; laigin (N. pl. o- stem)=Leinster  
 men; Connaḱta (N. pl.)=Connaught-men. G. pl.  
 Ulaio, laigean, Connaḱt.

## CHAPTER III.

### THE ADJECTIVE (77—109).

**77.**—For the purpose of declension, adjectives, like nouns, are divided according to the nature of the stem. This gives us the following groups:—

**First Declension:**—Adjectives ending in a broad consonant. E.g.—*mór*, great, *ζεαλ*, white, bright. These include:—(a) *o*— and *Δ*— stems, *mór*, *ζεαλ*, (b) *u*— stems, like *ουβ*, black, *φιυç*, wet, *τσιυç*, thick. The dissyllabic *υαςαλ*, *ίσεαλ*, *υίλεας*, *φολλυς*, have, in G. sg. F. and N. pl. *υαιςτε*, *ίςτε*, *υίλσε*, *φολλσε*, owing (in the pl.) to *i*— stems (O.I. *uaisli*, *ísli*, *dílsi*). Instead of *υίλεας* we have also *υίλς* (2nd decl.).

**Second Declension:**—Adjectives ending in a slender consonant, like *μαιç*, *υίλς* (except those in —*Δμαιλ*). These are all *i*—stems.

**Third Declension:**—Adjectives in —*Δμαιλ*. Originally *i*— stems like *μαιç*, and declined like it. But O.I. *sainemlae* (G. sg. F. and G. pl.) and *sainemlai* (V.A.N. pl.) became *σαινεΔμλΔ*, thus separating the two types. O.I. *maithi* (V.A.N. pl.) become *μαιçε*.

**Fourth Declension:**—Adjectives ending in a vowel, including participles in —*τΔ*, —*τε*, —*çΔ*, —*çe*. These embrace (a) *io*—, —*ιδ* stems:—*υορχΔ*, *υίλε*, *νυΔ*, *κλέ*, *νεΔμυΔ*, *φΔυΔ υέαντΔ*, *γρλ*. (b) The *o*— stem *beo* (A trace of the old declension survives in *μαç υέ υί*, Son of the Living God).

“*νό Δ μίç υέ υί cιΔ çní υο υίαιυ-sΔ υάν*” (*Éamonn buí*)—Or who, Son of the Living God, shall make a poem after you? (the dead poet). With this exception, all these adjectives are uninflected in sg. and pl. In mod. I. the Dual in all adjectives is the same as the pl.

## EXAMPLES.

**78.—First Declension:**—*mór*, great; *óileas*, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	PL and Dual.
M.—D.A.N.— <i>mór</i> ; <i>óileas</i> . V.G.— <i>móir</i> ; <i>óilis</i> .	M.F.—V.A.N.D.— <i>móra</i> ; <i>óitse</i> G.— <i>mór(Δ)</i> ; <i>óileas</i> ( <i>óitse</i> ).
F.—V.A.N.— <i>mór</i> ; <i>óileas</i> . G.— <i>móire</i> ; <i>óitse</i> . D.— <i>móir</i> ; <i>óilis</i> .	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle; font-size: 3em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <i>Reammar</i> ( <i>rammar</i> ), thick, stout, has pl. <i>reamra</i> ( <i>ramra</i> ). G. sg. F. <i>reimre</i> ( <i>raimre</i> ). <i>ṡearr</i> , short, G. sg. F. <i>ṡiorra</i> . Pl. <i>ṡearra</i> .

N.B.—The D. pl. termination found in nouns is never, in mod. I., attached to adjectives, unless they are used as nouns. E.g.—*bíod̃ truaḡ aḡat do boḡtaib̃ ṡé*—have pity on God's poor. But—*ḡí truaḡ aḡam do sna (na) fearaib̃ boḡta*—I pitied the poor fellows. In the G. pl. there is a tendency to assimilate to the other cases—*ḡliam na mbuaḡaillí mbána*—The Year of the Whiteboys.

**79.—Second Declension:**—*maic̃*, good; *óilis*, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—V.A.N.D.G.— <i>maic̃</i> , <i>óilis</i> .	M.F.—V.A.N.D.— <i>maic̃e</i> ; <i>óitse</i> .
F.—V.A.N.D.— <i>maic̃</i> , <i>óilis</i> . G.— <i>maic̃e</i> ; <i>óitse</i> .	G.— <i>maic̃(e)</i> ; <i>óilis</i> ( <i>óitse</i> ).

The adjectives *ḡeacair*, difficult; *socair*, easy; *cóir*, right, have G. sg. F., and pl.—*ḡeacra*, *socra*, *córa*. *Seascair*, comfortable, and *ḡiaḡain*, wild, have G. sg. F., and Pl. *seascaire*, *ḡiaḡaine* (without syncope).

**80.—Third Declension:**—*ḡearamail*, manly; *banamail*, womanly.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.F.—V.A.N.D.— <i>ḡearamail</i> , <i>banamail</i> .	<i>ḡearamla</i> , <i>banamla</i> .
G.— <i>ḡearamla</i> , <i>banamla</i> .	<i>ḡearamail</i> , <i>banamail</i> (or <i>—aml̃a</i> ).

N.B.—The G. sg. in *—Δ* was originally F. only, the M. being in *—Δm̃ail*.

**81.—Fourth Declension:**—With the exception noted above (77) there is no inflection whatever for gender, number or case. The adjective *te*, warm, was originally an nt-stem (Cf. Lat. *tepens*, *tepent*—). But, as no trace of the consonant now remains, it falls in with the io-stems. It has, however, *teo*, in G. sg. F., and in the pl.

**82.**—Many dissyllabic adjectives in the 2nd, and all in the 3rd declension (like *óileas*, *uasal*, in the 1st) are syncopated in the G. sg. F., and in the pl. E.g.—*deacair*, *deacra*; *socair*, *socra*; *mílis*, *mílse*; *doibinn*, *doibne*; *álúinn*, *áilne* (*áille*); and those in *-amail*, when *-a* is added. But note *fiadaine*, *seascaire*. *breaḡ*, fine, has G. sg. F. *breaḡa*. Pl. *breaḡta*.

**83.**—Vowel-changes, due to attenuation, are the same as those which occur in nouns: (a) Monosyllabic adjectives with *-ea-* before the final consonant change *-ea-* into “i” or “ei”:—*ḡeal*, bright, G. sg. M. *ḡil*, F. *ḡile*; *meaḡ*, quick, *mir*, *mire*; *ceart*, right, *cirt*, *cirte*; *beaḡ*, little, *biḡ*, *biḡe*; *ḡearr*, short, *ḡirr*, *ḡiorra*. But—*teann*, stern, *teinn*, *teinne*; *deas*, pretty, *deis*, *deise*; *dearḡ*, red, *deirḡ*, *deirḡe*; *seasc*, barren, *seisc*, *seisce*; *searb*, bitter, *seirb*, *seirbe*; *seanḡ*, slender, *seinḡ*, *seinḡe*; *leasc*, loth, *leisc*, *leisce*; *tearc*, scarce, *teirc*, *teirce*.

(b) *o-* gives *ui*:—*boḡ*, soft, *buḡ*, *buḡe*; *trom*, heavy, *truim*, *truime*. But—*boct*, poor, *boict*, *boicte*; *doct*, tight, hard, *doict*, *doicte*; *noct*, naked, *noict*, *noicte*.

(c) *ia-* gives *éi*:—*fiál*, generous, *féil*, *féile*; *cián*, far, *céin*, *céine*; *dian*, severe, *déin*, *déine*; *fiar*, awry, G. sg. F. *féire*.

(d) *iu-* gives *-i-*; *-iú-* gives *-iúi-*:—*fluic*, wet, *fluic*, *fluice*; *ciún*, calm (also *ciúin*), *ciúin*, *ciúine*. But *tiuḡ*, thick, dense, quick. G. sg. F. mostly *tiuḡa*.

(e) Final *-ac*, *-eac* become *-aiḡ*, *-aiḡe*, *-iḡ*, *-iḡe*:—*bacac*, lame, *bacaiḡ*, *bacaiḡe*; *óireac*, straight, —*óiriḡ*, *óiriḡe*; *Sasanaac*, English. G. sg. M., *Sasanaaiḡ*.

(f) *-io-* becomes *-i-*; *-íó-* becomes *-í-*:—*fionn*, fair, *finn*, *finne*; *míon*, small, *min*, *mine*; *críon*, withered, *crín*, *críne*.



## Formation of Adjectives

**84.**—A.—By means of suffixes (added to nouns, adjectives, numerals, verb-roots, prepositions):—1° **-āč:**—**Rōmānāč**, Roman; **ḅācāč**, lame; **ḅur̥ēāč**, thankful (<**ḅur̥ē**, good-will, thanks); **cuiḅsāč**, middling; **ḡaitćīosāč**, shy, fearful. 2° **-āmāil:**—**ḡearamāmāil**, manly; **ḅanamāmāil**, womanly; **Crīostāmāil**, Christ-like; **maḡāmāil**, mocking. 3° **-air̥e, ir̥e:**—**Crīostair̥e**, Christian; **ḅeair̥e**, sweetmouthed, fastidious; **leanḅair̥e**, childish; **ḡiablair̥e**, devilish; **éiscéillir̥e**, absurd, irrational. 4° **-r̥ā, -tā, -čā:**—**maorr̥ā**, majestic; **ḅeorr̥ā**, lively; **iolarr̥ā**, plural; **coir̥neastā**, related; **mórr̥ā**, stately. 5° **-mār:**—**neartmār**, strong; **bríogmār**, full of “go”; **ḡreannmār**, queer, funny; **ḡonnmār**, glad, willing. 6° **-te, -tā, -če, -čā:**—**ḅuailče**, struck; **molčā**, praised; **imćiḡče**, gone away; **ḡáḡčā**, left. 7° **to, -eto (I. -eāḡ):**—**cúḡeāḡ**, seiseāḡ, 5th, 6th. 8° The double suffix **-mmo + -eto (I. -māḡ):**—**tríomāḡ**, 3rd, **ceāčramāḡ**, 4th. In the I.G. period sometimes **-mo** was used, sometimes **-to**. Lat. *decimus*, 10th (<\**dekm- mo-s*), Gk. *dékatos* (<\**dekm -to-s*). The two are combined in I. **-māḡ**. 9° **-ineāč, -anāč:**—**toilčeanāč**, willing; **ḡlistineāč**, legal; **ainm-neāč**, Nominative; **Alḅanāč**, Scottish; **marčanāč**, lasting. 10° **lo:**—**uasaḷ**, noble (<**ós**, above); **íseḷ**, lowly (<**íos**, below).

B.—By combination of noun and adjective, without any suffix:—**neartmār** (84 A.5) < **neart** + **mór**, lit. strength-great. So **ceann-r̥ána**, headstrong. The adjective **áḡmārač** must be derived from **áḡḅar** (not **áḡ**), as the suffixes **-mār** and **-āč** are not combined. (Proper spelling, **áḡḅarač**). Mod. I. allows participles as the 2nd element: **cosnočtair̥e**, barefooted.

C.—By prefixing an uninflected particle to a noun:—1° **Sair̥ḅir**, rich; **ḡair̥ḅir**, poor (<**āḡḅar**, material, with particles **so-**, **ḡo**); **sučāin**, everlasting (<**tan**, time); **ḡeoḡāin**, diphthong (<**de**, composition form of **ḡó**, two, and **ḡoḡar**, sound); **suāicnir̥**, well-known (**so-āič-ḡnāč**). The words **incinn**, brain (<**in-ceann**), **ḡiarmuir̥**, Dermot (<**di-formad**), and **ḡeoḡair̥**, have become nouns. From these exx. it appears that nominal

o- stems became i- stems when adjectives were formed in this way. 2° So also io- stems and ia- stems mostly became i- stems:—**SOILBIR**, cheerful; **DOILBIR**, melancholy (< **LAÖRA**, speech, +so- and -do). But **CÓMARBA**, successor (it has become a noun), from O.I. orbe, heir, remains an io- stem. 3° The mod. **SOĈRAIÖ**, candid, and **DOĈRAIÖ**, gloomy—both from the u- stem **CRUĈ**, form, shape—are i- stems, instead of O.I. sochrud, dochrud (u- stems). So **CUÖAIÖ**, fitting, is an i- stem, although derived from O.I. fid (u- stem), a letter of the Alphabet.

D.—By joining two adjectives together:—**LÁN-ÖRÓNAĈ**, in great sorrow; **BEAG-MAIĈEASAĈ**, ne'er-do-well; **MÓR-ĆUISEĈ**, conceited; **UIE-ĆÓMAĈTAĈ**, almighty.

### Comparison of Adjectives

**85.**—There are three degrees—Positive, Comparative and Superlative. There is now no *equative form*, but the *equation* is expressed by the positive (or ordinary form of the adjective), preceded by **CÓM** (as), and followed by **le** (as) before a noun or pronoun, or by **AGUS** (as) before a verb:—**NÍLIM-se cóM láIR le SAMSON**—I'm not as strong as Samson; **TÁ CONCUÖAR cóM hOLC le CÁIT**—Connor is as bad as Cáit; **NÍLIR-se cóM MAIĈ LIOMSA**—you are not as good as I. But—**NÍLIM cóM láIR ANOIS 7 A BÍOS AN UAIR SIN**—I'm not as strong now as I was then.

### Comparative and Superlative

**86.**—In mod. I. the comparative and superlative are the same in form. The termination **-e** (in a few cases, **-A**) must be added to the positive, with attenuation of the final consonant of the positive, where necessary. Thus: **GEAL**, bright, **ĜILE**, brighter, brightest; **FIAL**, generous, **FÉILE**, more (most) generous; **FUIUĈ**, wet, **FUIĈE**, wetter, wettest; **ÁRU**, high, **AOIRÖE** (**ÁIRÖE**), higher, highest; **LÁIR**, strong, **LÁIRÖE**, stronger, strongest.

### The Comparative

**87.**—(a) When the verb of the comparative clause is “is,” the comparative follows is immediately:—**Is ĜILE AN ĜRIAN NÁ AN ĜEALAĈ**—the sun is brighter than the

moon; IS  $\text{FEARR AN } \tau\text{-IMREAS NÁ AN } \tau\text{-UAI\text{G}NEAS}$ —contention is better than loneliness;  $\text{NÍ MEASA CÁIT NÁ CONCU\text{B}AR}$ —the one is as bad as the other; IS  $\text{FEARR } \text{b}e\text{ic\text{h}} \text{ } \text{b}í\text{o}\text{m}\Delta\text{o}\text{in NÁ } \text{b}RO\text{C-}\text{g}NÓ\text{C}\Delta\text{C}$ —it is better to be idle than evil-doing. Such sentences may of course be relative, e.g.— $\text{NÍL } \Delta\text{o}\text{inne IS MEASA NÁ } \text{t}\text{u}$ —there is no one (who is) worse than you.

(b) When the verb of the comparative clause is  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ , or any verb other than *is*, the comparative must be preceded by  $\text{níos}$ , or  $\text{ní\text{b}\Delta}$ , and the construction becomes relative:— $\text{CÁ AN } \text{g}RI\text{AN } \Delta\text{g } \tau\text{AI}\text{C}NE\text{AM } \text{níos } \text{g}ile \text{ in}\text{o}\text{iu NÁ } \text{mAR } \Delta \text{b}í \text{ sí in}\text{o}\text{é}$ —the sun is shining more brightly to-day than it was yesterday;  $\text{buail } \text{níos } \text{b}éine \text{ é}$ —strike it harder. ( $\text{níos } \text{g}ile = \text{ní } \Delta \text{ IS } \text{g}ile$ —*lit.* a something that is brighter);  $\text{b}í \text{ AN } \text{lÁ in}\text{o}\text{e } \text{ní\text{b}\Delta } \text{f}lice \text{ NÁ } \text{mAR } \Delta \text{c}E\text{APAS } \Delta \text{b}E\text{A}\text{b} \text{ sé}$ —yesterday was wetter than I thought it would be.

“ $\text{ní}$ ” in these sentences is an *Accusative of Extent in Degree* (Syntax, 175 A.4.). In other sentences it may be:—1° N. to a verb:— $\text{CÁ } \text{níos } \text{mó } \Delta\text{nn NÁ } \text{c}E\text{AP}\text{f}\Delta$ —there’s more in it than one would think. 2° A. governed by a transitive verb:— $\text{t}\text{u}\text{g}\Delta\text{s } \text{níos } \text{mó } \text{NÁ } \text{sAN } \text{b}uit$ —I gave you more than that. 3° A. governed by a preposition:— $\text{g}\Delta\text{N } \text{níos } \text{mó } \text{NÁ } \text{t}\text{RÍ } \text{sCILL}\text{INGE } \text{'NA } \text{p}Ó\text{CA } \Delta\text{IGE}$ —with only 3s. in his pocket. 4° Absolute:— $\text{ní } \text{f}ios \text{ CIA'cu } \text{níos } \text{mó } \text{nó } \text{níos } \text{lu}\text{g}\Delta \text{ } \Delta \text{b}í \Delta\text{nn}$ —there’s no knowing whether there was more or less in it.

### The Superlative

**88.**—(a) Superlative clauses are always relative, and the verb is always *is*. E.g.— $\Delta\text{g AN } \text{b}FEAR \text{ IS } \text{FEARR IS } \text{CEART AN } \text{pOST IS } \text{FEARR } \Delta \text{b}e\text{ic\text{h}}$ —the best man should get the best post.

(b) There are no comparative or superlative *adverbs* in mod. I. These forms are always adjectives, are never inflected for gender or number, and are always predicate N. to some form of the verb *is*:— $\Delta\text{N } \text{tu AN } \text{t}é \text{ IS } \text{sine } \Delta\text{cu?}$  Are you the eldest?  $\text{'SÍ AN } \text{t}í\text{R IS } \Delta\text{o}\text{ib}NE \Delta\text{R } \text{b}ic\text{h } \text{le } \text{f}\Delta\text{g}\acute{\alpha}\text{il (L.O.)}$ —it is the pleasantest land in the world.

(c) The word *ná* (than) was, in O.I., in 3rd person sg., *oldaas* (than is), <ol+taas, a peculiar relative form of *τá*. In middle I. *in* was substituted for *ol*, giving *indaas*, then *ionás*, *ioná*, *ná*.

(d) The two nouns, *sinnsear*, elder, ancestor, and *sóisear*, junior, are, in form, comparative adjectives. *Sinnsear* is a *double* compar. from *sean*, old (<\*sen-is-teros), like Lat. *magister*, *minister* (master, servant. *Lit.*—the greater one, the lesser one). This compar. suffix -ter is common in I. E.g., *ceannṡar*, district. Originally, the district *on this side* (of a mountain, river) as opposed to *allṡar*, district *on the other side*. So—*oirṡear*, East, as opposed to *iarṡar*, West.

### Irregular Comparison

#### 89. — *Pos.*

#### *Comp. and Superl.*

1.— <i>béag</i> , small.	<i>lúgá</i>
2.— <i>boic</i> , likely.	<i>boíca</i> , <i>boicíge</i> .
3.— <i>ár</i> , high.	<i>aoirde</i> ( <i>áirde</i> ).
4.— <i>fada</i> , long.	<i>sia</i> ( <i>fuid</i> ).
5.— <i>fozus</i> , near.	<i>foisge</i> ( <i>foisge</i> ) <i>neasa</i> .
6.— <i>gearr</i> , short.	<i>giorra</i> .
7.— <i>iom</i> , many a.	<i>lia</i> .
8.— <i>luait</i> , quick, early.	<i>túisge</i> ( <i>luait</i> ).
9.— <i>minic</i> , frequent.	<i>minicí</i> ( <i>mionca</i> ).
10.— <i>maic</i> , good.	<i>fearr</i> .
11.— <i>mór</i> , great.	<i>mó</i> .
12.— <i>ionmhuin</i> , beloved.	<i>annsa</i> .
13.— <i>olc</i> , bad.	<i>measa</i> .
14.— <i>te</i> , hot, warm.	<i>teo</i> .
15.— <i>breaḡ</i> , fine.	<i>breaḡca</i> .
16.— <i>tréan</i> , strong.	<i>treise</i> ( <i>tréine</i> ).
17.— <i>uiriste</i> , easy.	<i>usa</i> ( <i>fusa</i> ).
18.— <i>cóir</i> , right.	<i>córa</i> .
19.— <i>deacair</i> , difficult.	<i>deacra</i> .
20.— <i>socair</i> , settled.	<i>socra</i> .
21.— <i>ḡar</i> , near.	<i>ḡoire</i> .
22.— <i>seascair</i> , cosy.	<i>seascaire</i> .
23.— <i>fiaḡaim</i> , wild.	<i>fiaḡaine</i> .

## Proverbs

(Illustrating comparatives and superlatives)

90.—

1. *ní lúga an ffríðe ná máčair an uilc*—Evil may spring from anything (no matter how small. *fríð, ffríðe*=flesh-worm).

2. *ní doíciḡe doinníð ná an bréag do meall tu*—The lie that beguiled you seems most likely.

3. *ní haoirde do cúir ná do clú*—Your name is higher than your riches.

4. *ní sia ričfrð leat ná mar is toil le ðia*—You'll succeed just as long as God wishes.

5. *Is goire (do) ðuine caðair ðé ná an ðorus*—God's help is always very near. *Lit.*—God's help is nearer one than the door.

6. *ní lia ceann ná céaðfaið*—Everyone has his own opinion.

7. *Is túisge díogalzas ðé ná an ðiaðal*—God's vengeance is quicker than the devil.

8. *Is fearr ciall ceannaiḡ ná an ðá céill a múinteær*—Sense bought is twice as good as sense taught.

9. *ní measa cáit (cáç) ná Concuðær*—The one is as bad as the other.

10. *Is treise dúčcas ná oileamaint.*—Nature is stronger than environment.

11. *Is usa ðul isteac i ðtiḡ an Rí ná teac̃t as*—Palaces are pitfalls.

12. *ní h-annsa cóir ná coir le ðuine ðána*—A bold man prefers wrong to right.

## Notes on Irregular Comparison

91.—2. *ðóic̃*, likely, O.I. *doich* (o), Gk. *dókei*, it seems. The O.I. compar. was *dochu* (our *ðóç̃a*). When *ðóç̃a* ceased to be *felt* as compar. a new compar. (and superl.), *ðóiciḡe*, was formed.

4. *Sia*—compar. of *síor*, long. The compar. and superl. are used of time and space; *síor* now only of time.

7. *lia*—compar. of *il* (*iol*), many, now used only as a prefix.

12. *Anñsa*=O.I. *annsu*, compar. of *annse* (*an-asse*, not easy). Cf. the use of *measa*—*Is measa liom tusa ná*

**Seán**—I prefer you to Sean. *Lit.*—Your case is worse in my estimation than S.'s (Therefore, I prefer you).

11, 16. In **mó**, **sia**, **treise**, a suffix found in the pos. is omitted. A pos. form **treis** is heard in Co. Clare.

**92.**—Adverbs are formed from adjectives usually by prefixing **go** (to) to the positive, the latter being a neut. substantive in the A. case. **Ṫá sé aḡ uil i bʹfeabʹas go móR**—he is improving much (*Lit.* to a great extent). The prep. **de** (do) is sometimes used:—**de síor**, **de ḡnáṫ**=always. **Ṣaṫ nʹíreacʹ**, straight on, occurs in the literature.

### Numeral Adjectives

#### Cardinal

- 93.**—
- |                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| 1. <b>aon.</b>              | 31. <b>aon dʹéaḡ is fice.</b>          |
| 2. <b>do.</b>               | 40. <b>daḫaḫ.</b>                      |
| 3. <b>trí.</b>              | 41. <b>aon is daḫaḫ.</b>               |
| 4. <b>ceachtair.</b>        | 50. <b>deicʹ is daḫaḫ.</b>             |
| 5. <b>cúig.</b>             | 51. <b>aon dʹéaḡ is daḫaḫ.</b>         |
| 6. <b>sé.</b>               | 60. <b>trí ficʹh.</b>                  |
| 7. <b>seacht.</b>           | 61. <b>aon 7 trí ficʹh.</b>            |
| 8. <b>ocht.</b>             | 70. <b>deicʹ 7 trí ficʹh.</b>          |
| 9. <b>naoi.</b>             | 71. <b>aon dʹéaḡ 7 trí ficʹh.</b>      |
| 10. <b>deicʹ.</b>           | 80. <b>ceitre ficʹh.</b>               |
| 11. <b>aon dʹéaḡ.</b>       | 81. <b>aon is ceitre ficʹh.</b>        |
| 12. <b>do dʹéaḡ.</b>        | 90. <b>deicʹ is ceitre ficʹh.</b>      |
| 13. <b>trí dʹéaḡ.</b>       | 91. <b>aon dʹéaḡ is ceitre ficʹh.</b>  |
| 14. <b>ceachtair dʹéaḡ.</b> | 99. <b>naoi dʹéaḡ is ceitre ficʹh.</b> |
| 15. <b>cúig dʹéaḡ.</b>      | 100. <b>céaḫ.</b>                      |
| 16. <b>sé dʹéaḡ.</b>        | 200. <b>daḫ céaḫ.</b>                  |
| 17. <b>seacht dʹéaḡ.</b>    | 300. <b>trí céaḫ.</b>                  |
| 18. <b>ocht dʹéaḡ.</b>      | 400. <b>ceitre céaḫ.</b>               |
| 19. <b>naoi dʹéaḡ.</b>      | 500. <b>cúig céaḫ.</b>                 |
| 20. <b>fice.</b>            | 600. <b>sé céaḫ.</b>                   |
| 21. <b>aon is fice.</b>     | 700. <b>seacht ṡcéaḫ.</b>              |
| 22. <b>do is fice.</b>      | 800. <b>ocht ṡcéaḫ.</b>                |
| 29. <b>naoi is fice.</b>    | 900. <b>naoi ṡcéaḫ.</b>                |
| 30. <b>deicʹ is fice.</b>   | 1000. <b>míle.</b>                     |

**N.B.**—Besides such forms as **trí is fice** (23) we also have—**trí ficeaḫ**, or **trí aR ficʹh**.

**94.**—If the old words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90 are used, *viz.*, **TRIOĈA**, **CEAĈRAĈA**, **CAOĖA**, **SEASCA**, **SEAĈT-ĖOĖA**, **OĈTĖOĖA**, **NÓĈA** (nt- stems, G. in -ĥ) we get neater and shorter forms in the compound numerals, all of which (except those for 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, 100, etc.) will be based on the first ten numerals. Thus:—**Sé ĥéAĖ** (16), **sé řiceAĥ** (26), **sé TRIOĈAĥ** (36), **sé CEAĈRAĈAĥ** (46), **sé CAOĖAĥ** (56), **sé SEASCAĥ** (66), **sé SEAĈT-ĖOĖAĥ** (76), **sé OĈTĖOĖAĥ** (86), **sé NÓĈAĥ** (96). The use of **AR** in **TRÍ AR řicĥ** (23), **TRÍ AR ĈAOĖAĥ** (53), etc., is an extension of the O.I. usage, in which it served two purposes:—(a) to join the hundreds to the smaller numbers—**SEASCA AR ĈéAĥ**, 160; (b) to join the tens to numeral substantives—**dias ar fichit** (**ĥís AR řicĥ**), twenty-two persons.

**95.**—The Cardinals are used in three different ways:—  
1° Preceded by a particle **A** (**A ĥ-** before vowels) when counting objects without naming them—**A ĥ-Aon**, **A ĥó**, **řrl.** **ĈÁ sé leAĈ-ĤAIR TRÉIS A TRÍ**—it is half-past three; or when preceded by the noun, as **CAIBĥIOĥ A TRÍ**, chapter 3; or when the numeral is separated from the noun by the prep. **ĥe**:—**A TRÍ NÓ A CEAĈAIR ĥe ĥliANTAIĥ**—three or four years. 2° They are used without any particle in abstract counting, as—**Aon**, **ĥó**, **TRÍ**,—one, two, three; or when the noun follows immediately—**TRÍ CAĥAILĥ**—three horses. 3° In concrete enumeration, when the noun is used without **ĥe**, it is placed after the unit number (if there be one) in the sg., pl., or dual, as the sense demands. Instead of **ĥó**, **CEAĈAIR** (2, 4) **ĥÁ** (**ĥÁ**) **Ĉeirĥe** are used.—**Aon ĥliAM ĥéAĖ**—11 years (sg.); **ĥÁ ĥliAM ĥéAĖ**—12 years (dual); **TRÍ ĥliANA řiceAĥ**, 23 years (pl.); **Aon ĈeARC ĥéAĖ**—11 hens (sg.); **ĥÁ ĈIRC ĥéAĖ**—12 hens; **TRÍ CEARCA SEASCAĥ**—63 hens.

**96.**—The words for the tens from 20—100, as also **míle** (1000), **milliún** (a million), **billiún** (a billion) are *nouns*, and so properly take G. pl. But as the G. pl. is often the same as the N. sg., the latter is used as a rule:—**řice řeAR**, **CEARC**, **ĥeAN**—20 men (hens, women). **ĥéAĖ** (=2 fives) is used as G. of **ĥeic** in forming

the numerals 11-19. It has no etymological connection with *deic*. *Céad* (100) is an old neut. o- stem, pl. *céad* (after numerals). Apart from numerals a new pl. *céadacha* is used.

**97.**—*Seacht*, *ocht*, *naoi*, *deic* eclipse the initial consonant of the following noun, but *not* that of *the* *genitives* *deáas*, *fichead*, etc.—*Seacht mboscaí deáas*, 17 boxes; but *seacht deáas*, 17; *ocht mbliana caogad*—58 years, but *ocht caogad*—58; *naoi n-uaire tríochad*—39 times, but *naoi tríochad*—39. The reason is that in *seacht mboscaí deáas*, etc., the 1st numeral is *the limiting word*, whereas in *seacht deáas*, *deáas* *limits the meaning* of *seacht*, and not *vice versa*. The eclipse after *seacht*, *naoi*, *deáas* is regular, as they ended originally in a nasal (Lat. *septem*, *novem*, *decem*). *Ocht* eclipses analogically. N.B.—*deic cinn*, *deic pearsana*, *deic toibreacha*—10 heads, persons, wells—are heard. The reason is that the final “h” sound of *deic* *unvoices* the consonant resulting from eclipse, and thus restores the original one. Then *seacht cinn*, etc., follow these analogically.

### Examples of the Cardinals

**98.**—(a) 78 cards:—1—*ocht scártaí deáas is trí fichí*. 2—*seacht ndeic a h-ocht de cártaí* (Note this. It is often convenient). 3—*ocht scártaí seachtmoíad*. (b) 357 books:—1—*seacht leabhair deáas 7 daíad, 7 trí céad* (*leabhar*). This is cumbrous. 2—*seacht leabhair deáas 7 daíad ar trí céad*. 3—*trí céad 7 seacht leabhair caogad* (Best). (c) The year 1927:—*bliain a míle, naoi scéad, 7 seacht fichead*. (d) 1927 years:—*míle naoi scéad 7 seacht mbliana fichead*. (e) The 1927th year:—*An seachtmaí bliain fichead ar naoi scéad 7 míle*. (f) 275,000: 1—O.I. way:—*cúig míle seachtmoíad ar daíad céad*. 2—Modern I.—*daíad céad 7 cúig míle seachtmoíad*. (g) 200,075:—1—O.I. way:—*cúig seachtmoíad ar daíad céad míle*. 2—Modern I.—*daíad céad míle 7 cúig seachtmoíad*. (h) 75,200:—*cúig míle seachtmoíad 7 daíad céad*. (i) £245,666:—*daíad céad 7 cúig míle ceathraíad, sé céad 7 sé púint seascad*. (1) 5,592,963 acres:—*cúig milliún, cúig céad, 7 daíad míle nóíad, naoi scéad 7 trí h-acraí seascad*,



(m) 7,925,639 stamps:—*seacht milliún, naoi gcéad 7 cúig míle fichead, sé céad 7 naoi stampaí tríochad*. (n) 6,560,374 books:—*sé milliún, cúig céad 7 seasca míle, trí céad 7 ceitre leabair seachtmoḡad*. (o) 4,605,747 tables:—*ceitre milliún, cúig míle ar sé céad, seacht gcéad 7 seacht mbúir ceachtarachad*. (p) 17 people:—*seacht nòine déag*. (r) 39 people:—1—*naoi nòine tríochad*. 2—*naoi nòine déag is fiche*. 3—*naoi nòine déag ar fichid*. (s) 143,000 men:—*céad 7 a trí 7 daḡad de mílte fear* (b.n. 277).

**99.**—(a) *trí, ceitre, cúig, sé* often aspirate the initial consonant of the following noun, which then often has the sg. form—*trí capall*, or *trí capall*—three horses; *cúig milliún*, or *cúig milliún*, 5,000,000. This is due to *trí céad*, where *céad* is a true pl. and aspiration is regular. (b) In enumerating persons, from 13 to 19, the sg. *nòine* is used, and *n-* is aspirated, if not eclipsed. Thus—*trí nòine déag*—13 persons. But—*seacht nòine déag*—17 persons.

### Numeral Substantives

**100.**—(a) **For persons:**—*donar*, one person. *táim im' donar*—I am alone. *beirt*—two (used in Ulster even of things). *das, dís*, two (G.—*deise, díse*. But *das*, an ear of corn—G.—*deise*, D.—*déis*). *triúr*—three persons (Orig. D.—Old N.—*triar*). *ceachtar*—four persons. *cúigear*—five persons. *seisear*—six persons. *mór-seisear*—seven persons. Also *seachtar*. *ochtair*—eight persons. *naoindar*—nine persons. *deicneadar*—ten persons. *don nòine déag, doinne déag*—eleven persons; *dá réag*—twelve persons. *lolar*—many persons (Also many things, plurality); *lánam*—a married couple (<*láneamain*—a perfect pair, G. *lánamna*—but it has passed over to the *n-* stems—G. *-an*. The rt. is *eamain*, twin, L.—*geminus*. Cf. *eamain*, *Emania*.) All these forms, except *beirt, dís, don nòine déag, lánam*, are compounds, with *fear* as the 2nd element. They were originally neuter. *triar*=a three of men. But though they contain the M. *fear*, they are used of women also. *triúr ban*—three women. *triúr* is the old D.

of **TRÍAR**. It ousted the N. because of its frequent use in an O.I. idiom (without a prep.). E.g.—**ċÁNAÐAR A ÐTRÍÚR**—the three of them came.

(b) **For things**:—**íolán**, many things, plurality. Abstr. **íolrað**, plural; **uaċað**—singleness. “**AR UAĊAÐ spóirt**,” —with scanty amusement; **deíðe**, **tréíðe**—two things, three things; **tréaðanas**, “a three days’ fast,” now generally abstinence; **peíðe**, **feíðe**—a pair, brace, set (even though more than two), p. **brós**, a pair of shoes: p. **biorán cniotála**, a set (4) of knitting-needles; **cúpla**, a couple, twins. Dim.—**cúplín**. Always followed by the N. sg. form.

### Special Ways of expressing numbers

**101.**—**TRÍ CAOZAIÐ**—150; **TRÍ NAONÐAIR**—27 people; **seacht ðficíðí**—7 score; **TRIOĊA céað**—3,000.

#### 102.

#### The Ordinals

1st <b>An céað</b> (lá)	16th <b>An seiseað</b> (lá) <b>deáð</b>
2nd „ <b>ðARA</b>	17th „ <b>seachtmað</b> „ „
3rd „ <b>TRÍOMað</b>	18th „ <b>τ-oċtmað</b> „ „
4th „ <b>ceachtmað</b>	19th „ <b>naommað</b> „ „
5th „ <b>cúigeað</b>	20th „ <b>ficéað</b> (lá)
6th „ <b>seiseað</b>	21st „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> „ <b>ficéað</b>
7th „ <b>seachtmað</b>	22nd „ <b>ðARA</b> „ „
8th „ <b>τ-oċtmað</b>	30th „ <b>deicmað</b> „ „
9th „ <b>naommað</b>	31st „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> „ <b>TRÍOĊAÐ</b>
10th „ <b>deicmað</b>	32nd „ <b>ðARA</b> „ „
11th „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> (lá) <b>deáð</b>	33rd „ <b>TRÍOMað</b> „ „
12th „ <b>ðARA</b> „ „	40th „ <b>ceachtaraċað mað</b> (lá)
13th „ <b>TRÍOMað</b> „ „	41st „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> (lá) <b>ceachtaraċað</b>
14th „ <b>ceachtmað</b> „ „	42nd „ <b>ðARA</b> „ „
15th „ <b>cúigeað</b> „ „	43rd „ <b>TRÍOMað</b> „ „
50th <b>An CAOZAIÐmað</b> (lá)	
51st „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> (lá) <b>CAOZAIÐ</b>	
52nd „ <b>ðARA</b> „ „	
53rd „ <b>TRÍOMað</b> „ „	
60th „ <b>seascaðmað</b> (lá)	
61st „ <b>τ-aonmað</b> (lá) <b>seascað</b>	

62nd	Δn	ϑΑΡΑ	(λά)	σεσκαϑ
63rd	„	τρíoμΔϑ	„	„
70th	„	σεα̇τ̇μο̇ζΔϑ̇μΔϑ	(λά)	
71st	„	τ-Δον̇μΔϑ	(λά)	σεα̇τ̇μο̇ζΔϑ
72nd	„	ϑΑΡΑ	„	„
73rd	„	τρíoμΔϑ	„	„
80th	„	ο̇α̇τ̇μο̇ζΔϑ̇μΔϑ	(λά)	
81st	„	τ-Δον̇μΔϑ	(λά)	ο̇α̇τ̇μο̇ζΔϑ
82nd	„	ϑΑΡΑ	„	„
90th	„	νό̇α̇ϑ̇μΔϑ	(λά)	
91st	„	τ-Δον̇μΔϑ	(λά)	νό̇α̇ϑ̇
92nd	„	ϑΑΡΑ	„	„
100th	„	α̇έΔϑ̇μΔϑ	(λά)	
101st	„	τ-Δον̇μΔϑ	(λά)	α̇ρ α̇έΔϑ
110th	„	δει̇α̇μΔϑ	„	„
121st	„	τ-Δον̇μΔϑ	„	φί̇α̇ϑ̇ α̇ρ α̇έΔϑ
131st	„	„	„	τρíȯα̇ϑ̇
222nd	„	ϑΑΡΑ	„	φί̇α̇ϑ̇
				ϑά̇ α̇έΔϑ

**103.**—(a) Besides τρίο̃μα̃ϑ̣ (3rd), σεῖσε̃α̃ϑ̣ (6th), ϑεῖς̃μα̃ϑ̣-φίς̃ε̃α̃ϑ̣ (30th) we have also τερε̃ας̃, σέ̃μα̃ϑ̣, τριο̃ς̃α̃ϑ̣μα̃ϑ̣. (b) Cé̃α̃ϑ̣, 1st, is used in the simple, αον̃μα̃ϑ̣ in the compound numerals. Cé̃α̃ϑ̣ aspirates the following consonant, because, like αον̃, it formed a compound. Αον̃μα̃ϑ̣ (like the others in -μα̃ϑ̣) does *not* aspirate, but (like them) is followed by η- before a vowel, except in the G.—να η-αον̃μα̃ϑ̣ αoise ϑέ̃α̃ζ̣, of the 11th century.

(b) First, adverbially, is **AR** **ṛtús** (**AR** **ṛtús**). **Ṽ'fōḡluim sé Δ čēΔčt AR ṛtús**—First he learned his lesson; **ı ḡcéΔṼ-óir**—at once, forthwith; **ı ṛtosΔč**—at the beginning of. (c) The Ordinals (from 1st to 10th, as well as 20th, 100th, 1000th) immediately precede the noun, like the Cardinals (the tens, however, together with **céΔṼ**, **míle**, **milliún**, being *nouns*), (d) “Last” is **ṼeirionΔč**, **ṼérṼeΔnΔč**, which *follow* the noun; or it may be expressed by **ṼeirṼ** (G. sg. of **ṼeireΔṼ**); or, in such expressions as “last Sunday,” special phrases are used. E.g.—**Ṽíonn Δn Ṽuine ṼeirionΔč ṼíoḡṼáΔč**—the last is likely to be a sufferer; **Δá ṼeirṼ Δn mí**—the last day of the month; **Ṽia ṼomnΔiḡ seo ḡaiṼ čΔrΔinn**—last Sunday (adverbial.—See **296**). (e) The other day (i.e., a few days ago) is—

AN LÁ FÉ òEIREADÒ, or AN LÁ CEANA. (f) “One day” (i.e., on a certain day) is—simply lá—LÁ DÁ RAIB SÉ AG òÉANAM BRÓS (SÉADNA)—One day as he was making shoes. AON LÁ means “any day”—TARISTEAC CUGAM AON LÁ IS MAIC LEAT—Come in to me any day you please. AON LÁ AMÁIN means one day (not two, or three)—NIOR CAITEAS ANN AC AON LÁ AMÁIN—I spent only one day there. LÁ ÁIRICÉ—on a certain day, is stronger than lá alone.

**104.**—The Ordinals are indeclinable adjectives, used with sg. nouns only. (But see **105**). “The first arrivals,” “the first three rows,” etc., must be turned in another way.—B’IAID SAN BA CÚISGE A CÁINIS—These were the first arrivals. NA H-UIÑREACA TOSAIG—The first numbers. NA TRÍ SUÌDEACÁIN TOSAIG—The three front seats. TOSAIG is so used even with a sg. noun—SIBÉ FOCAL TOSAIG NA TÁNA.—This is the first word of the Táin.

**105.**—But céad can be used before dÁ:—AN CÉAD DÁ LÁ SAN—Those first two days. Here dÁ lá is viewed as a unity. Cf. AN òEIC BPÚINT SIN—That £10, where òEIC BPÚINT is a *sum* of money, and so takes the sg. article. So we may say—AN CÉAD òEIC BPÚINT, AN DARA òEIC BPÚINT—The 1st (2nd) *sum* of £10. AN DÁ CÉAD LÁ SAN=Those 200 days. Such expressions as “the third seats” (in several rows) are not allowable in I. They must be expressed *distributively*:—ŠAC TRÍOMAD SUÌDEACÁIN.

### Fractions

**106.**— $\frac{1}{2}$ —LEAC (Neut. o- stem, G. leac). It is used separately, and as a prefix—LEAC MO RÍGEACTA, the half of my kingdom; LEAC-PINGINN,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.; LEAC-CUISTIÚN, 2d. (CUISTIÚN, 4d.); LEAC-REOL, 3d.  $\frac{1}{3}$ —TRIAN (Neut. o- stem): DÁ DTRIAN (note eclipsis),  $\frac{2}{3}$ ;  $\frac{1}{4}$ —CEACRAMA (F. n- stem). In D. sg. CEACRAMAÍN (cf. quatrain) it means a line in a four-line stanza, or the stanza itself.  $\frac{1}{5}$ —CÚIGEAD (Neuter Ordinal used as noun). So the other Ordinals are used with CUIB, RANN, etc., to express other fractions.  $\frac{7}{13}$ —AN TRÍOMAD RANN DÉAS FÉ SEAC.  $\frac{1}{10}$ —ÒEACMAD—also tithe, or tax, in general. ÒEICMAD=10th.  $\frac{1}{6}$ —SÉMAD CUIB (LEAC-TRIAN). In fractions like  $\frac{6}{7}$ ,  $\frac{7}{10}$ , the Ordinal, though

used substantivally, is uninflected:—sé seac̣ṭṃạọ ( $\frac{6}{7}$ ), seac̣ṭ ṇoeac̣ṃạọ ( $\frac{7}{10}$ ), an ficeạọ cuiọ oe—the  $\frac{1}{20}$ . Trí ceac̣ṭrạṃna ( $\frac{3}{4}$ ).

### Multiplicatives

107.—Doṇfeac̣ṭ, once; ọá uair—twice; a oó fé oó (fé n-a oó)—2x2; fo trí—thrice (Numeral A). Trí seac̣ṭ—7x3. Oeic̣ ḅficeọ—ten score, 20x10, etc. The o- of oá is aspirated, except after o, n, t, l, s; or, of course, it may be eclipsed.

### Other Adjectives of Quantity (not Numerals)

108.—(a) Éigin, áirice.—b̄í an tuac̣al oeanta ās ouine éigin—Someone had blundered. It is implied that the speaker *did not know* who it was. Éigin is probably the Instrumental case of the noun, éigean, necessity. Áirice also was a *noun* (K. uses o'áirice). Tá neice áirice gur maic̣ liom t̄āgair̄t̄ oóib̄—I should like to refer to certain things (the speaker, of course, knows them). Éigin corresponds to L. aliquis, and áirice to quidam.

(b) “Any”—aon (in neg. sentences, “no”)—’b̄fuil aon air̄geāō āgac̣? Have you any money? Níl aon ciall āgac̣—You have no sense. “Anyway”—ar aon cuma. In affirmative sentences, pé cuma, pe áic, are also used. pé cuma is fearr leac̣—Anyway you prefer. pé áic is maic̣ leac̣—Anywhere you like, (c) “Many, many a.”—Is mó ouine b̄í i riocṭ sparán o'f̄āgáil (Séaona). Many a man was on the point of getting a purse. But “many” is often rendered by nouns, or certain idiomatic expressions. A lán uisge, air̄gic̣, aráin—Much water, money, bread. A definite G. must not follow a lán. Partitive oe (with D.) must be used instead. A lán o'uisge r̄na laoi—Much of the Lee water. Mórán—Is é is oóic̣ le mórán—Many people think; puinn—(Only in negative, or virtually negative clauses): Níor scríob̄ sé puinn leab̄ar—He didn't write many books; oá mbeāō puinn oaoine 7 eolas acu air.—Had there been many (there were not) who knew it. (d) How many? An 'mo? Cé meiō? 'Oé méiō:—An mó oia

ann?—How many Gods are there? Cé méid fear a bí ann?—How many men were there? D'é méid garsún sa scoil iníu? (e) However many—dá méid (a méid), dá liacht (a liacht), etc. Dá méid a bí ann ní raib dochtain dóib ann—However many were there, there weren't enough. (f) So many—(a) oiread san—bí oiread san acu ann gur cuairt díom a gcomaiream—There were so many there I couldn't count them. (g) As many more—oiread eile—Dá mbead oiread eile acu ann d'féadfainn iad a comaiream—Had there been as many more there, I could have counted them. (h) Twice as many as—a dá oiread agus—Tá a dá oiread seirbiseac anois aige 7 a bí aige bliain ó shin—He has twice as many servants now, as he had a year ago. (i) Half as many—leat an oiread—Níl ac leat an oiread seirbiseac anois aige 7 a bí aige—He has only half as many servants now as he had. (j) Too many—an iomad, an iomarca—Tá an iomad cainte agat—You've too much to say. (k) A great many. Besides mórán, a lán, other phrases occur:—ní beag de seo; ní beag d'iongha; ní beag d'uaibias; is mór an seo; níl don tseo (don iongha, don uaibias) ac . . . . (l) As many as—Cóm (líonmar, iomadamail, fairsing, reirseamail) agus (verb following) or le (noun or pronoun following). (m) All—gac, gac don, an uile, gac uile—an uile duine—every one. Not always expressed by adjectives:—A raib d'airgead ann—all the money there was. As prefix, -uile (iol, oll)—Uile-cómactac, almighty; ollscoil, iolscoil—University. (n) Other, another, others—eile; nac (é, í, iad); fé deire, ceana:—An lá fé deire—the other day; daoine nac é (í, iad)—other people. (o) One after another—l nuaire céile; 'na gceann is 'na gceann (of things), 'na nuaire is 'na nuaire (of persons); fá seac. (p) Each other, one another—a céile. (q). More.—Besides the comparative mó, one uses also tuille, breis (nouns); tar, seacas (prepositions); Any more than—ac oiread agus (before verb), ac oiread le (before noun or pronoun); ac com beag agus (or le); ac fé mar. . . . Once more—arís; don uair damain eile; the prefix ac, aic,—do dein sé é ac-aicris—he told it once more. More power to you—Conac sanort; a conac san ort.

### Pronominal Adjectives

**109.**—These are derived from, or partake of the function of, pronouns. They are:—(a) The Article (See 1-7.) (b) Possessive Adjectives, (c) Demonstrative Adjectives, (d) Interrogative Adjectives. The article, being formed from the two pronominal elements, “sin” and “to, ta,” belongs to this class. (b) The Possessive Adjectives are:—

Sg.	Pl.
1. mo ‘ . . . . -sa (-se)	ÁR <sup>n</sup> . . . . -na (-ne)
2. do ‘ . . . . -sa (-se)	ḃAR <sup>n</sup> . . . . -sa (-se)
3. M. Neut. a ‘ . . . . san (sin)	A <sup>n</sup> . . . . -san(sin)
F. a . . . san (sin)	

These are *the emphatic forms*, which alone should be given in a paradigm. When the English *my*, *thy*, etc., are given in a list, they mean, of course, *my*, *thy* (contrasting the persons). The Irish for *my*, *thy*, etc., is *not*, and *could not be*, mo, do, etc., but as given above. When there is no emphasis, drop the particles. Examples:—mo tíg, *my house*: mo tíg-se (mo tēaċ-sa)—*my house*; a ḡcaínnṫ ḃreāḡ—*their fine talk*: a ḡcaínnṫ ḃreāḡ san—*their fine talk*.

(c) The Demonstrative Adjectives are:—1. So, seo. 2. úo. 3. san, sin. They follow the noun, or noun+adjective or adjectives, immediately, and the noun is generally preceded by the article. But proper nouns, especially if the demonstrative is followed by aḡaínn-ne (aḡaíḃ-se, acu san) may dispense with it.—Séaḃna so aḡaínn-ne—This Séaḃna of ours. Also, in Dia Máirṫ seo cúḡaínn, etc., there is no article. So (seo) is the demonstrative of the 1st person, úo that of the second, and san (sin) that of the third. Seo and sin are used after a *slender* vowel or consonant.

(d) Interrogative Adjectives:—Cia, and ca are often adjectival:—Cionnus (cia ionnus), how; c’áir (U.) where; ca h-uair (U.), when; canaḃ (ca ionaḃ) where; cia ’cu (followed by noun) which; cia méirḃ—how many, how much; céarḃ, créarḃ, what? Cionnus (conus) ’taoi? How are you? (An “is” not a “ta” sentence,

as the principal verb is “is”). Expanded it is—CΙΑ  
 ιοννυς αν ιοννυς α ταιοι? What way (is) the way in  
 which you are? Cf. the Conn. CΙΑ čαιοι α b̃fuil tú?  
 C’ÁIT α (i) RAIb̃ (RAb̃) sé (U)? Where was he? O’im̃čig̃  
 sé—ní f̃ios b̃om canab̃—He went—I know not where.  
 CΙΑ’cu ceann ab̃’ f̃eARR leat? Which one would you  
 prefer? Equivalent to—CΙΑ ceann acu (αν ceann) ab̃’  
 f̃eARR leat? In the expressions CΙΑ h-é (í, iab̃), CAb̃ é  
 (í, iab̃), CΙΑ and CAb̃ are *pronouns*.



## CHAPTER IV.

### PRONOUNS.

**110.**—Pronouns are either—(a) Personal. (b) Demonstrative. (c) Interrogative. (d) Indefinite. (e) Reflexive, (f) Relative.

The Personal Pronouns are:—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. <b>Mise</b>	<b>Sinn-ne (Sinne)</b>
2. <b>Ṭusa</b>	<b>Sib-se</b>
3. <b>M.—Eisean (Seisean)</b>	<b>laḁ-san (Slaḁ san)</b>
<b>F.—Ise (Sise)</b>	<b>All genders.</b>
<b>Neut.—eḁḁ ón (eḁḁon).</b>	

These are the emphatic forms (See **109**). When unemphatic the 1st sg. is **mé**, 2nd **ṭú**, 3rd M. **é (sé)**, F. **í (sí)**, Neut. **eḁḁ**. In the pl. drop the emphatic particles. **é**, **í**, **laḁ** (and their emphatic forms) are used:—1° As subjects or predicates to the vb. **is**:—**Is é Séḁḁna ḁ bí ḁnn**—It was S. who was there (I. **é** *predicate*, Eng. *it subject*, each proleptic). 2° Disjunctively, i.e., unattached, either as subj. or pred. to a verb:—**bí sé ḁnn, 7 é ḁR ḁeḁRḁ-buile**—There he was, stark mad. 3° As object of a transitive verb (autonomous or otherwise); as subject of a passive verb; or A. governed by certain prepositions:—**buail é**, strike him; **pósḁR í**—someone will marry her; **creḁḁḁR laḁ**—they will be robbed; **ḁir é 7 í**—between him and her. 4° Absolutely (See **195**):—**Ṭá ḁ ḁios ḁḁam í beic i nḁráḁ leis**—I know she's in love with him.

**Seisean**, **sise**, **siaḁ-san** (and their unemphatic forms) are used conjunctively as subjects to any verb other than **is**:—**Ṭá sé ḁR buile**—He's mad; **Ṭáir siaḁ san ḁR ḁon ḁigne liomsa**—They agree with me.

The neut. emphatic particle (in 3rd sg.) appears only in **eḁḁon**, O.I. **ed ón**, i.e. (viz., namely). It means

“it (is) it.” With the copula ón or són was used where we now say san.—*b<sub>Δ</sub> b<sub>ó</sub>ic<sub>í</sub>ge liom san*=O.I. *ba dochu lem són* (Quoted by *Thurn.* 241).

### The Suffixed Pronouns

**111.**—A.—The so-called prepositional pronouns are examples of personal pronouns suffixed (in D. or A.) to prepositions. B. Genitive pronouns suffixed to prepositions. C. Suffixed—*b* in verbs.

#### A.—Prepositional Pronouns

##### 112.— Old Datives

(a) *b<sub>o</sub>*, to, for, etc.

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. <i>b<sub>ó</sub>m-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>b<sub>ú</sub>inn-ne</i>
2. <i>b<sub>u</sub>ic-se</i>	<i>b<sub>Δ</sub>oi<b>b</b>-se</i>
3. M.Neut. <i>b<sub>ó</sub>-san</i>	<i>b<sub>ó</sub>b-sin</i>
F. <i>b<sub>i</sub>-se</i>	

(b) *b<sub>e</sub>*, from, off, etc.

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
<i>b<sub>í</sub>om-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>b<sub>í</sub>nn-ne</i>
<i>b<sub>í</sub>o<b>τ</b>-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>b<sub>í</sub>b-se</i>
<i>b<sub>e</sub> sin</i>	<i>b<sub>í</sub>o<b>b</b>-san</i>
<i>b<sub>i</sub>se</i>	

(c) *Ó*, from, through, etc.

1. <i>u<sub>Δ</sub>im-se</i>	<i>u<sub>Δ</sub>inn-ne</i>
2. <i>u<sub>Δ</sub>ic-se</i>	<i>u<sub>Δ</sub>i<b>b</b>-se</i>
3. M.Neut. <i>u<sub>Δ</sub>i<b>b</b> sin</i>	<i>u<sub>Δ</sub>ic<sub>Δ</sub> san</i>
F. <i>u<sub>Δ</sub>ic<sub>e</sub> sin (-se)</i>	

(d) *Δ* (*Δs*), out of.

<i>Δs<sub>Δ</sub>m-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>Δs<sub>Δ</sub>inn-ne</i>
<i>Δs<sub>Δ</sub>ic-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>Δs<sub>Δ</sub>i<b>b</b>-se</i>
<i>Δs sin</i>	<i>Δs<sub>Δ</sub>ic<sub>Δ</sub> san</i>
<i>Δis<sub>e</sub> sin</i>	

(e) *R<sub>o</sub>m*, before (O.I. *re*)

1. <i>r<sub>ó</sub>m<sub>Δ</sub>m-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>r<sub>ó</sub>m<sub>Δ</sub>inn-ne</i>
2. <i>r<sub>ó</sub>m<sub>Δ</sub>ic-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>r<sub>ó</sub>m<sub>Δ</sub>i<b>b</b>-se</i>
3. M.Neut. <i>r<sub>o</sub>m<sub>e</sub> sin</i>	<i>r<sub>ó</sub>m<sub>Δ</sub>-san</i>
F. <i>r<sub>o</sub>im<sub>p</sub>i sin</i>	

(f) *Δ<sub>z</sub>*, at, etc.

<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>Δm-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>Δinn-ne</i>
<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>Δic-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>Δi<b>b</b>-se</i>
<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>e sin</i>	<i>Δ<sub>z</sub>Δ-san</i>
<i>Δici sin</i>	

##### 113.—

##### Old Accusatives.

(g) *l<sub>e</sub>*, with, etc.

1. <i>liom-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>linn-ne</i>
2. <i>l<sub>e</sub>Δic-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>li<b>b</b>-se</i>
3. <i>l<sub>e</sub>is-sin</i>	<i>leo-san</i>
F. <i>l<sub>e</sub>ic<sub>i</sub>-sin (l<sub>e</sub>i)</i>	

(h) *τ<sub>r</sub>é*, through

<i>τ<sub>r</sub>íom-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>τ<sub>r</sub>ínn-ne</i>
<i>τ<sub>r</sub>ío<b>τ</b>-s<sub>Δ</sub></i>	<i>τ<sub>r</sub>í<b>b</b>-se</i>
<i>τ<sub>r</sub>í<b>b</b> sin</i>	<i>τ<sub>r</sub>ío<b>č</b>-san</i>
<i>τ<sub>r</sub>ic<sub>e</sub> sin</i>	

(i) **So**, to (O.I. co)

1. cúḡam-sa
2. cúḡat-sa
3. cúige sin
- F. cúici sin

- cúḡainn-ne
- cúḡaib-se
- cúca-san

(l) **Um**, about, around,  
etc.

- umam-sa
- umainn-ne
- umat-sa
- umaib-se
- uime sin
- úmpa san
- uimpi sin

(m) **Idir**, between, etc.

1. eadram-sa
2. eadrat-sa
3. idir é
- F. idir í

- eadrainn-ne
- eadraib-se
- eadorta san

(n) **Tar**, beyond, past,  
etc.

- čarm-sa
- čarainn-ne
- čart-sa
- čaraib-se
- čairis sin
- čarsa, čarsta,
- čáirsi, čáirsti sin
- san

**114.** Either Dative or Accusative.(o) **In**, in, into

1. ionnam-sa
2. ionnat-sa
3. ann san
- F. inni sin
- ionnainn-ne
- ionnaib-se
- ionnca-san

(p) **Ar**, because of, on, into,  
etc.

- orm-sa
- onnt-sa
- air sin
- uirči sin
- orainn-ne
- oraib-se
- orča-san

(r) **Fé** (fó, fá, faoi), under, etc.

- Sg.—1. fúm-sa
2. fút-sa
  3. fé sin (faoi sin). M.Neut.
  - F. fúici sin.

- Pl.—1. fúinn-ne
2. fuuib-se
  3. fuča san.

**115.**—Besides these we have:—

(a) Occasionally—**Seac**, besides (A).—**Seac**am-sa, seacad-sa, seac é, seac í. Pl.—**Seac**ainn-ne, seacuib-se, seaca san. Instead of seac é, í, seaca san, we now use seacas é, í, iad san. (b) Isolated forms:—1. **Ceana**, now an adv.=already, is a prep. pron. from O.I. cen (our ḡan)=without it. 2. **Riam**, now an adv.=ever before, is prep. pron. 3 sg. M. and Neut. from re, before. 3. In **riut** (aḡ síor-šéirdeao riut—“Éamonn an Cnuic,”) we have 2 sg. form from the prep, fri, against (O.I. frit, friut). **Riut** also occurs as 2 sg. from re, before.

4. The Conn. *freisin* seems to be the O.I. *friss sin*, influenced by *leis sin*. 5. K. has *uáistí* (3 sg. F.) from *ós* (K.P. 79).

### 116.— Notes on the Prepositional Pronouns.

(a) *Cúgam-sa*, etc., though formed from the O.I. prep, *co* (*zo*) reduplicated, are now associated with the later prep. *cum*. That is, they are used wherever *cum* would be used with nouns. E.g.—*cum na castrac*—to the city; *cúca san*—to them. The reduplication may be due to the influence of *azam-sa azat-sa* (*Thurn.*). (b) *fo*, now *fó* (Conn. *faoi*, U. *fá*, M. *fé*). *Faoi* may be due to O.I. 3 sg. A. *foi*; and *fé* may be due to the M. pronunciation of *-aoi* in certain words, e.g., *caoi*. *Fúicí* seems to be formed on the analogy of *cúicí*, *uáice* (the later O.I. form was *foae*). (c) *Ann*, orig. D. while *inní* (O.I. *inte*) was A. The A.M. and D.F. forms are lost. In *ionnta* (O.I. *intiu*) the pron. is A., the D. (O.I. *inuib*) having become obsolete, because it was the same in form as the 2 pl. (our *ionnab*). (d) In *ortá*, *leo*, *leobhá* (analogical), *tríotá*, *eatorhá*, *iompá*, *cúca*, *éarsa*, the pron. is A., as the preps, *le*, *tré*, *uir*, *um*, *co*, *tar* governed only an A., while *ar* (though it governed both cases with *nouns*) was compounded only with A. *pronouns*). (e) *Acu*, *asta*, *uachá*, *rómpa* are formed after these models (*o*), replacing the forms in *-uib*—O.I. *occaib*, *eissib*, *uadaib*, *remib*—where the prons. were of course D., as these prepositions governed only the D. (f) In *uóib*, *uíoib*, we have regular D. forms, except that the final *-uib* of *uíoib* has been broadened, to prevent confusion with the 2 pl. *díib*. (g) In 2 sg. a slender *-t* seems to have been regular in D. so that *uíoit*, *asat*, *azat*, *rómat* are irregular. A. forms show broad *-t*—*leat*, *umat*, *tríot*, *cúgat*, *éart*, *ionnat*, *ort*, *fút*, *seachad*. (h) In 3 sg. M. and Neut. the A. pronoun in O.I. appeared as:—1° a slender vowel, after preps, which originally ended in a vowel—*fé*, *uime*, *cúige*, *céana* (O.I. *cene*). 2° After preps, which originally ended in a consonant, the vowel is lost, but the final consonant is slender—*leis*, *trío*, *amhlaid*, *éairis*. *Air* was in O.I. regular, *airi*; the mod. *air* is irregular, modelled on O.I. *foir*, *fair*. *Ann*, as we have already

seen, is D. (i) The 3 sg. A.F. in O.I. ended in *-e* (now mostly *-i*, because of the pron. *í*)—*innɿ*, *uimpɿ*, *ćúɿ*. (j) The 3 sg. D.M. shows either a final broad consonant, or broad vowel—*ann*, *riam*, *as*, *ɒó*. *Δige* (O.I. *occo*) is modelled on *ćuige* (A). *Uaiɒ* (O.I. *uaɒ*) may be influenced by *uaim*, *uait*.

#### B.—Genitive Pronouns suffixed to Prepositions.

**117.**—Instead of the full forms of the G. pronouns certain prepositions usually have shorter suffixed forms. These prepositions are:—*Δɿ*, *ó*, *in*, *ɒo*, *ɒe*, *fé le*:—*Δɿam' m'áćair*—at my mother; *am' ćig-se*—at *my* house; *ɒubairɿ sé suas lem' béal*,—he said up to my face; *ćá sé sé míle óm ćig-se ɿo ɒćí ɒo ćig-se*—it's six miles from my house to yours; *ɒom lom ɒeirɒ aim'ɒeona*—entirely against my will; *ɒo baineaɒ ɒem' bonnaiɒ mé*—I was taken off my feet. 2nd sg. *Δɿoɒ' m'áćair*—at your mother; *ɒ' ćig-se*, in *your* house; *let' aćair*—with your father. So—*ɒoɒ'*, *ɒot'*—to your; *ɒeo'*, *ɒet'*, of or from your; *féo'*, *fáɒ'*—under your; *óɒ'*, *ót'*—from your. . . . With a (3 sg. M.F.) and a (3 pl.) we have—*Δɿá* (*ɿ* slender), *ɒ'á*; after *ó*, *le*, *fé* (owing to *in* and other eclipsing preps.) *ó n-a*, *le n-a*, *fé n-a*. In 1 pl. and 2 pl. the G. pronouns are never shortened.

#### C.—Suffixed *-ɒ* in Verbs.

**118.**—In 1 pl. pres. Ind. Act. and Fut. Ind. Act. final *-ɒ* is a neuter pronoun:—*ɒéanfaimíɒ*, *ɿuimíɒ*, *lit.*—we shall do it, we pray for *it*. So final *-ɒ* in 1 sg. Fut. Ind. Act., and 1 sg. Pres. Subj. Act.:—*raɿaɒ*, *beaɒ*.

#### Demonstrative Pronouns

**119.**—These are:—1. *Seo*, *so*. 2. *Siúɒ*, *suɒ*. 3. *Sin*, *san*. Strengthened forms—*é seo*, *é siúɒ*, *é sin* (*í seo*, *iaɒ so*, etc.). The simple forms are uninflected for gender, number and case. The strengthened forms indicate gender and number, and of course the prep. pronouns, when followed by the demonstratives, *do not cease* to convey distinctions in gender, number and case.

**120.**—The Demonstratives may be:—1° Subj. of the verb *is*, or other verb:—*Is fearr so ná sú*—This is better than that. *Ní maí liom san: ní éiríonn san liom*—I don't like that. 2° Predicate to verb *is* (when not following immediately)—*Sé deirimse leat ná so*—This is what I tell you. *Sé teastuig uaid ná sú*—What he wanted was what I told you. When they follow *is* immediately they are strengthened by *é, í, iad*:—*'Sí síú a bí uaid*—It was “that one” he wanted. 3° Object of transitive verb (Autonomous or otherwise)—*Tarraing seo, buail, sin*—Pull this, strike that (Rhyme). 4° Used *absolutely*:—*Bí a luí cónaile gá áiteam uirí san a déanam*—Her advisers urged her to do that. 5° Governed by prep.:—*As san*—out of that; *dar so 7 sú*—by all the oaths. 6° Virtual N.—*Beadh náire orm san do déanam*—I should be ashamed to do that (See 169).

### Interrogative Pronouns

**121.**—*Cia* (M.F.), *cé* (M.F.); *cia h-*, *cé h-* (before *é, í, iad*); *cad* (Neut.). *Cá*, whence (*ca+an*—the same *an* as we have *prefixed* in *an-uas*, etc. (See **157B**),—is the only mod. I. ex. of an interrogative pron. governed by a prep. Otherwise *cia, cad, ca* (and compounds) are always pred. N. to vb. *is* (understood). The U. forms—*goiré, goirí, goiríad*, seem to reflect O.I. *cote, coteet*—cate in *fhírinne*—in what consisteth righteousness?

### Interrogative Particles

**122.**—Direct and indirect single questions, not introduced by interrogative pronouns, or adjectives, prefix the particles *an<sup>n</sup>, ar<sup>h</sup>*.—*An raibais ar scoil iné?*—Were you at school yesterday? *O'fíadruig sé díom an raibais ar scoil iné*—He asked me if I was at school yesterday. *Negative* questions are introduced by *ná* (in Munster, except with “*is*”); *nač*, outside Munster, with all verbs; in Munster, also with the present tense of *is*; *nár* everywhere, in the past tense, except with those verbs to which *ro* is attached, and certain others which dispense with *ro-* altogether. *nár* (like *ar*) is used also

with the Conditional of *is* (expressed or understood). *ḡá fuil sé annso?*—Isn't he here? *ḡac̣ fearra òuit e?* Isn't it better for you? *ḡac̣ òfuil sé còm̃ m̃aic̣ aḡac̣?* (outside Munster)—May you not as well. . . . ? But *ḡá raḃais ann?*—Weren't you there? *ḡá fearcaís é ?*—Didn't you see him?

**123.**—*Double* questions are put by means of *cia'cu*, with a direct relative form in the first member, and *nó ná* (*ḡac̣, ḡár*) in the second member, when it is negative. (For explanation, see **214 II.**). Is *ḡeacair a ráò cia'cu* (*a*) *cuair̃ sé ann nó ḡár cuair̃* (*òeagair̃*)—It is hard to say whether he went or not. The disjunction implied in “whether . . . or” may be expressed in other ways:—1° (Without *cia'cu*):—*Ar f̃an sé ann, nó an am̃lair̃ a cuair̃ sé a ḃaile*—Did he stay or go home? 2° The 2nd alternative is put in the verb *n.* form, with ellipsis of the auxiliary verb *ḡeim* (see **286**).—*Ar f̃an sé arm, nó òul a ḃaile?*

### Indefinite Pronouns

**124.**—(a) *Các*, everyone:—*ṡá f̃ios aḡ cáč*—everyone knows. (b) *ḡoinne* (*ḡoinneac̣*)—anyone (with neg.—none): *ḡac̣ ḡoinne*, everyone. (c) *ceac̣ṡar*—originally “each of two,” now “one or other of two”; with neg. “neither,” “not any” (of more than two). (d) *-neac̣*—someone, anyone. Nearly obsolete, but we have it in *ḡoinneac̣*, and in the comparative form *neac̣ṡar*. (e) The neut. *ní*, anything, had something to do with the development of the noun *níò*, a thing. In L.B. we find a pl. *nechi*, mod. *neiṡe*. In *níò*, the *ò* is merely a re-echo of *ṡ* (for earlier *ch*) in *neiṡe*. The pl. spelling *níòṡe* is a reconstruction from *níò*. (f) *neac̣ṡar*. Originally, “one of two.” Common now in the phrase—*nó neac̣ṡar acu*—or else. Both *ceac̣ṡar* and *neac̣ṡar* were probably neuter nouns originally, like *oirṡear*, *iarrṡar* *ceannṡar*, *allṡar*, etc.

The adjectival form of *các* is *ḡac̣*. The slender *c-* in *ceac̣ṡar* is due to *neac̣ṡar*. The *ḡ-* of *ḡac̣* is often slender also, especially in:—*ḡac̣ 're seaò*. *ḡon* is sometimes

used pronominally. Δον ναομ̃čΔ ʋé (Ć.S. Mark, I, 24) The Holy One of God. Δον ʋem' čáirʋiʋ sʋe (TBC) one of my "supernatural" friends. Δον ʋΔ mó ná é fém (CMD. 394)—One greater than he. ʋ'innis eoin cé'rb̃ é Δn τ-Δον san (CMD. 394),—John told who this One was.

### Reflexive Pronouns

**125.**—Added to the personal pronouns, fém makes them reflexive:—ʋo ʒortuiʒ sé é fém—he hurt himself. Čaoin tu fém Δ ʋuine ʋoičτ (KP.)—weep for thyself wretched man. ʒráʋ ʋo ʋuine fém—self-love. Besides the reflexive meaning, fém has others:—(a) Own—mo leab̃ΔR fém—my own book; tu fém fé nʋeár é—the responsibility is all your own. (b) Even—Δn méro sin fém—even that. Cuir i ʒčás fém—even supposing. Fém contains a part of the verb is, and é sin, but is now used of all three persons, both numbers, and all genders. It is an example of the *generalisation* of a *single form*. Cf. the nominal phrase Δ čéile, used to mean, each other, one another.

### Relative Pronouns

**126.**—**Direct** relatives are, normally, those used in N. and A. But after **prepositions** which govern the A., the forms 5° below are used. **Oblique** relatives are those used for G. and D. (including Abl., Loc. and Instr.). The modern relatives are:—A.—**Direct**:—1° Δ', 2° ʋo', 3° Δ' ʋ', 4° '(particle omitted). B.—**Oblique**:—5° Δ<sup>n</sup>, ΔR', 6° ʒo<sup>n</sup>, ʒur', 7° nΔ<sup>n</sup>, n-ΔR'. C.—**Negative**:—8° ná, in Munster (outside past tense) with verbs other than is. 9° nΔč, outside Munster, with all verbs (except past tense); and in Munster with is (in present tense). 10° nár' in past tense; and in the conditional of is. D.—**Compound**:—11° Δ<sup>n</sup> (outside past tense); ΔR', in past tense; and conditional of is; and, without aspiration, in present tense of is. Examples:—

1° Δ'—Δn ʋeΔn čos-nočτΔiče is í Δ ʋí Δnn (S.)—It was none other than the barefooted woman. 2° ʋo', ʋ'—Sʋé Δn čé ʋo čuΔiʋ Δnn—this is he who went. Čá 'řios



Aḡ LUČT NA H-IONNARBA CAḶ Ḷ'OIREANN ḶÓÍḶ (T.B.C. 247)—  
 The exiles know what (it is that) suits them. 3° Δ Ḷ'—  
 NUAIR Δ Ḷ'ÉIRIḡ IÓSEP AS Δ ČOLLA ḶO ḶEIN SÉ MAR Δ  
 Ḷ'ORḶUIḡ AINGEAL AN TIGEARNA ḶÓ (Č.S. 3)—And Joseph,  
 rising up from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had  
 commanded him. 4° (Particle understood). SIN É MÍLL  
 MÉ (S.)—that's what ruined me. CAḶ É AN TAIRĖE FÉADFAḶ  
 SÉ Δ ḶEANAM ḶUIT? What good could he do you? 5° Δ<sup>n</sup>,  
 AR' (AR', in past tense; also in present (without aspira-  
 tion), and conditional, of is):—CÉ'R ḶIOḶ MÉ, NÓ CÉ 'MB'  
 AS MÉ (N.Nḡ .6)—Who I was, or whence I was. AN CURAČ  
 Δ ČUR Δ ḶAILE Aḡ AN ḶFEAR Δ MBU LEIS Í (*Ibid.* 21)—to send  
 the curragh home to its owner. (Note, in these exx.  
 from Conn. I., that Δ<sup>n</sup> sometimes does *not* combine with  
 RO in the past tense. The same is true of ḡO occasionally  
 in Munster I.—AN MUINNČIR ḡO MBA LEO É (CMḶ. 377)  
 the owners of it). SUL, Δ RAIḶ Ḷ'IUAM AIGE FILLEAḶ—before  
 he had time to return (Here RO- combines with the verb).  
 IS MAIRḡ ḶO'N FÉAN SAN TRÉ N-Δ NḶEANFAR MAC AN ḶUINE  
 ḶO ḶÍOL (Č.S. 75)—Woe to him through whom the Son  
 of Man shall be betrayed (Rel. A. governed by TRÉ).  
 6° ḡO<sup>n</sup>, ḡUR' (ḡUR' in past tense; and also in pres. (without  
 aspiration) and conditional of is). AN TÉ LEIS ḡUR CÚMANG  
 FÁḡAḶ (Proverb)—If you haven't room enough you can  
 leave! AN TÉ ḡURBÉ Δ ḶIA Δ ḶOLḡ—he whose God is  
 his belly. 7° N-Δ<sup>n</sup>, NAR' (N-AR' in past tense; and also  
 in present (without aspiration) and conditional of is):—  
 AN TÉ N-ARB' É Δ ḶIA Δ ḶOLḡ—he whose God is his belly.  
 'SÉ ḶUḶAIRČ ḡAČ FLAIČ N-ÁR MAIČ LEIS TRIALL (Song)—Every  
 chief that wished to go (to fight) said. 8°, 9°, 10°—NÁ,  
 NAČ, NÁR:—RUḶ ÉIGIN NÁR Ḷ'FEIR Δ Ḷ'FAḡAIL—something  
 that could not be got. AN TÉ NÁ FUL LÁIR NÍ FULÁIR ḶÓ  
 ḶEİČ ḡLIC (Proverb)—If you're not strong, you need  
 cunning. AN TÉ NAČ TRUAḡ LEIS ḶO ČÁS, NÁ ḶEIN ḶO ḡEARÁN  
 LEIS (Proverb)—Don't look for sympathy from the  
 unsympathetic. 11° The Compound Relative—Δ<sup>n</sup>, AR':—  
 Ḷ'FÁḡ SÉ AN ḡLEANN 'S Δ RAIḶ ANN AḡAM—He gave me  
*carte blanche* (Lit—He left me the glen, and all that  
 was in it). ḶO ČAIČEAS AR ČUILLEAS—I spent all I earned.  
 N.B.—The relatives 8°, 9°, 10°, 11°, have no distinctive  
 forms for direct and oblique uses.

Development of *go*, *gur*; *n-a*, *n-ar*; *do*; *a'*.

**127.**—*go*, *gur*.—Developed from—1° *aʒ a—An ní ó bfuil ʒaeðeal ʒlas, is tearc ʒa bfuil a sheancas* (K.H. II, 18)—Few people know the history of the name G.G. (*ʒa=aʒ a*, passing easily to *go*). 2° The **conjunction** *go*—*Caó é mar ðuine é seo, ʒo smačtuigeann sé ʒaoč ʒ fairrʒe, ʒ ʒo nðeinid siad ruð air?* (Luke, viii, 25)—Who is this that He commandeth the winds and the sea, and they obey Him? The 1st *go* is clearly conjunctive. The 2nd one easily develops the relative meaning—“Who is this *whom* winds and sea obey”? 3° The contrast between *ná* and *go* as *conjunctions* facilitates the use of *go* as an *affirmative* relative, corresponding to the *negative* relative *ná*. By a sort of *proportional analogy*, we get—Con. *ná*: conj. *go* :: Rel. *ná*: **Rel. go**—*Neiçe beaʒa ná r cuir sé blúire suime ionnta nuair a connaic sé ar ðtúis iad, ač gur cuir sé mórán suime anois ionnta* (N. 168)—Trifles to which he paid no attention whatever when he first saw them, but to which he paid great attention now.

*na*, *n-ar*:—1° From preps. which ended in a nasal (and others which imitated them) we get, with oblique rel. *a*, the form *n-a* (*n-ar*). E.g.—*i n-a* (in which), *ʒo n-a* (with which), *ria n-a* (before whom), and, in imitation of these, *ó n-a* (from which), *tré n-a*, *le n-a*. *n-a* was then isolated, and used as an oblique relative, even when such preps. did not precede it. 2° From accidental occurrences like—*an bean n-a bfuil an t-éadac corcra uirč*—where the final *-n* of *bean* might have been carried to *a*, changing it into *n-a*. Cf. the *liaison* in Fr. *vous avez*, etc., and a like phenomenon with rel. *do*.

*do*.—1°—From confusion with prep. *do* in compound verbs like *do-ʒeibim*, *do-čuarð*. These, when non-relative, are often used without *do*, which then assumes the function of a relative. 2° *do* *beir* in O.I. (with unaspirated *b-*), but *intí do beir* (*b*-asp.)—he who gives. In mod. I. *do* *beir*, where *ð* is always aspirated, the aspiration cannot mark relativity, which is therefore assigned to *do*—*an té do beir*. 3° From fortuitous occurrences like—*ta' fíos aʒ lučt na h-ionnarba caó ð'oireann ðóib*.

Δ'.—In verbs like ΔΤΑ΄, ΔΎΕΙΡ, ΔΟΥΒΑΙΡΤ, initial Δ- contains the remains of a prep. which was kept, in later I., only in rel. sentences, so that gradually it came to be looked on as the relative element. **ÁR** **n-ΔČAIR** ΔΤΑ΄ ΔR **neam̃**—Our Father who art in heaven. The form Δ' ð' is merely a reduplicated form of ðo. The **prep**, ðo often becomes Δ, and before certain words beginning with a vowel, or ƿ takes the double form Δ ð (this happens in Scottish Gaelic also). **Relative ðo**, side by side with relative Δ, has been similarly treated.

N.B.—The direct relative a does *not* aspirate:—  
 (a) **bΔ**, the past and conditional of **is**. **Δn** **τέ** Δ **b'ƒeARR**—he who was best; **b'sin** **é** Δ **b'ƒeARR**—that's what would have been best. (b) Autonomous forms (in many places). **ČRÉIS** Δ **tuizteAR** **ζΔč** **beART** (Proverb)—it is afterwards a deed is appreciated. This holds even when the *meaning* is oblique (as in last ex.). It holds also of ðo—**Δn** **RUð** **ðo** **ðeineΔð**, that which was done. (c) The t- of **tá** and the ð- of **ðeir**, **ðubAIRT**, etc.—**ní** **mé** **ΔðubAIRT** **Δn** **CAINNČ** **sin**—It wasn't I who said that.

Note also, that ΔR, **n-ΔR**, **ζun** never aspirate the **b** of the present tense of **is**:—**pé** **duine** **le** **n-arb** **ait** **é**—Whoever thinks it queer. **Δn** **τέ** **n-ARBé** Δ **ΌIA** Δ **ðolζ**.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

**128.—A.—Simple Verbs:**—These are subdivided into  
(a) Root Verbs—*molaim*, I praise, *buailim*, I strike.  
(b) Denominative verbs, in *-uig*, *-ig*, from nouns and adjectives—*árduigim*; *ísligim*, I lower; and disyllabic verbs in *-il*, *-in*, *-ir*, *-is*, *-ing*. The verbs in Class (a) are First Conjugation; those in Class (b) Second Conjugation. N.B.—Verbs like *tiomáim*, with long 2nd syllable belong to 1st Conjugation. Fut. *tiomáinfeadh*.

**B.—Compound Verbs (135-153).**

**129.— A.—SIMPLE VERBS.**

(a) Root verbs, *molaim*, *buailim* (First Conjugation).

**Active Voice. Indicative Mood.**

**Present Tense.**

Sg.

Pl.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>molaim-se</i> , <i>buailim-se</i> | <i>molaimís-ne</i> , <i>buailimís-ne</i> .  |
| 2. — <i>air-se</i> , — <i>ir-se</i>     | <i>molann sibse</i> , — <i>eann sibse</i> . |
| 3. — <i>ann seisean (sise)</i>          | — <i>airís sin</i> , — <i>irís sin</i> .    |
| <i>buailleann seisean (sise)</i> .      |   |

**Imperfect.**

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. <i>do molainn-se</i> , <i>do buailinn-se</i> | <i>do molaimís-ne</i> , <i>do buailimís-ne</i> |
| 2. „ — <i>éa-sa</i> , „ — <i>éa-sa</i>          | „ — <i>airís sibse</i> , „ — <i>eann sibse</i> |
| 3. „ — <i>air seisean (sise)</i>                | „ — <i>airís sin</i> , „ — <i>irís sin</i>     |
| „ <i>buailleadh</i> „ „                         |  |

**Past.**

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. <i>do molas-sa</i> , <i>do buaileas-sa</i> | <i>do molamaí-ne</i> , <i>do buaileamaí-ne</i> |
| 2. „ — <i>ais-se</i> , „ — <i>is-se</i>       | „ — <i>adair-se</i> , „ — <i>eadair-se</i> .   |
| 3. „ <i>mol</i> , <i>do buail seisean</i>     | „ — <i>adair san</i> , „ — <i>eadair san</i> . |
| (sise).                                       |  |

**Future.**

Sg.

Pl.

- |                                   |                             |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. molfað-sa, buailfeað-sa.       | molfaímíð-ne, buailfímíð-ne |
| 2. —faíR-se, —fíR-se              | —faíð síðse, —fíð síðse     |
| 3. —faíð, buailfíð seisean (sise) | —faíð síaðsan, —fíð síaðsan |

**Conditional (Secondary Future).**

- |                                    |                                   |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. do molfainn-se, do buailfinn-se | do molfaimís-ne, do buailfimis-ne |
| 2. „ —fá-sa, „ —feá-sa             | „ molfað síðse, „ —feað síðse     |
| 3. „ —fað seisean, „ —feað         | „ —faíðís sin, „ —fíðís sin       |
- sise.

**Imperative Mood.**

- |                            |             |   |              |
|----------------------------|-------------|---|--------------|
| 1. molaím-se, buailím-se   | molaímís-ne | } | buailímís-ne |
|                            | molaím-na   |   | —eam-na      |
| 2. mol-sa, buail-se        | molaíð-se,  |   | —buailíð-se  |
| 3. molað, buaileað seisean | —aíðís sin, |   | —íðís sin    |

**Subjunctive Mood.****Present.**

- |                                 |                           |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. molað-sa, buaileað-sa        | molaímíð-ne, buailmíð-ne  |
| 2. —aíR-se, —íR-se              | —aíð síðse, —íð síðse     |
| 3. —aíð, buailíð seisean (sise) | —aíð síaðsan, —íð síaðsan |

**Past.****(Same in form as Imperfect Indicative).****Passive and Autonomous.**

- 1° Pres. Indic.—moltear, buailtear. Moltear é (Pass.) he is praised (é N.) Aut.—Someone praises him (é A).
- 2° Past Indic.—do molað, do buaileað (Init. consonant unaspirated).
- 3° Impft. Indic.—do molcí (moltaí, moltaoi), do buailcí.
- 4° Fut. Indic.—molfar, buailfar (f. broad, at least in many parts of Munster).
- 5° Conditional.—(do) molfí (molfaoi), (do) buailfí.
- 6° Imperative.—moltear, buailtear.
- 7° Subjunctive.—Pres.—moltear, buailtear. Past.—molcí (moltaoi), buailcí.

### 130.— Subsidiary Forms.

The above paradigms (where three persons are given) show, of course, the emphatic forms (109). When unemphatic, drop the particles. The meaning, in some of the tenses, is *habitual*, and, in all, *absolute*; and there is direct reference to the *action*, not a *state* previous or subsequent to the action.

Verbs, however, like *deirim*, I say, *creidim*, I believe, *measaim*, I think, *samluigim*, I fancy (2nd conjug.), *cloisim*, I hear, *cím*, I see, *tuigim*, I understand, may convey either the *actual* or the *habitual* meaning. In other verbs, the meaning may be, instead of *absolute*, *progressive* and *contemporaneous*; there may be reference, not to the *action*, but to a *state*. Hence the above paradigms must be supplemented:—

Pres. Indic.—A.—Direct reference to *action*:—(a) Contemporaneous (Habitual): 1° Active:—*bíonn sé am' molað 7 é i láthair na mac-léigin*—He keeps praising me, when he is with the students. 2° Passive:—*bíonn sé dá molað acu an fadó a bío ann*—He is being praised by them all the time they are there. 3° Auton.:—*bítear am' molað*—Someone keeps praising me.

(b) Actual:—1° Active:—*tá sé am' molað anois*—He is praising me now. 2° Passive:—*táim dom' molað aige*—I am being praised by him. 3° Auton.:—*táthar am' molað (am' bualað)*—Someone is praising (striking) me.

B.—Direct reference to *state*:—(a) Habitual:—*bíonn an coirce buailte aige nuair a sroisim-se an sgioból*—He has the oats threshed when I reach the barn (Subsequent state), (b) Actual:—*tá an cruinneacht buailte aige céanna*—He has already threshed the wheat (Subsequent state). Similar distinctions occur in all the moods and tenses.

### 131.—Notes on the Moods and Tenses:—

1° The ending *-ann*, *-eann*, of 3 sg. pres. Indic, first appears in the prototonic forms of certain compound verbs, whence it spread gradually. O.I. *as-ren*, pays out, neg.—*ní érenn*. It was not, therefore, originally,

a personal ending at all, as -renn is the vb. root, re(n), present stem, with -n doubled.

2° The 3rd sg. rel. ending is -as, -eas. Used as 3 pl. as well, but rarely at all in Munster. The pl. forms are obsolete.

3° In 1 pl. -aimíð, -ímíð, had final í short, and had no -ð.

4° The Impft. (when no other particle is used) is generally preceded by ðo, which aspirates the *active* forms. In final syllable of 1 and 3 pl. í has been lengthened. (Due to assimilation in dissyllabic forms with í in penult,—ðo ðímís?)

5° The ending -að, ead, in the finite vb., except in Pass, and Auton., is pronounced -að̊, -eadå. In Pass and Auton.= -as̊ (us̊), -að̊, -av, according to the district. In the vb. n. the -ð is silent in Munster.

6° In Past. Auton. and Pass. ðo- prefixes h- to initial vowel, to distinguish from Act. forms—ð'airigeað̊ Seán, —S. used to hear. But—ðo h-airigeað̊ S.—S. was heard.

7° In the past tense the particle ro generally combines with certain other particles:—an (interrog.), ní (not), ná (conj. or neg. rel.), a (obl. rel.), so (conj. or obl. rel.), n-a (obi. rel.), muna (unless), cá (where? ), giving instead:—ar, níor, nár, ar, sur, n-ar, muna, cá.

8° But these combinations are not used with:—raib̊, rů, ráim̊ (these have ro- already); feaca (saw), fuair (found); sometimes with—tů (gave), táim̊ (came), deåð̊ (went,—by-form of deåð̊); usually not with deåð̊ (went), dearna (made, did—which already contains ro-).

9° Ro- is used, in affirmative wishes (Optative Subj.) with is, and tá alone:—slán so råð̊air—Thank you (ro- included in vb.). Sur̊ am̊laib̊ ðuit—The same to you. *Not* with other verbs.—So n-éirigib̊ an oib̊ce leat—Good-night.

10° In neg. wishes ro is used with all verbs:—nára' mai̊ asat-sa—No thanks to you. nár cuic̊ig̊ear ðo saoc̊ar leat—May your exertions not be recompensed.

RAĈ NÁ RAIĖ ORĈ ZO ðeo—May you never have luck!  
(RO- included in vb.).

**132.**—Verbal noun, and adjective (or participle):—  
1° Vb. noun:—molΔĖ (G. sg., and N. pl.—molτΔ, molĉΔ);  
buaΔΔĖ (G. sg., and N. pl., buaΔlτe, buaΔlĉe). 2° Parti-  
ciple:—molĉΔ, molτΔ; buaΔlĉe, buaΔlτe.

**133.**— (b)—**Second Conjugation.**

**Active Voice. Indicative Mood.**

**Present.**

Sg.	Pl.
1. ÁRÐUIĜIM-se, ÍSLIĜIM-se, FREAĜRANN-se.	ÁRÐUIĜMÍÐ-ne, ÍSLIĜMÍÐ-ne, FREAĜRAIMÍÐ-ne.
2. ÁRÐUIĜIR-se, ÍSLIĜIR-se, FREAĜRAIR-se.	ÁRÐUIĜEANN, ÍSLIĜEANN, FREAĜRANN (SIÐ-se).
3. ÁRÐUIĜEANN, ÍSLIĜEANN, FREAĜRANN (seisean, sise).	ÁRÐUIĜIÐ, ÍSLIĜIÐ, FREAĜRAIÐ SIAÐ SAN.

**Imperfect.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

**Past**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

**Future.**

1. ÁRÐÓCΔÐ-SA, ÍSLEOCΔÐ SA, FREAĜRÓCΔÐ SA.	ÁRÐÓCAM-NA, ÍSLEOCAM-NA, FREAĜROCAM-NA.
2. ÁRÐÓCΔIR-se, ÍSLEOCΔIR-se, FREAĜRÓCΔIR se	ÁRÐÓCΔIÐ, ÍSLEOCΔIÐ, FREAĜ- RÓCΔIÐ (SIÐ-se).
3. ÁRÐÓCΔIÐ, ÍSLEOCΔIÐ, FREAĜRÓCΔIÐ (sise).	ÁRÐÓCΔIÐ, ÍSLEOCΔIÐ, FREAĜ- RÓCΔIÐ (SIAÐ SAN).

**Conditional.**

1. Ð'ÁRÐÓCΔINN-se, Ð'ÍSLEOCΔINN-se, Ð'FREAĜRÓCΔINN-se.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, but without F-).

**Imperative**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

**Present Subjunctive.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

**Past Subjunctive.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).



**Passive and Autonomous.**

1° Pres. Indic.:—ÁRÐUIĞTEAR, ÍSLIĞTEAR, FREAGARČAR.

2° Past Indic.:—ṽo h-ÁRÐUIĞEADṽ, ṽo h-ÍSLIĞEADṽ, ṽo FREAGRAṽ.

3° Impft. Indic.:—ṽo h-ÁRÐUIĞĆÍ, ṽo h-ÍSLIĞĆÍ, ṽo FREAGARĆÍ (-ČAÍ).

4° Fut. Indic.:—ÁRÐÓČAR (ÁRÐÓĦAR), ÍSLEOČAR (-ÓĦAR), FREAGROČAR (-ÓĦAR).

5° Conditional:—(ṽo) h-ÁRÐÓČTAÍ, ÍSLEOČTAÍ, FREAGRÓČTAÍ (-ÓĦAÍ).

6° Imperative:—ÁRÐUIĞTEAR, ÍSLIĞTEAR, FREAGARČAR.

7° Pres. Subj.:—(Same as Imper.).

8° Past Subj.:—(Same as Impft. Indic.).

Vb. n.—ÁRÐUĞADṽ, ÍSLIUĞADṽ, FREAGAIRČ (FREAGRA).

Vb. adj.—ÁRÐUIĞČE, ÍSLIĞČE, FREAGARČA.

N.B.—ÍSLIĞIM (though its root, ÍSEAL, is syncopated all through) is not a syncopated verb like FREAGAIR. The latter loses the vowel of its 2nd syll. when an inflection beginning with a vowel is added. ÍSLIĞIM is never syncopated in this way.

**134 (a).**—Spelling (and pronunciation) like ṽ'ÁRÐÓĦÁ, etc., are due to ṽo ġeoḃčÁ (ṽo ġeoḃČAR, ṽo ġeoḃĆÍ) where ḃ becomes ř regularly, because of č.

(b) FREAGAIRČ, and other compounds of ġAIR,—AġAIRČ, ČAġAIRČ, řÓġAIRČ—have two vb. n. forms. The one in -Č is due to ČADĖAIRČ. Thus—ČADĖAIR: ČADĖAIRČ :: FREAGAIR: FREAGAIRČ. Earlier—FREAGRA, AġRA, ČAġRA, řÓġRA. These we have still, but with a different meaning. The forms in -Č denote the name of *the action*; those in -A the *objective content* of the action:—'Sé FREAGRA řUAIR sé, The answer he got was . . . řÓġRA—proclamation, etc. AġRA—a claim. ČAġRA—a reference, etc.

**B.—Compound Verbs.**

**135.**—In most so-called irregular verbs, the “irregularity” is chiefly due to the fact that they are compound, and appear in two different forms:—

(a) The **Deuterotonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on second syllable:—**DO-ĎÈIRIM**, **ADÈIRIM**, **DO-ĎÈIBIM**.

(b) The **Prototonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on first syllable:—**ṬÀĎRAIM**, **ÀĎRAIM**, **ṬÀĎAIM**.

There will, therefore, generally be **two** forms in the paradigms:—the **Absolute** (generally **deuterotonic**) and the **Dependent** (always **prototonic**). The **Dependent** form is used after the **Conjunct Particles**:—

1° The **negatives**:—**ní**, **níOR**, **NAĊ**, **ná**, **nÁR**, **muna**, **munAR**.

2° The **interrogatives**:—**an**, **AR**, **NAĊ**, **ná**, **nÁR**.

3° The **oblique relatives**:—**A**, **AR**, **SO SUR**, **n-A**, **n-AR**.

4° The **compound relative**:—**A**, **AR**.

5° The **conjunctions**:—**SO**, **SUR**, **ṬÁ**. (if).

**136.**—Several roots are sometimes needed (Cf. Eng. go, went; am, be, was):—

1° **ṬÁ** employs the roots:—**stā** (L. *adstare*, Eng. stand); **bhu** (L. *fui*); **uel** (I. *fuil*, W. *gweled*, to see, O.I. *fil-us*, they are (*Lit.*—behold them)).

2° **DO-ĎÈIRIM**, I give, bring, etc., employs the roots:—**bher** (L. *fero*, E. bear); **ug** (O.I. *-ucc*)—**ĊUĎAS**.

3° **ṬÉIĎIM**, I go, employs the roots:—**steigh**—**ṬÉIĎIM** (E. *ve—stige*); **reg.**—**RAĎAD**, O.I. *rega*; **erg**—**ÉIRIĎ A ĊOṬAD**—go to bed (O.I. *eirgg*). Now confused with **ÉIRIĎ**, rise; vb. n.—**ṬUL**; **ued**, in 3 sg. pres. Indic, and in the past Indic.

**137.**— I.—**ṬÉIĎIM**, I go.

### Indicative.

Pres.—Sg.—1. **ṬÉIĎIM-se**, etc. (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. **ṬÉIĎMÍṬ-ne**, etc.

Impft.—Sg.—1. **DO ṬÉIĎINN-se** (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. **DO ṬÉIĎMÍS-ne**, etc.

Past.—**Absolute**:—Sg.—**DO ĊUAṬAS** (**ĊUAS**)-**sa**, **DO ĊUAṬAIS-se**, **DO ĊUAṬO seisean** (**sise**).

Pl.—**DO ĊUAṬAMAIR-ne** (**ĊUAMAIR-ne**)  
etc. (usual endings).

Past.—**Dependent**:—Sg.—*ḃeigēas-sa* (*ḃeačas*) (see 139), *ḃeigis-se*, *ḃeaḡaiḃ seisean* (*sise*).

Pl.—*ḃeigēamair-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Fut.—Sg.—*raḡaḃ-sa* (*rač . . .*), *raḡair-se*, *raḡaiḃ seisean*.

Pl.—*raḡmíḃ-ne*, etc. (as usual).

Cond.—Sg.—(*ḃo*) *raḡainn-se* (as usual). Pl.—(*ḃo*)

*raḡaimís-ne*, *raḡaḃ síḃse*, *raḡaiḃís sin*.

### Autonomous Forms.

Pres. Indic, Imper., and Pres. Subj.—*téigtear*.

Impft. Indic.—*téigcí*. Fut. Indic.—*raḡfar*. Cond.—

*raḡfí*. Past Indic.—*ḃo čuaḃčas*; *níor ḃeigčeas*.

Past. Subj.—*téigcí*.

**138.**—Vb. n.—*ḃul*. Participle—*imčigče* (*ḃulčā* as Participle of **Necessity** (293A.)). Imper. Act.—*téigim-se*, *téirig-se*, *téigēaḃ seisean*; *téigmís-ne*, etc. (as usual). Pres. Subj.:—*téigēaḃ-sa* (like *ḃuaileaḃ*). Past Subj.—*téiginn-se* (like *ḃuailinn*).

**139.**—Notes:—1° The 3 sg. pres. Indic, was, in O.I. *tét* (i.e. *téḃ*, still used in U.). The root is used, also found in past tense. *ṽeigēann* is modelled on the other persons (root,—steigh). 2° *ḃeigēas* (*ḃeaḡas*)—Munster—is analogical. *ḃo čuaḃ* when prototonic gives *ḃeačaiḃ* (U. and Conn.). The Munster form is due to the fut. *raḡaiḃ*, while the U. and Conn. fut. *račaiḃ* is due to *ḃeačaiḃ*.

**140.**— II.—*čigim* (*čaḡaim*), I come.

Pres. Indic.—*čigim-se*, *čaḡaim-se*, etc. Pl.—*čigimíḃ-ne*, *čaḡaimíḃ-ne*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(*ḃo*) *čiginn-se*, *čaḡainn-se*, etc. Pl.—(*ḃo*) *čigimís-ne*, *čaḡaimís-ne*, etc.

Past Indic.—(*do*) *čánaḡ-sa* (*čána-sa*), *čanaís-se*, *čáinig seisean*. Pl.—(*ḃo*) *čánamair-ne*, *čánaḃair-se*, *čánaḃar san* (*čánḡaḃar*).

Future.—*čiocfaḃ-sa*, etc. Pl.—*čiocfaimíḃ-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Conditional.—(ḡo) ḡiocfaimn-se, etc. Pl. (ḡo) ḡiocfaimís-ne, etc. (usual endings).

Imperative.—*ṡim-se* (*ṡaim-se*), *ṡair-se*, *ṡeab* (*ṡab*) *seisean* (*sise*). Pl.—*ṡímís-ne* (*ṡaimís-ne*), etc. (usual endings).

Pres. Subj.—*ṡeab-sa* (*ṡab-sa*), etc. Pl. *ṡimíḡ-ne* (*ṡaimíḡ-ne*), etc.

Past Subj.—*ṡinn-se* (*ṡainn-se*)—same as Impft. Indic, without ḡo.

Vb. noun.—*ṡeac̃t* (G. *ṡeac̃ta*); O.I. *tuidecht* (from *do-tiag*) and *tichtu* (from *do-icc*). We still have *ṡeac̃t* (*ṡuḡeac̃t*) esp. in poetry.—*ḡoḡairí na tíre aṡ tíṡeac̃t aṡ a ṡcapall* (*An Spailpín fánaḡ*).

Participle.—*ṡẽe*, *ṡẽa*, *ṡẽaĩe*.

Pres. Auton.—*ṡẽear*, *ṡẽtar*. Impft.—*ṡẽí*, *ṡẽtí*.

Past „ *ṡánaḡas*. Fut.—*ṡiocf̃ar*. Conditional.—*ṡiocf̃í*.

Imper. „ *ṡẽear*, *ṡẽẽear*, *ṡẽtar*, *ṡẽt̃ar*.

Subj. „ Pres.—„ „ „ „  
Past.—*ṡẽtí*, *ṡẽt̃í*, *ṡẽt̃í*.

### Notes.

1° Pres. Indic.—Deuteronic forms are lost, as in all the other tenses. (O.I. *do-icc*, etc.). *ṡaṡ-* comes from *ṡiṡ-* through *ṡẽaṡ-*. The short form *ṡiṡ* in 3 sg. is mostly used in—*ṡiṡ le*. . . . *ní ṡiṡ le*—can, cannot.

2° Past.—*-ánaṡ* is the preterital stem corresponding to *-iṡ* (O.I. *-icc*). 2nd sg. also written *ṡánaṡáis*, but the *ṡ* is silent in *Uíḡ ṡaoṡaire* and *Corca ḡuḡne*. It is silent also in pl.

3° Fut.—*-c-* comes from *-ṡ-* under influence of *f* (=ḡ), and is broad and written *c* (not *ṡ*).

4° Condit.—Here “*c*” remains in 2 sg., although “*f*” is pronounced “*f*” and not “*h*.” The same remark applies to *ṡiocf̃ar*, *ṡiocf̃í* (Aut.).

5° Imper.—The 2 sg. *ṡair* is from—either (a) *to-air-icc*, or (b) *rethim* (*rĩim*), like *f̃óir*, help.

III.—*Imčigim, I go away.*

**141.**—In form, a compound of *τέιγim* (vb. n. *im-čeačt*). But it has passed over to the *-ig*, class. Fut.—*imčeočad-sa*, etc. Cond.—*o'imčeočainn-se*, etc.

Many other verbs, too, have passed over to the *-ig* class, with *-óc-*, *-eoč-* in fut. and cond.—*iompuigim*, I turn (O.I.3 sg. *im-soí*). But vb. n.—*iomπόò* (*iomπάil*). *τέαρnuigim*, I depart, die, steal away, etc. Vb. n. *τέαρnam* (<*sníom*), *τέαρνόò* (anal, from *iomπόò*). *éirigim*, I rise (root *reg*). Vb. n.—*éirge*. *fiapruigim*, I enquire. Vb. n. *fiapraiòe*. *teangmuisim* (*teagmuisim*), I meet, happen, chance (Compound of *-ig*). Vb. n.—*teangmáil*, *teangbáil* (owing to *gabáil*). *teastuisim*, I am wanting, missed, needful to; I die, etc. Vb. n.—*teastáil*, *teastabáil*. In U.I. MSS. common in the sense of “die.” —*τáio fir lundain san contabairt ó čeastaiğ* (Elegy on *eoğan Ruad Ó Néill*.)—the London men (the English in Ireland) are out of danger since he died.

IV.—*Do-ğeibim, I get, find.*

**142.**—Pres. Indic.—*do-ğeibim-se*, etc. (Absolute).

*fağaim-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Impft. Indic.—*do-ğeibinn-se*, etc. (Absolute). *fağainn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Past Indic.—*fuaras-sa*, etc. (the same in Dependent).

Fut. Indic.—*do-ğeoðad-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *fuigeað-sa*, etc. (Dependent).

Condit.—*do-ğeoðainn-se*, etc. (Abs.). *fuiginn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Imper.—*fağaim-se*, *faig-se*, *fağað seisean*, *faigmís-ne*, *faigò-se*, *faigóis sin*.

Subj.—Pres.—*fağað-sa*, etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Same as *Dependent* Impft. Indic.

Auton.—Pres. Indic.—*do-ğeibtear* (Abs.). *fačtar* (*fağtar*) Dep.

Impft. Indic.—*do-ğeibtí* (Abs.). *fačtí* (*faigtí*) Dep.

Past Indic.—Abs. and Dep.—*fuarčas*, *frič*, *fuarað*.

Fut. Indic.—**ḃo-ḡeoḃṅar** (Abs.). **ḡuḡḡar ḡuḡṅear**) Dep.

Condit.—**ḃo-ḡeoḃṅaoi** (-ṅaí, -ṅí. Abs.). **ḡuḡḡí, ḡuḡṅcṅí** Dep.

Imper.—**ḡaṅṅar, ḡaḡṅar**. Pres. Subj. the same. Past.—**ḡaḡṅcṅí, ḡaḡṅcṅí**.

Vb. n.—**ḡaḡáil, G. ḡaḡála** (<**ḡo-ḡaḃála**).

### Notes.

1° The deuterotonic forms come from **ḃo-ḡeib-**, the prototonic form **ḡo-ḡaḃ-**. The slender **-ḡeib-** is due to the reduplicated fut. stem **ḡeoḃ-** (O.I. **géb-**).

2° **ḃo-** is often dropped in the absol. forms (**ḡ** retaining its aspiration). It is kept usually in rel. clauses, assuming the function of a relative.

3° **ḡaḡaim<ḡo-ḡaḃaim**. Sometimes spelled **ḡaḡḃaim**, but needlessly, as **-ḃ-** is lost in speech. **ḡ** is necessary—to denote the *diphthong*.

4° **ḡuḡḡeab<ḡo-ḡeoḃab** is pronounced, in Munster, as **ḡaḡab** (Subj.<**ḡo-ḡaḃab**). This leads to the widespread confusion between Condit. and past Subj.

5° In mod. I. (as in O.I.) the vb. n., participle and imper. are prototonic (except in Munster, in vbs. like **ṅiomáim**, with 1st syll. short, 2nd long. Here the long vowel attracts the accent).

6° **ḡaṅṅar<ḡaḡṅar**, where **ṅ=h** unvoices **ḡ**, giving **ṅ** (**ṅ-** being then restored).

### V.—**ḡaḃaim, I take, go, etc.**

**143.**—A *simple* verb, found in preceding *compound*. It has an **é-** fut. **ḡeoḃab** (earlier, **gébad**; **ḡ**, unaspirated). The neg. and interrog. forms are:—**ní ḡeoḃab, an ḡeoḃabò sé?** etc., as compared with **ní ḃḡuḡḡeab, an ḃḡuḡḡò sé**, of the compound (IV). In **ní ḃḡuḡḡas, ní** seems to eclipse. It does not. It aspirates **ḡ**, as usual, and **ḃ** comes, not from **ḡ**, but from **u**. I.e., it is a *consonantal glide* from **í** to **ú**. Then all the prototonic forms take **ḃ-** after **ní** by analogy. (Except in Pass, and Auton. where **ní** does not aspirate—**ní ḡaṅṅar, ní ḡuḡḡas**).

144.— VI.—*Do-ghnám, I do, make.*

Pres. Indic.—*do-ghnám-se, do-ghnár-se, do ghníonn seisean* (Abs.) *deánaim-se, etc.* (Dep.—*deimim-se, etc.* Munster)

Pl.—*do-ghnámíð-ne, do-ghníonn síð-se, do-ghníð siadusan* (Abs.) *deánaimíð-ne, etc.* (Dep.).—*deinimíð-ne* (Munster).

Impft. Indic.—*do-ghnínn-se, do-ghnícheá-sa, do ghníodh seisean* (Abs.) *do-ghnímís-ne, do ghníodh síð-se, do-ghníois sin* (Abs.) *deánainn-se* (*deininn-se, Munster*), etc. (usual endings. Dep.)

Past Indic.—*do rinneas-sa, do rinnis-se, do-rinne seisean* (Abs.) *do rinneamaíð-ne, do-rinneadúair-se, do-rinneadúar san* (Abs.) *dearnas-sa, dearnais-se, dearna* (*dearnaidh*) *seisean* (Dep.) *dearnamaíð-ne, etc.* (usual endings) Dep.

Fut.—Abs. and Dep.—*deanfað-sa, etc.* (usual endings).

Condit.—(*do*) *deanfainn-se, etc.* (*ní*) *dearnfainn-se, etc.*

Imperat.—*deimim-se* (*deánaim-se*), etc. (as usual).

Subj.—Pres.—*deineadh-sa* (*deánadh-sa*), etc. Past.—*deininnse* (*deánainnse*), etc.

Auton. (and Pass.):—

Pres. Indic.—*do ghnítear* (Abs.). *deintear* (*deántar*). Dep.

Impft. Indic.—*do ghnítí* (Abs.). *deintí* (*deántaí*). (Dep.).

Past Indic.—*do rinneadh* (Abs.). *dearnadh*. (Dep.)

Fut. Indic.—*deanfar*. Condit.—*deanfaí* (*deanfaoi*).

Imper. and Pres. Subj.—*deintear* (*deántar*). Past Subj.—*deintí* (*deántaí*).

## Notes.

1° In Munster I. the pres. stem is usually *dein-* (also in Impft. Indic., Imper., Subj.) *deán-* being reserved for Fut. and Condit. (on analogy of *beir-* pres. stem, *béar-* fut.).

2° The pres. and impft. Indic, abs. forms are nearly obsolete in Munster.

3° Instead of the past Indic, as in paradigm, *deineas-sa, etc.*, are usual in Munster, both Abs. and Dep.

4° The deuterotonic forms of the fut. are now seldom used. The fut. and condit. show a blend of two types—

the é- fut., and the ʃ (or b-) fut.—do ḡéanao, or do ḡéan, and do-ḡéanfao, déanfao. K. often has do ḡéan, instead of do ḡéan, owing to the prototonic forms.

5° In past Aut., instead of do rinneao, etc., do beineao, níor beineao, etc., are usual in Munster.

6° Vb. n.—déanam (G.—déanta). Participle—déanta.

### 145.— VII.—**BEIRIM** (and Compounds). I bear, I carry.

Pres. Indic.—**BEIRIM-se**, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(do) **BEIRINN-se**, etc. Past.—**RUḠAS-SA**, etc.

Fut. Indic.—**bÉARFAO-SA**, etc. Condit.—(do) **bÉARFAINN-se**, etc.

Imper.—**BEIRIM-se**, **BEIR-se**, etc. Subj.—Pres.—**BEIREAO-SA**, etc.

Past Subj.—**BEIRINN-se**, etc.

Aut. and Pass:—

Pres. Indic.—**BEIRTEAR** (-**ċEAR**). Impft.—**BEIRĆÍ** (**BEIRĆÍ**).

Past.—**RUḠAO**. Fut.—**bÉARFAR**. Cond.—**bÉARFÍ** (-**FAÍ**).

Imper.—**BEIRTEAR** (-**ċEAR**).

Pres. Subj.—**BEIRTEAR** (-**ċEAR**). Past.—**BEIRĆÍ** (-**ĆÍ**).

### Notes.

1° The past tense is a compound of ro and -uḡ (O.I. -ucc). Cf.—**ṭuḡ**.

2° The fut. (primary, and secondary) is a blend of the é- fut. and the ʃ- fut. K. do bÉAR: mod. do bÉARFAO.

Vb. n.—**bREIċ** (G.—**beirċe**). Participle.—**beirċe**.

### 146.— VIII.—**DO-BEIRIM**, I give, bring, etc.

Pres. Indic.—do **BEIRIM-se**, etc. (Abs.). **ṬABRAIM-se**, etc. (Dep.).

Impf. Indic. do **BEIRINN-se**, etc. (Abs.) **ṬABRAINN-se**, etc. (Dep.).

Past Indic.—(do) **ṬUḠAS-SA**, etc.—(Abs. and Dep.).

Fut. Indic.—do **bÉARFAO-SA**, etc. (Abs.). **ṬABARFAO-SA**, etc. (Dep.).

Condit.—do **bÉARFAINN-se**, etc. (Abs.). **ṬABRFÁINN-se**, etc. (Dep.).



Imper.—*tuḡaim-se* (*ṭaḃraimse*), *ṭaḃair-se*, *tuḡaḃ* (*ṭaḃ-raḃ*) *seisean*.

*Tuḡaimís-ne* (*ṭaḃraimís ne*), *tuḡaiḃ-se* (*ṭaḃraiḃ-se*), *tuḡaiḃís* (*ṭaḃraiḃís*) *sin*.

Subj.—*tuḡaḃ-sa* (*ṭaḃraḃ-sa*), etc. Past.—*tuḡainn-se* (*ṭaḃrainn-se*), etc.

Vb. n.—*ṭaḃairt* (G.—*ṭaḃarča*). Participle.—*ṭaḃarča*, *tuḡča*.

Pass, (and Auton.):—

Pres. Indic.—*ḃo ḃeirčear*, *ṭaḃrčar*, *tuḡtar* (Munster).

Impft.—*ḃo ḃeirčí*, *ṭaḃrčái*, *tuḡčí* (Munster).

Past.—*ḃo tuḡaḃ*. Fut.—*ḃo ḃéarfár*, *ṭaḃrfár*.

Condit.—*ḃo ḃéarfí*, *ṭaḃrfí* (*-fái*).

Imper.—*tuḡtar* (Munster); *ṭaḃrčar*.

Subj.—*tuḡtar* (Munster); *ṭaḃrčar* (Pres.).

*tuḡčí* ( „ ); *ṭaḃrčái* (Past.).

### Notes.

1° *ṭaḃraim* is the regular prototonic form of *ḃo-ḃeirim*. Instead of this, a present formed from the perf. stem *tuḡ-* is much used in Munster, not only as dep. but also abs. *ḃeirim-se*, etc., are used (but with *ḃ-*) in asseverations like—*ḃeirim-se a ḃuirḃeacas leis an Ačair Síoruiḃe* (*Séaḃna*)—I thank the Eternal Father for it.

2° In the Impft.—the Munster forms are:—*ḃo tuḡainn-se*, etc., instead of those given in the paradigm.

3° The vb. n. was at first *tabart* , but even in O.I. *tabairt* also is used as nominative.

### 147.— IX.—*ḃeirim* (*aḃeirim*), I say.

*Absolute.*

*Relative.*

*Dependent.*

Pres. Indic.

*ḃeirim-se*, etc.

*aḃeirim-se*, etc.

*aḃraim-se*, etc.

Impft. Indic.

*ḃeirinn-se*, etc.

*aḃeirinn-se*, etc.

*aḃrainnse*, *aḃarča-sa*, etc.

Past Indic.

1. *ḃuḃarč-sa*

2. *ḃuḃraís-se*

3. *ḃuḃairt*

*seisean*

*aḃuḃarč-sa*, etc.

(Same as Absolute).

(Usual endings in pl).

Fut. Indic.

*Absolute.**Relative.**Dependent.*

DÉARFAD-SÁ, etc.

ADÉARFAD-SÁ, etc.

ABRÓCÁD-SÁ, etc.

Condit.

DÉARFAINN-se, ,,

ADÉARFAINN-se, ,,

ABRÓCAINN-se, ,,

Imper.

ABRAIM-se, ABÁIR-se, ABRAÖ seisean, etc. *Always prototonic.*

Pres. Subj.—ABRAD-SÁ, etc. Past Subj.—ABRAINN-se, etc.

Autonomous (and Passive):—Indic.—Pres.—DEIRTEAR

(abs.), ADEIRTEAR (direct rel.), ABARČAR (dep.). Impft.

—DEIRTÍ, ADEIRTÍ, ABARTÍ. Past.—DUÖRAÖ, ADUÖRAÖ;

DUÖRČAS, ADUÖRČAS. Fut.—DÉARFAR, ADÉARFAR, ABRÓC-

ČAR (ABRÓFAR). Condit.—DÉARFÍ, ADÉARFÍ, ABRÓČČÁÍ

(ABRÓFÍ). Imperat. and pres. Subj.—ABARČAR. Past

Subj.—ABARTÍ. Vb. n.—RÁÖ (G. RÁÖTE). Participle—

RÁÖTE, ABARČA.

**Notes.**

1° The DEIRIM forms resist aspiration:—ní DEIRIM; I do not say; isé DEIRIM, this is what I say. They are nearly always used as dep. forms in Munster in all the tenses of the indic.

2° The rel. forms are *direct* only. *Oblique*, rels. take the dep. forms:—an té go n-ABARČAR AIR, he of whom people say. But in Munster, also:—an té go nDEIRTEAR AIR (see note 1°).

3° Instead of DEIREANN (3. sg. and 2 pl.) a short form DEIR is common in Munster.

4° ADUÖART (O.I. as-ru-burt) shows confusion of AD- and AS, and substitution of DO- for RO-. The 2 sg. is an s- preterite, 1 and 3 sg. t- preterites; but both s- and t- are dropped in pl.

5° The vb. n. in O.I. was epert (now ABÁIRT=speech, phrase).

**X.—TOIRÖRIM, I deliver, present, etc.**

148.—A compound of BEIRIM, but conjugated as a simple vb. The vb. n. is TOIRÖEART, TOIRÖIRT. FÓBRAIM, I attack, begin, etc. is another comp. of BEIR, now treated as a simple vb. with vb. n. FÓBÁIRT.

## XI.—(Ṽo)-cím, I see.

**Absolute.**

Pres. Indic.—cím-se, cíṛ-se, cíonn seisean.  
 címíṽ-ne, cíonn síṽse, cíṽ síṽṽ san.

**Dependent.**

ṛeicim-se, etc. (regular endings).

**Absolute.**

Impft. Indic—cínṽ-se (etc.—but cíóṽ- in 3 sg., 2 pl.).

**Dependent.**

ṛeicinn-se, etc (regular endings).

**Absolute.**

Past Indic—	ṽo cónnac-sa	} Pl. ṽo cónnacamaíṽ-ne.
	„ cónnaicís-se	
	„ cónnaic seisean	

etc. (regular endings)

**Dependent.**

ṛeaca-sa, ṛeacáís-se, ṛeacaiṽ seisean.  
 ṛeacamaíṽ-ne, etc.

**Absolute.**

Fut. Indic—cífṛṽ-sa, etc. (regular endings).

**Dependent.**

ṛeicṛṽ-sa, etc.

Condit.—cífinn-se, etc. (regular endings).

ṛeicṛinn-se, etc.

Imperat.—ṛeicim-se, ṛeic-se, etc. (usual endings).

*Always prototonic.*

Pres. Subj—ṛeiceṽ-sa, etc. Past.—ṛeicinn-se, etc.

*Always prototonic.*

Pass, and Auton.—Indic—Pres.—cíteṽṽ, ṛeicṽṽ.

Impft.—cítí, ṛeicčí.

Past.—ṽo cónnacṽas, ṛeacṽas. Fut.—cífṽṽ, ṛeicṛṽṽ.

Condit—cífí, ṛeicṛí.

Vb. n.—ṛeiscint (ṛeicsint). G.—ṛeisceṽṽ, ṛeicseṽṽ, F.

Participle.—ṛeicṽṽ.

## Notes.

1° *Ċim-se*, etc., are for *ḃo-ċim-se*, etc. O.I. 3 sg. was *Δḃ cí* from the prototonic form of which come the dep. forms (with *ḃ-* added). *ḃeicim-se* is for *ḃaicim-se*. Cf. O.I. *maic* > *meic*, *mic*.

2° Besides *ḃo ċonnac*, *ḃo ċonnacas*, and *ḃo ċonnarcas* (root *ḃearc-*) occur, *ḃeaca* (Munster), *ḃaca* (*ḃacas*) is a reduplicated perfect (with *ḃ-* added. <*ād-ce-cha*).

3° *ḃeiscint* (O.I. *aiccsiu*, G. *aiccsen*, D. *aiccsin*) shows init. *ḃ-*, change of *-aic-* to *-eic-* metathesis of *c* and *s*, and addition of a final *-t*.

XII.—*Ċloisim, cluinim, I hear.*

149.—Now simple, regular vbs. O.I. *ro-cluinethar*. Past Indic.—*ḃo ċloiseas*, *ḃo ċlumeas*, and also (*ḃo*) *ċuala* (*ḃo-ċualas*) from O.I. perft. *ro-cuala*. Vb. n.—*clos*, *cloisint*, *cloistin*; *cluinsint* (due to *ḃeic-sint*).

XIII.—*Riġim, roičim, I reach.*

150.—*Riġim* < O.I. *ro-icc* (cf. *do-icc* = mod. *tiġ-*). The aspirated *-ġ-* may be due to *roičim*. Past Indic.—*ránaġsa* (cf. *τánaġ*). Vb. n.—*riaċtain*, *roċtain*.—*Roichim* < O.I. *ro-saig*, reaches—*ġus Δ roičeann saibbreas* (*ṽ.b.b.*)—to whom wealth comes. Vb. n.—*roċtain*. We now use *sroičim*, *sroisim*, conjugated as simple verbs. Vb. n.—*sroičint*, *sroisint*.

XIV.—*Iċim, I eat.*

151.—Fut.—*íosad-sa* (*íosḃad-sa*), etc. Condit.—*ḃ'íosainn-se*, etc. Vb. n. *iċe* (*not iċeΔḃ*), G.—*iċte*. Participle—*iċte*. The fut. is the only example remaining of the *s-* Fut.

XV.—*ḃeadar, I know.*

152.—The only *deponent* vb. in mod. I. (O.I. *ro-fitir*, knows). Used only in neg. or virtually neg. sentences, and with either past or pres. meaning. 3 sg. past, *ḃeoir* (common in Munster). Conjugation:—*ḃeadar-sa*, *ḃeadraís-se*, *ḃeair* (*ḃeoir*) *seisean*.—*ḃearamair-ne*, *ḃeardaḃair-se*, *ḃeardadar-san*. Vb. n.—*ḃios*, G. *ḃeasa*.

XVI.—**ἔαίμ, I am (Substantive Verb).**

**153.**—Indic.—Actual pres.—**ἔαίμ-se, τᾶοι-se, τᾶ seisean.**—**ἔαίμίῃ-ne, τᾶτᾶοι-se, τᾶίῃ σιάῃ san** (these are the abs. forms). Dep.—**ἔαίμίῃ-ne**, etc., but **ἔαί**, in 3 sg. and 2 pl.

Habitual pres.—**ἔίμ-se, ἔίρ-se, ἔίονν seisean; ἔίμίῃ-ne, ἔίονν σιῃ-se (ἔίτί), ἔίῃ σιάῃ san.** (Abs. and Dep.).

Impft.—(**ῥο**) **ἔίνν-se, ἔίτᾶ-σα, ἔίῃ seisean; (ῥο) ἔίμίς-ne, ἔίῃ σιῃse, ἔίῃς sin.** (Abs. and —without **ῥο**—Dep.).

Past abs.—(**ῥο**) **ἔίος-σα, ἔίς-se, ἔί seisean; (ῥο) ἔίωμαίρ-ne, ἔίῃμαίρ-se, ἔίῃμαίρ-san.** Dep.—**ἔίῃας-σα**, etc. But 3 sg.—**ἔαίῃ**.

Fut.—**ἔεαῃ-σα, ἔείρ-se, ἔείῃ seisean; ἔείμίῃ-ne, ἔείῃ σιῃ-se, ἔείῃ σιάῃ san.** (Abs. and Dep.).

Condit.—(**ῥο**) **ἔείνν-se, ἔείτᾶ-σα, ἔεαῃ seisean; (ῥο) ἔείμίς-ne, ἔεαῃ σιῃse, ἔείῃς sin** (Abs. and—without **ῥο**—Dep.).

Imperat.—**ἔίμ-se, ἔί-se, ἔίῃ seisean; ἔίμίς-ne, ἔίῃῃ-se, ἔίῃς sin.**

Pres. Subj.—**ἔεαῃ-σα, ἔεαίρ-se, ἔαίῃ seisean; ἔεαίμίῃ-ne, ἔαίῃ σιῃse (ἔεαί) ἔεαί σιάῃ san.**

Past Subj.—**ἔείνν-se, ἔείτᾶ-σα, ἔεαῃ seisean; ἔείμίς-ne, ἔεαῃ σιῃse, ἔείῃς sin.**

Autonomous:—Pres. Indic.—**ἔάτᾶρ, ἔαίτᾶρ** (Actual); **ἔίτᾶρ** (Hab.). Impft.—**ἔίτί**. Past.—**ῥο ἔίτᾶς** (abs.); **ἔάτᾶς** (dep.). Fut.—**ἔείτᾶρ**. Condit.—**ἔείτί**. Imperat.—**ἔίτᾶρ**. Pres. Subj.—**ἔάτᾶρ**. Past.—**ἔείτί, ἔείτί**.

Vb. n.—**ἔείτᾶ (ῥ-).**

Participle.—**ἔείτᾶ** (mostly as *Part, of Necessity*).

**Notes.**

1° The neg. forms of **ἔαί**- are **ἔίλμ-se**, etc. (<**ἔί** **ἔαίλμ-se**). Auton.—**ἔίλτᾶρ**.

2° Instead of **ἔαοι**, there is also **ἔαίρ**, and **ἔά τῷ**; instead of **ἔάτᾶοι**, **ἔά σιῃ**.

3° The spelling **ἔίῃμ-se, ἔίῃνν-se**, is wrong.

4° In the Past abs.—1, 2 sg. and all the pl. forms are re-constructions from 3 sg. (O.I. **βοί, βαί**>**ἔί**). The dep. forms are near O.I. enclitic forms:—1 sg.—**ῥοβα** (we

have added -s); 3 sg. ·robae, ·rabae (early mod. RAIBĕ, now RAIB; 1 pl. ·robammar, 2.—·robaid (now RAÖΔÖAIR), 3 .—·robatar, ·rabatar.

5° The short vowels of Fut. and Condit. (as found in Munster) reflect, not O.I. 1st and 2nd. Fut., but O.I. pres. and past Subj. Some of their uses are clearly Subj. E.g.—FAN ZO mberò sé annso—Wait till he be here (Subj. of indefinite time). Cf. FAN ZO TAZAIRÒ sé—Wait until he come. Here, however, U.I. uses the RO- Subj.—FAN ZO RAÖ (=RAIB) sé annseo.—DÁ mbeaö sé annso—If he were here. (The mod. classical usage requires *the past Subj.* after DÁ).

6° The past Subj. forms—binn, etc., given in many books, are altogether spurious, and should not be tolerated. The vb. TÁ is, in fact, the only vb. (if we except is.—See 154) in which the past Subj. is not the same as the Impft. Indic.

## XVII.—The Copula (1s).

**154.**—Pres. Indic.—Sg. and pl.—is (in all persons). Abs. Dep.—Δb, b (see *Notes*, 2<sup>3</sup>). Or the vb. disappears.

Impft. and Past:—Abs.—Sg. and pl.—bΔ (all persons); b' before vowel or ḟ. Dep.—bΔ (see *Notes*, 5), b' (before vowel, or ḟ), or the vb. disappears.

Fut.—Now nearly obsolete. I once heard, near Céim an Fiair (W. Cork)—mÁ bus uom é, if it will be mine.

Condit.—bΔ, bΔö, sg. and pl. all persons, Abs. bΔ, b'—or disappears (Dep.).

Pres. Subj.—bΔ, Δb, Δ', sg. and pl.

Past Subj.—bΔö, bΔ, b' (before vowels), sometimes bΔ h- sg. and pl., all persons.

### Notes.

1° All extant forms of is are, etymologically 3 sg. Syntactically, of course, they may be 1st, 2nd, or 3rd person. Such lists as:—1. Is mé, I am. 2. Is tu, thou art. 3. Is é, he is—are absurd. The pronouns here are predicates, not subjects, and the vb. given as 1st or 2nd person is, *de facto*, syntactically 3rd, while the vb. given as 3rd person may be 1st or 2nd.—Is mé Δ ví ann (Subj.—An TÁ Δ ví ann.—3rd person). Is tu fÉ nDÉAR é

(Subj.—*an té fé nðear é.*—3rd person). Is *é an ðiaðal tu* (Subj. *tu*, 2nd person)!

2° The dep. form pres. disappears after:—(a) *ní*, (*ní h-* before vowel). (b) *naç*. (c) *an?* (d) *sur* (before consonants, and sometimes before vowels) (e) *muran* (= *muna*) before consonants (f) oblique rel. before consonants.

3° It appears as *-b*, *-ab* after *sur* (sometimes before vowels), *nár*, opt. subj. before vowels (as *a'* before consonants) *muna* (before vowels), the oblique relatives *ar*, *sur*, *n-ar* (before vowels).

4° *bað*, as past tense is wrong. It should be *ba*. Condit. *bað* is permissible, though *ba* is more usual. The Impft. is ignored by other mod. Grammars.

5° In the dep. past *ba* generally combines with preceding *ro*, giving *'rð* (before vowels); before consonants, it disappears, but aspirates. When *ro* is not used *ba* (*bu*) appears before consonants—*an ðfeær a mbu leis í* (*n. n§. p. 21*)—the man who owned it.

6° The pres. subj. is usually *-b*, *ab*.—*surb amlaioð ðuit*—the same to you! But in U. and W'ford I. *ba* is common: *so mba hé ðuit* (U.)—the same to you. *So mba h-amlaioð ðuit* (W'f'd.). In the opt. subj. *sura'*, *nára'* are common before consonants—*sura' feærroðe tu é*—may you be the better of it.

7° Past subj.—*ðá mba mair leat é*—if you wished it. *ðá mb'ail leis é*—if he so wished. *ðá mba h-é a ðeaðð ann*—if it had been he.

8° There is no vb. n. The want is supplied thus:—*saðart iseað me, 7 is feær liom san, ná mé ðeic am' ðoçtúir*—I am a priest, and I prefer that to *being* a doctor.

### 155.— XVIII.—Remains of Compound Verbs.

1° See exx. in 141.

2° *ioðbraim* (*ioðbrim*), I sacrifice. A comp. of *beirim*, vb. n.—*ioðbairt* (*ioðbirt*).

3° *fuilingim*, I suffer (O.I. 3 sg. *fo-loing*). Now a simple syncopated vb. (2nd conjug.). Fut.—*fuilingeoçað* (*fuliceoçað*). Vb. n.—*fulang*, *fulağ*, *fuiling*, and U. *fulstın*.

4° **Ṭaḡṇaim**—I bark at, urge, etc., vb. n. **ṭaḡann**, **ṭaḡaint**, was a compound also. (O.I. *do-seinn*, drives).

5° **ḡoluḡim**—I hide, cover, <**ḡo+luḡim**, I lay (lie) under. Vb. n. **ḡolac̃**. Now conjugated as a simple vb.

6° **ḡaisnéisim** (**aisnéisim**), I predicate, etc. <O.I. vb. n.—*aisndís* (<*as-ind-et*, relates). Now treated as *simple*. Vb. n. **aisnéis**, **ḡaisnéis**.

7° **Ḃḡlaicim**, **Ḃḡnaicim**—I bury, vb. n.—**ḂḡlacḂḡ**, **Ḃḡlacan**, **ḂḡnacḂḡ**. **Ḃḡlacan** comes (by metathesis of *l* and *n*) from **Ḃḡ-anacul** (O.I. *aingid*, protects).

8° **Cúḡḡuḡim**—I defend, cover, etc., vb. n.—**cúḡḡac̃** (<O.I. *cumtach*, vb. n. of *con-utuing*, builds).

9° **Ṭárla**—happened, <O.I. *·tarla*<*do-rala* (*ro-la*) has the two preps. *ḡo*, and *ro*.

10° **Ṭuitim**, I fall, vb. n.—*id.* O.I. 3 sg. *do-tuit*. The old perfect **ṭorḡair** occurs in poetry. It comes from *do-cer*, *do-ro-chair*. The root “*cer*” is seen in **críon** (**crín**), withered. Cf. O.I. *ara-chrin*—perishes, and L. *cernuus*, with face towards earth, bowing, etc.

11° **Coimeáḡaim**, I keep<O.I. *comét*, vb. n. of the obsolete compound *con·oí*, keeps. U.I. vb. n. **coimeḂḡ**. In Munster *c-* is usually slender.

12° **Ionḡarḡaim**, I banish, is a compound of O.I. *ben-*.



## CHAPTER VI.

### ADVERBS, Etc.

**156.**—An **Adverb** is a **word** or **phrase** or **clause** used to modify the meaning of words expressing action or quality. The modification is various, giving the following classes of adverbs:—A.—Modal. B.—Local. C.—Temporal. D.—Interrogative. E.—Causal. F.—Negative. G.—Quantitative. H.—Multiplicative I. Asseverating. J.—Concessive.

#### **157.**—A.—**Modal** Adverbs:—

1° Formed from adjectives by prefixing the prep. *ζο* (see **159** 1°)—*ζο* *μαιτ̃*, well; *ζο* *h-olc*, badly; *ζο* *ῥάνα*, boldly; *ζο* *breaž boz*, very easily. But the adj. without *ζο* is often adverbial:—*ní ῥubairt sé na focail lom ḡíread̃ mar a t̃easuiž uač̃a* (CMD. 333)—He did not say the words *precisely* as they wanted. *τός boz é*—take things easily. Participles are preceded by *ζο*, only when the participial meaning is obscured or lost.—*Abair amac̃ e ζο h-oscailte* (CMṾ. 333)—Say it out openly.

2° From nouns:—*'na šur̃e*, up (out of bed); *cor ar bič̃*, at all; *ar an žcuma san*, thus; *ar éigin ḡáis*, with the greatest difficulty; *i n-aiže*, free, gratis; *de žeit*, suddenly; *in-aistear*, in vain; *ar soḡar*, at a trot; *nílim ar buile ná ar báinr̃e*, I'm not in the least bit furious.

3° Adverbial prefixes:—*An* (*ana*), very; *ζο h-ana-mait̃*, very well; *bič̃*, lasting; *bič̃-ḡuan*, everlasting; *uan*, lasting; *buain-t̃easmač̃*, persevering; *leač̃*, half; *ζο leač̃-amad̃ḡánt̃a*, half-foolishly.

4° From pronouns:—*Am̃lar̃o*, thus; *mar sin*, like that; *leis*, also; *freisin* (Conn.), also.

## B.—Local Adverbs:—

(a).—The Point	Rest at	Motion towards	Motion from
1. Here.	annso, i bpus	anall, i leič	anonn.
2. There	annsan } čall annsó }	anonn, sall	anall.
3. Above	čuas	suas	anuas.
4. Below	čios	síos	aníos.
5. North	čuaiř	ó čuaiř	ařtuaiř.
6. South	čeas	ó řeas	anřeas.
7. East	čoir	soir	anoir.
8. West	čiar	siař	aniar.
9. Inside	istič	isteasč	amac.
10. Outside	asmuič	amac	isteac.

(b) In addition to these we have:—lastuaiř, on the N. side; laisteas, on the S. side; lastoir, on the E. side; lastiar, on the W. side; lastuas, on the upper side; lastíos, on the lower side; lascall, on the other side; lasmuič, outside; laistič, inside. All these become **compound preps**, by adding ře:—lastuaiř ře'n čaislean, north of the castle; lascall ře'n lóřđan, on the other side of the Jordan; laistič ře řá bliain, within 2 years (temporal); lasmuič ře řeasna, with the exception of Seadna.

(c) From prep.+noun.—i řeasge, in safe keeping; i řeómas, in store for; ar tosač, in front; cum cinn, ahead; ó čéile, apart.

## C.—Temporal Adverbs:—

1° Noun-forms, with or without the article:—Anois, now; arís, again; inđiu, to-day; inřé, yesterday; anočt, to-night; aréir, last night; anuirř, last year.

2° The A. of time:—čamall, for a while; seáčtřain, for a week.

3° The G. of time:—In řia luain, etc., řia is a G. of time. K. often has G. of time with řača:—řača mařne, every morning; řača bliasna, every year. These are due to mí řača bliasna—a month of every year, etc.

4° D. or A. with prepositions:—**AR** **MAIDIN**, in the morning; **UM** **ĎRÁČNÓNA**, in the evening; **UMANOIRTEAR**, the day after to-morrow; **DE** **LÓ** **IS** **ĎORŎČE**, by day and night; **COISČIŎIS**(-ĎEAS) **IS** **LÁ** **INŎIU**, this day fortnight (in the past); **COISČIŎIS** **Ó** **INŎIU**, this day fortnight (in the future).

5° Prep, pronouns:—**RIAM**, ever (*lit.* before it); **ĎEANA**, already (*lit.* without it). **ĎORŎČE**, ever (<co **horŎČE**) used of the fut. or, in a general way, of all time.

**D.—Interrogative** Adverbs:—**CÁ?** where? whence? whither? **CANAĎ?** where? whither? **CAČŎIN**, **CA** **H-UAIR?** when? **CIONNUS**, **CONUS?** how? **AN** **FADÁ?** **CIA** **AN** **FADĎ?** how long? **CAD** **É** **MAR?** **ŽOIŎÉ** **MAR** (U.)? how? **CAD** **MAR** **ŽEALL** **AR** . . . . what about? **CAD** **UIME** (**ĎUIŽE**)? wherefore?

**E.—Causal** Adverbs:—**ĎÁ** **ĎRÍŽ** **SIN**, **UIME** **SIN**, therefore; **ĎUIŽE** **SIN**, for that purpose; **ĎÁ** **ĎÁRR** **SAN**, **ĎÁ** **ĎEASŽAIĎ** **SIN**, in consequence of that (the latter of bad or untoward results).

**F.—Negative** Adverbs:—**ŃÍ**, **ŃÍOR**; **ĎA**, **ĎAR** (U.); **NAĎ**, **NÁ**, **NÁR**.

**G.—Quantitative** Adverbs:—

1° The A. of Extent in Degree (see **175** A 4):—**ČÁ** **SÉ** **PAS** **BEAS** **FUAR**—it is somewhat cold; **ĎÍ** **SÉ** **AR** **MEISŽE** **ĬARRAČTIN**—he was just a trifle tipsy; **MAČTNUISŽEANN** **SÉ** **SIÚĎ** **AN** **ĬOMAĎ**—he thinks too much.

2° D. or A. with prep.—**AR** **ÉISIN**, with difficulty; **ŽO** **LEOR**, enough; **ŽO** **LÉR**, entirely.

3° Intensive adv. prefixes are, of course, quantitative: **SÁR-**, **RÓ-**, **RÍOŽ-** very.

**H.—Multiplicative** Adverbs:—**FÉ** **ĎÓ**, twice; **SEACĎ** **ĎFEARR**, ever so much better; **LEACĎ-ĎÉANTA**, half-done.

**I.—Asseverating** Adverbs:—**ŽO** **ĎEIMIN** (**ŽO** **ĎEARĎČA**), really; **ŽO** **ĎEIMIN** **7** **ŽO** **ĎEARĎČA** (**ĎAM** **BRIAČAR** **7** **ĎAM** **BASA**), really and truly; **ĎAR** **FIAĎ**, **ĎARFA** **ĬIACĎ**, **ĎAR** **FIAĎ** **NA** **FEŎLA**, **ĎAR** **FIAĎ** **7** **FĬOLAR**—all strong forms of “assuredly.”

J.—**Concessive** Adverbs:—’*na* ò*iaib* sin, for all that; *ar a shon san*, notwithstanding, etc., etc.

**158.—Adverbial Clauses:—**

1° Stereotyped:—*pé scéal é*, at all events; *pér domhan é*, anyway; *óá mb’é féin é*, even he.

2° *pé cuma ’n-a bfuair sé é*, however he got it; *pé áit ’na ngeobhad*, wherever I go; *óá luigead tu, ní leanó tu*, you may be small, but you’re no child.—Such clauses modify the main clause in the various ways set forth in **156**.

**159.— Notes on the Adverbs.**

1° The prep. *go* (with) forms adverbs only with *leor* and *léir*. Otherwise *go* (=to) is used—*go mór*=to a great extent.

2° The spellings *suas*, *šios*, *šoir*, *šiar* are erroneous.

3° *čeas* (instead of *òeas*) because of the frequent conjunction—*čuaib 7 čeas*.

4° In *ó čuaib*, *ó òeas*, *ó* is certainly not the prep. *ó*. It is either the prep, *fo*, or a form of the copula. *’Imčíg sé san áirb fa čuaib (>ó čuaib)*, he went towards the point that was North.

5° *istig*, *amuig*, show the D., *isteach*, *amach*, the A. of *teach*.

6° *lasmuig*, and all the forms in **157** B. (b), except *laistig*, derive their -s- from the latter=*la-istig* (*la*-being a weak form of *leach*, side).

7° *Arís*<O.I. a fhrith-éssi, *his back-track*. Now used of both numbers and genders, and all three persons.

8° *Inniu*, D. of *dia*, day, with art.

9° *Anocht*, D. of *noct* (L. *nox*) with art.—*the* night.

10° *Dia luain*, *Dia Máirt*, *Dia Céadaoin*’, *Diarðaoín*, *Dia h-Aoine*, *Dia Sačairn*, *Dia Domnaisg*, are adverbs—on Monday, etc. The noun forms are:—*An luain*, *An Máirt*, *An Céadaoin*, *An Dardaoín*, *An Aoine*, *An Sačarn*, *An Domnác*.

11° *leis*, also, is sometimes used, in negative sentences, where we might rather expect *ac cóm beas* (*ac an oiread*, U.). *Dubairt sé ná raib sé ann, 7 ní raib*,

1615—He said he wasn't there, and neither was he. South of Ireland English employs "too" in the same way:—A.—"You don't look well." B.—"I'm not, too." The "raison d'être" of the usage is the fact that such negative sentences are a *re-assertion* of the preceding negative statement.

## CHAPTER VII.

### CONJUNCTIONS.

**160.**—The **Conjunction** is the part of speech which is used to connect phrases, clauses, sentences, and co-ordinate words:—**Phrases:**—*bí sé ar meisge, 7 ar dearg-buile*—he was drunk *and* raging mad. **Clauses:**—*bí sé ar buile nuair adubairt sé an cainnt sin*—he was mad *when* he said that. **Sentences:**—*bí a d'á cois briste. Dá b'ríg sin, ní féadfaid sé siubal*—his two legs were broken, *so* he couldn't walk. **Words:**—*čánadar go léir, ior ós 7 aosta*—They all came, young and old.

Conjunctions are either **co-ordinating**, or **subordinating**. The former connect clauses (phrases, words) of **equal grammatical rank**. The latter connect **dependent** clauses with **the main** clause.

**Co-ordinating** Conjunctions:—These are either:—(a) **Cumulative (Copulative)**, which *add* one statement to another. (b) **Adversative**:—which *set one statement against another*. (c).—**Illative (Inferential)**—which *point to a conclusion arrived at*.

(a) **Copulative** Conjunctions:—

1° Agus, and (as, is, 's. Often 7,—a contraction of L.—et).—*bí an saibhir 's an daibhir i ngrá leis (eožan cóir)*—Rich and poor were in love with him!

2° Ior . . . . agus—both . . . . and.—*bí ceannsa le các, ior čaraid 7 eascaraid*—Be gentle with all, both friend and enemy.

(b) **Adversative** Conjunctions:—

1° nó, else (or else).—*ní fuláir nó tá tuirse air*—he must be (a strong man) or else he's tired.

2° **Acc.**, but.—*ní meisge fé nðear é, ac ðearg-ðíomaoimneas*—Not intoxication caused it, but downright idleness.

(c) **Illative Conjunctions**:—*ðá ðríğ sin*, therefore; *mar sin*, so; *má's eadð*, so.

**161.—Subordinating Conjunctions:—**

1° **Modal**—*pé cuma n'a ðfuair sé í*—however he got it.

2° **Local**—*mar a raib an sağart*—where the priest was.

3° **Temporal**.—*sul a ðtiocfaid an ðomnad*—before Sunday comes.

4° **Causal**.—*nílir-se cionntad ann, ó nad tu a ðein é*—you're not responsible, as you didn't do it.

5° **Final**.—(denoting purpose).—*sul a mbeinn ðérðeandac.* (S.)—lest I should be late.

6° **Consecutive** (denoting result).—*ta oiread san ceana ağam air ġur ðóic liom ġo n-íosad é* (S.)—I'm so fond of him that I think I'll eat him.

7° **Quantitative**—*is fearr an maid atá ná an ða maid do bí*—Present goods are twice as good as past ones.

8° **Concessive**:—*bíod ġo raib 'fios ağam*—although I knew.

9° **Conditional**:—The clause containing the condition, is called the **Protasis**, that containing the conclusion, the **Apodosis**. *má*, if.—Implies that the condition is, was, will, or would be verified, or else leaves it an open question, implying neither non-fulfilment, nor serious doubt. It can be used:—

With **pres. Indic.**—*má ta sé ann, labrad sé*—if he's here, let him speak; *má fágann tusa mé, is cuma mé nó na ðail (lúc. 48)*—if you leave me, I'm no better than the blind.

With the **past Indic.**—*má táinig don ðroc-scéal, níor airigeas-sa é*—if bad news came, I didn't hear it.

With the **Fut.**—*má ðeird sé annso i mbáiread*—if he is here to-morrow.

With the **Impft.**—*má bíod sé ann*—if he was there (habitually).

With the **Condit.**—*má ðeard sé oireamnad duit*—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would!)—*ðá*, if:—

- The neg. of *ḡá* is either *muna* (with Past Subj.) or *ḡá mba ná* (followed by the Condit.):—1° *ḡá mba ná beaḡ ḡon cúis eile ḡici* (CMḡ. 25)—If she had had no other reason. 2° *ḡá mba ná beaḡ ḡia ḡḡ caḡrú linn ḡe síor*—If God were not always helping us. But note the difference between “*ḡá mba ná*” and “*muna*.” E.g., in ex. 1° it is implied that *she had other reasons*. i.e.—the negative supposition “*ḡá beaḡ ḡon cúis eile ḡici*” is *unreal*. “*Muna mbeaḡ*” would leave it an open question. So ex. 2° implying,



as it does, the *unreality* of the supposition “*νά βεαὸ ὅια ἀς καὶ ῥύ λινν δε ῥόρ*,” virtually asserts the truth:—*βίονν ὅια ἀς καὶ ῥύ λινν δε ῥόρ*.

*Ἀτ ζο*, provided that, if only (O.I. *acht ro*, with Subj.)—*ἀτ νά cuirfí fearz uirčı* (S.), provided that she were not “riled.” Distinguish from:—(a) *ἀτ ζο*=when, until.—*Ἀτ ζο ὀτάινις να η-Ἀλλμύραις*—until the foreigners came. (b) *ἀτ ζο*, except that—*ἀτ ζο ὀτάινις sé siúð isteac*—except that that fellow came in.

10° **Demonstrative Conjunctions**:—*ζο*, that, *lit.* until that, so that; with *ρο>zur*. This is the ordinary particle for *affirmative* indirect speech.—*Ἐῖρ sé ζο mberò sé annso ι mβáireac*—he says that he will be here to-morrow. It also introduces a noun-clause to act as subj. or pred. to “is,” or as appositional subject or object after other verbs:—As **subj.**—*ἅ’féir ζο ὀτιοc-φαὸ sé inııı*—Maybe he’d come to-day. As **pred.**—*’Sé eagla bí orm ζο ὀτιοcφαὸ*—My fear was that he would come. As **object.**—*Ἐῖνὸ é fógairt ζο ζcuirfar an cime cum báis*—Have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death.

The corresponding neg. conjunctions are *νά*, *νατ*, *νάρ*:—(a) *Ἐῖρ sé νά τιοcφαὸ sé α τιλλε*—He says he won’t come any more, (b) *Is ὀίc liomsa νατ σαζαρ ι η-Ἀον ḡor é*—I think he’s not a priest at all. (c) *Ἐυḡart leis νάρ mait liom vıl ann*—I told him I shouldn’t like to go.

11° **Interrogative Conjunctions**:—

(a) *Νί fearar an ὀτιοcφαὸ se inııı*—I wonder will he come to-day. Here *an* not only *modifies* the clause—*τιοcφαὸ sé*, but also *connects* the latter with *νί fearar*, thus uniting the functions of **adv.** and **conj.** So with the other *interrog.* adverbs (157 D):—

(b) *Is deacair α ráð cačoin α τιοcφαὸ sé*—It is hard to say when he’ll come.

(c) *Νί fíos ὀ’aoinne conus α veineann sé é*—No one knows how he does it.

(d) *Νί čuizim ι η-Ἀον ḡor cað čuize zur vein sé é*—I cannot understand why he did it.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### PREPOSITIONS.

**162.**—The **Preposition** is the part of speech that serves, with a noun, pronoun, or noun-equivalent to make up a qualifying phrase, either substantival, adjectival or adverbial (Syntax 303). Preps, are either simple or compound. A.—**Simple Prepositions:**—

1° Governing D.—*do*, to, for; *de*, from, off, of, etc.; *ó*, from; *a*, *as*, out of; *az*, at, etc. (with prons. sometimes *partitive*—*cuib azaínn*, some of us); *ós*, above; *so*, with (nearly obsolete); *roim*, before (O.I. *re*).

2° Governing the A. only (orig.):—*le*, with, etc.; *tre*, through; *so*, to; *um*, about, etc.; *oir*, between (with D. in pl., *oir fearaib 7 mnáib*—both men and women); *amal*, as (now only with 3 sg. neut. suffixed pron.—*amlair*, like this); *zan*, without; *seac*, past; *tar*, over, beyond (and, in asseverations, *dar*).

3° Governing (orig.) D. or A.—*in*,—in (*rest*, D), into (*motion* A); *ar*, for, because of (now often “on”); *fe* (*fó*, *fá*, *faoi*), under, towards, etc.; *for*, on (now only used in compounds, like *formad*, *forlámas*, etc.).

In addition to the above, other simple preps, are found only in compounds (nouns, verbs, adjectives):—

(a) *ad*, to, L. *ad*.—*ata* (L. *ad-stat*), *aram*, to count < *ad ríom*.

(b) O.I. *cen* (= *zan*) in *ceann-tar*, the district *on this side* (orig.).

(c) *eatar*, outside of—*eatrann*, *eatrannaic*, foreigner.

(d) *fiad*, in presence of—*fiadnaise*—evidence.

(e) *fric*, *fri*, against—*freazra* (< *frith-gaire*), *fric-bualad*, repercussion.

(f) *iar*, after—*fiadfruis*, enquire.

(g) *ís*, under, and *ós* above—*íseal*, low, *uasal*, high, *íos*, *tuas*, etc. (*ós* also forms compd. preps.).

(h) RO (L. pro) with adjectives=too,—RO-ṁAIC̃.

(i) CO, COM=with,—CUIB̃REAC̃, bond, etc., CONGNAM̃, help (<GNÍOM̃), etc.

Many *noun*-forms are used as preps, (with G.):—

(a) CUM, TO<to+céim>TOIC̃IM, DOCHUM, CUM.

(b) DÁLĊA, concerning—DÁLĊA AN SCÉIL, “by the way.”

(c) TOISC, because of (earlier DE ĊOISC)—TOISC A H-INĠINE, because of her daughter.

(d) TÍMĊEALL, around, about, TÍMĊEALL NA H-ÁITE—around the place.

(e) FAN, along, during—FAN AN FÁLLA, along the wall; FAN NA H-AIMSIRE, all the time (<AR FEAD̃ NA).

(f) COIS—beside—COIS NA TEINE, COIS NA FAIRRĠE—beside the fire, by the sea.

(g) TREASNA, across—TREASNA NA H-ABĀNN—across the river.

**B.—Compound Prepositions:**—I.—Simple prep.+noun (with G.). II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep, (with D. A. or G. according to circumstances).

I.—Simple prep.+noun:—

(a) IN-AICE, near—IN-AICE NA TEINE, near the fire. So—IN-AĠAID̃, against; I ĠCIONN, after; I ĠCAIC̃EAM̃, during; I ĠCÚRSAÍ, concerning; I H-IONAID̃, instead of, and many others.

(b) AR AĠAID̃, in front of—AR AĠAID̃ AN DORAIS ISTEAĊ—opposite the door (viewed from the *outside*). So—AR ĊÚL—behind; AR SON, for the sake of; AR FEAD̃—for the space of (*time*); AR FUIB̃, AR FUAIB̃, throughout (*space*), and many others.

(c) D’IONNSUIĊE, towards, against—D’IONNSUIĊE NA TPAOI—against Troy; DO RÉIR, according to—DÁ RÉIR SIN—according to that.

(d) DE BÁRR—as a result of—DÁ BÁRR SAN—as a result of that; D’Á BÍĊINN SIN—because of that; D’Á ÉIS SIN—after that.

(e) AS UĊT—for the sake of; AS UĊT DO ĊEANNSDĊTA—for the sake of your mildness.

(f) FÉ D̃ÉIM, towards, for; FÉ B̃UN—under, less than.

(g) le h- $\Delta$ ḡaṛò, for, with a view to—le h- $\Delta$ . an tSamraṛaṛò—in preparation for Summer; le h- $\Delta$ is, le cois—beside; le h-e $\Delta$ ḡla na h-e $\Delta$ ḡla—“to make assurance doubly sure.”

(h) ós cionn, over—ós  $\Delta$  cionn, over it, more; ós mo cóm $\Delta$ in  $\Delta$ ma $\check{c}$ —in front of me; ós coinne  $\Delta$  n-é $\Delta$ ṁ $\Delta$ n—before their faces.

(i) tRéis (<tar éis), after—tRéis an tSaoḡaṛl—after all;  $\check{c}$ ar  $\check{c}$ eann ṁo sláinte—for your health's sake.

## II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep:—

(a) I n- $\Delta$ ice le, near—suṛò annso I n- $\Delta$ ice liom—sit here near me; I ḡcomórtas le, I ḡcóim $\check{m}$ eas le—compared with; I nḡeall le—in pledge for.

(b) I ḃfonn  $\check{c}$ um—in humour for (with G.); I ḃfeir $\check{c}$   $\check{c}$ um—angry with.

(c) mar ḡeall  $\Delta$ r—because of; mar ḃárr  $\Delta$ r—to cap.

(d) I nḡar ṁo—near; I nḡiorra $\check{c}$ t ṁo—near.

(e) laistiar ṁe, behind; laistoir ṁe—East of.

(f) I ḃf $\Delta$ ó ó—far from.

## CHAPTER IX.

### INTERJECTIONS.

**163.**—The **Interjection** is the part of speech used to express some sudden emotion, or to give some direction:

(a) **Amen**, so be it! **Αἰτιλίύ**, Phew! **Αἰὲ μῦσε**, Well, well! **Ἀμ βάσα, ἰ μβαῖστε**—Indeed! **Ὅαρ φιαὸ, ὅαρφα λιαῖ**, Egad! (Minced forms of “By God!”). **Ἀσὺόιν**, Indeed! (<is ὀόίῖ+init. n of following word), **μῦσε**, Well! (from **μῦρε**). **Ῥέαῖ**, Lo! Look here! (even when addressing more than one). **Μο ὄρόν, μο λέαν, μο λέαν ζέαρ, μο ἔρεαῖ 7 μο ἔας, φοίρίορ**, Alas! **Ἐῖστ**, Hush! **Ὑῖ, ὑόν, ὑόν αἰὲ, μο ἔρυαῖ**, Alas! **Μο ἔρυαῖ ἔραίῖτε, ἂ μῦρε ἰς ἔρυαῖ**, Alas and alack! **Ἀρ ἀῖαὸ ὑῖ, Ὀν! ἰστεαῖ λεατ**, In you go!

(b) Sometimes a noun with the article is used, out of construction, with the force of an interjection:—**ἰς ἀμλαιοῖ ἂ βί σέ . . . ζά ἔεπαὸ ζο μαίρφεαὸ σέ ζο ὄεο, ἀν τ-ἀμαὺάν!** (Luc. 45)—The fact was, he imagined he'd live for ever, the fool!

(c) Many *clauses* given in Grammars as Interjections can hardly be regarded as such. *E.g.*—**ζο ὀτέῖῖρὸ τὺ σλάν ἂ ὄαῖτε**—Safe home; **σλάν ὄεο ἀῖατ**—Good-bye; **Ἐῖστ ὄο ὄέαῖ**—Silence! **ζο μβεαννῖῖρὸ ὄια ὄυῖτ**—God save you, Good morning, etc. **ζο μβuanνῖῖρὸ ὄια ἔu**—May God give you long life; thank you!

## PART III

### CHAPTER I.

#### SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

**164.**—(a) The art. always precedes its noun, and *usually* agrees with it in gender and number; *always* in case:—**an** τ-uḅall—the apple (M. sg. N. or A. or absolute); **an** ḅean—the woman (F. sg. N.A. or abs.); **na** h-uḅla (M. pl. N.A. or abs.); **na** mná—the women (F. pl. N.A. or abs.).

(b) The M. sg. **an** τ- is used in N.A. before **don**, **don-mḁḁ**, **oḁtḁḁ**, even if the noun is F.—**An** τ-**don** áit **amḁin** sa ḁomḁn (CMḁ. 72)—the one spot in the world; **An** τ-**don** ḅean **amḁin**—the only woman; **an** τ-oḁtḁḁ ḅliain—the 8th year. In G. **an** (M.) and **na** h- (F.) are used:—**maḁean an oḁtḁḁ lae** (CMḁ. 302)—the morning of the 8th day; **mac na h-donmḁḁ mná ḁéaḁ**—the 11th woman's son.

(c) The sg. art. is used with pl. noun, if the latter is felt as a unity:—**taḁarḁ don lá** is **maḁ** liḁ ḁe'n sé lá **san** (CMḁ. 330)—Come any day of the six that you like; **an naoi ḁcinn ḁéaḁ 7 ceḁre fícrḁ** (CMḁ. 340)—The ninety-nine.

(d) When a noun, not followed by a demonstrative adj., governs a definite noun in the G., the whole expression is usually definite, but the art. is not used with the 1st noun:—**ḁá mb'é leaḁ mo ríḁeaḁta é** (ḁ.n. 624)—Were it even the half of my Kingdom. **bóḁar na mias**—the Road of the Dishes. But when this is *nominal*, not *real*, it is indefinite. **ḁeir sé ḁur bóḁar na mias a tuḁtar air**—He says it is called “The Road of the

Dishes.” But—is *é bóchar na mias do gabhadar an lá san*—It was “the Road of the Dishes” they took that day.

(e) If a demonstrative follows the 1st noun, the art. is used:—*An mac so mo òeirbhséar* (TBC. 129)—This sister’s son of mine; *ameasg na gcnoc san sàmaríada* (CMO. 296)—amid those hills of S.

(f) N.B.—*Ingean tairòs*—T.’s daughter (implies that he has only one); *ingeann do t*—a daughter of T. (he having at least one other).

(g) Even when the meaning is *real*, the 1st noun may be indefinite. Thus Canon O’Leary wrote—*Tha mba leat mo rìgeadta é* (C.S.)—were it *a* half of my Kingdom (Cf. d. where it is definite). If the *particular half* were specified, we should say—*an leat so dem’ rìgeadta*. So *taobh an bóchair*, may refer to either side. But—*do òruib sé cum an taobh eile de’n bóchar* (CMO. 317)—He moved to the other side of the road.

(h) When both nouns are indefinite, the art. is not used:—*Ceann capall*—a horse’s (not a cow’s, or dog’s) head; *ceann cat*—a cat’s head; *ceann circe*—a hen’s head; *clòc reata*—a rolling stone.

(i) The 1st noun may be definite, the 2nd indefinite:—*An ceann capall sin*—that *horse’s head*: But—*ceann an capall sin*—*that horse’s head*. In the first ex. *capall* has the force of an adj. Is *cuma nó an clòc reata é*—He’s as bad as a rolling stone.

(j) The exx. in (h) and (i) show the G-. of *possession* or *quality*. It may also denote the *material*, or *contents* of what is denoted by the 1st noun; or it may express a *whole* of which the governing noun denotes a *part*. (The **Partitive G.**). Thus:—1° Both nouns **indefinite**:—**Material**:—*áran mine coirce*—oatmeal bread. **Contents**: *gloine fíona*—a glass of wine. **Partitive**:—*braon uisge*—a drop of water. 2° 1st n. definite, 2nd indefinite:—**Material**:—*an t-áran mine coirce seo*—this oatmeal bread. **Contents**:—*an gloine fíona*—the glass of wine. **Partitive**:—*an braon uisge*—the drop of water.

(k) Both nouns definite, but *never in partitive meaning*: **Material**:—*mealbóg na mine*—the meal-bag. **Contents**:—

gloine an fíona—the wine-glass (though it be empty).

**Partitive:**—Ordinarily partitive *de* (with D.) is substituted for G.—*mo cion de'n oigreachta* (C.M.V. 325)—my share of the inheritance; *cuid de sna h-uaisliú*—some of the nobles: *cuid na n-uasal*=the nobles' property (where the G. is **possessive**, not **partitive**).

(1) *leac mo rígeachta* seems to be against this rule. But, when the 1st noun is made clearly definite, and *the particular half is specified*, the G. construction is dropped, and partitive *de* (with D.) substituted:—*An leac thuaidh dem' rígeacht*—the northern half of my Kingdom. In 164 (d) *the half* is contrasted, not with *the other half*, but with *the whole*.

(m) *tosach, deireadh, lár, bruach, cois*, and such words, may also be followed by a definite G., though the meaning seems to be partitive:—*tosach an earraidh*—the beginning of Spring. *deireadh an tsamraidh*—the end of Summer. *lár an fómhair*—the middle of Autumn. *bruach na h-abhann*—the river's edge. *cois na fairrge*—the sea-side.

(n) The following exx. from U.I. violate the rule laid down in (d) above:—

1° *larraim-sa, mar a'cuinge ort, cár co'dail tusa aréir, a shúr,*  
*In-Éirinn nó i n-talamh na bflaiceas m'ic Dé na n-óul* (C.C.U. 100)—

I ask, and beg you answer, where slept you, sister, yesternight,

In I., or in the land of the Kingdom of the Son of God of the elements.

2° *'Sí an t-Samail a' réalta eolais críocha fóbla mur dtíre* (C.C.U. 130)—

Sawell (a mountain) is the guiding-star of the territory of F., your land.

3° *'S dá gcreidfidhe mo sgéal ba liom féin an Condae Muig Eo* (C.C.U. 83)—

And if my tale were credited, the Co. of M. were mine.

These exx. may be looked upon as archaic.

(o) *An tsaothlan cáilce an taoibh slím* (Haic. 9)—The stately maiden of the slender body (*This is early modern*).



(p) When the def. G. is virtually an adj., the 1st noun may have the article:—**CAO É AN UAIR A' CLUIZ É?**—What time is it? **AN CORÓINN MUIRE**—the Rosary.

(q) The art. is *usually omitted*:—1° In Type II. Ident. vb. is:—**SÉ CÚIS NÁ H-ÉISTEANN SIÖSE LE BRIATRAIB DÓE**—This is *the* reason why ye listen not to God's words. 2° In Type I. with predicates like the following:—**SÉ RUO É IS ÉASAMLAIGE . . . . DÁR AIRIGEAS FÓS**—It's the strangest thing I've ever heard. 3° Also in Type VII.—**SIN É SCÉAL 'S FÉARR A TÁINIS CÚGAINN FÓS** (TBC. 122-3)—That's the best news we've had yet. 4° After proper names, before name of a trade, profession, occupation; and sometimes before a proper name when followed by a demonstrative:—**AINDRIAS MAC CRAIC, FILE**—The poet, A. McC. **TAÖZ ZADÁ**—T. the smith. **IS IONGANTAC AN BEAN MÉIB SEO**—This M. is a wonderful woman.

**165.**—The def. article in I. where E. either has none at all, or else the indef. art:—

1° Before noun and demonstrative:—**AN FEAR SO, AN BEAN SAN, NA NEIÖE ÚO** (But see last ex. above).

2° In interrog. sentences like—**CAO É AN RUO É SIN?**—What is that? But *not* with **CIA'CU**, when **CIA** is an adj.—**CIA'CU CEANN AB' FÉARR LEAT**—Which one would you prefer? So the art. is absent in—**CÉ MÉIO**, how much? **CA H-ÁIT**, where, whither, whence? **CA H-UAIR**, when? and wherever the interrog. forms a compound with the noun, e.g., **CONUS, CANAO**.

3° Before **uile**, every, when not preceded by **zac**—**AN UILE CACAIR**—every city (**AN CACAIR UILE**=the whole city).

4° In Type III, Classification sentences, where E. has the indef. art.—**IS DEAS AN BUACAILL TU**—You're a nice boy!

5° Before titles (exc. in V. of course)—**AN T-ACAIR PEADAR Ó LAOĞAIRE**—Fr. P. O'L.

6° In certain expressions of time:—**INÓE**, yesterday; **NUAIR**, when; **ANOIS**, now; **I MBLIAÖNA**, this year; **ANUIRIÖ**, last year; **AN TRÁC, AN TAN**=when. In **IOIU**, **I MBÁIREAC, UMANOIRTEAR**—to-day, to-morrow, the day after to-morrow, E. has the art. as well.

7° In the names of the days of the week, when *nouns*, and not followed by a def. G.—*an luán*, Monday. But *ḏia luain*, on M.

8° In—*an t-earrac*, *an samrad*, *an fómhar*, *an ſeimreab*—Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter. Except when used as adjectives (in G.)—*lá samraid*, *oirce ſeimriob*—a summer day, a winter night.

9° In—*An eanair*, *an feabra*, *an mártá*, *an t-aibreán*, *an bealtaine*, *an meiteam*, *an t-lúl*, *mí na samna*, *mí na noblas*—Jan., Feb., March, Apr., May, June, July, Nov., Dec. But not when they are used adjectivally—*lá mártá*, a March day (meaning is *indefinite*), *Oirce samna*—Halloweve.

10° In distributive phrases like:—*geobaid sib pinginn an duine*—You shall receive each a penny; *coróinn an ceann*—5s. apiece.

11° In nouns used as *abstracts*, or in a *general* sense: *An fóirne*, patience; *ainm an airgid*, a reputation for riches; *an duine*, man (in general).

12° In names of virtues and vices, in a general sense:—*an drúis*, unchastity; *an t-óladán*, intemperance (in drink).

13° With *concrete* words, used to denote a class:—*bí an saibhir 's an daibhir i ngráob leis*—Rich and poor were in love with him.

14° With certain surnames, when the Christian name is absent:—*an brianac*, Mr. O'Brien; *an breacnac*, Mr. Walsh.

15° With names of certain countries, cities, rivers, etc.—*An Róim*, Rome; *an eilbéis*, Switzerland; *an aifric*, Africa; *an ffrainc*, France; *an spáinn*, Spain; *an tsorca*, Sweden; *an noruaib*, Norway; *éire*, Ireland; G. usually *na h-éireann*, but also *éireann*:—*fir éireann*, the men of I. So, with *Alba*; *an neiróin*, Kenmare; *na ſleanntaí*, Glenties; *an ſuaſán*, Gougane Barra; *an ſaillim*, Galway; *an donac* (D), Nenagh; *an feoir*, the river Nore, etc., etc.

16° With the names of things *unique* (sometimes):—*an t-aifreann naomta*, Holy Mass; but *aifreann ḏé*, in accordance with 164 (d); *na flaitis*, Heaven: but *flaitis ḏé*; *an carſas*, *an cáisc*, *an cínſcís*, *an inib*,

AN NOVLAIȚ—Lent, Easter, Pentecost, Shrovetide, Xmas. But often without art.—**Λά** NOVLAIȚ, Xmas Day, **ORŏce** NOVLAIȚ, Xmas Eve; **ORŏce** **Λae** NOVLAIȚ, Xmas Night, etc., etc.

17° Instead of a G. pers. pron., a D. pron. is sometimes used, and the article is used with the noun:—**CONUS** **τά** **AN** **τςΛάιντε** **ΔΖΑτ**? How is your health? **Ὁο** **ὕRIS** **ΔR** **AN** **ὕφοιῶne** **ΔΖAM**—My patience became exhausted; **Ὁο** **ḡEARR** **σί** **AN** **CROIḡE** **ΔCU** (**CMḡ**. 299)—it lacerated their hearts.

18° In expressing large numbers or quantities:—**NA** **céAḡčA**, hundreds; **NA** **τÁιντε**, crowds; **NA** **mílčE**, thousands; **NA** **CIANčA**, ages; **AN** **IOMAḡ**, **AN** **IOMARCA**, too much, too many.

19° With names of languages (sometimes):—**AN** **ḡAEḡILȚ**, **AN** **ḡEARIA**, **AN** **LAIOIN**, **AN** **ḡREIȚIS**—I., E., L., Gk.

**166.**—Vivid use of art.—To express certain emotions such as surprise, joy, pathos, fright, etc.:—1° **CAḡ** **Ὁο** **číFINN** **OS** **MO** **čÓMAIR** **AMAC** **Δč** **AN** **ḡALLÁN**! —There I saw in front of me—a pillar-stone! (fear, excitement). 2° **τά** **AN** **λά** **ΔΖAINN**! —We are victors! (joy). 3° **τάḡO** **NA** **τÁιντε** **ΔΖ** **ḡAḡÁIL** **ḡÁIS** **ḡE'n** **OCRAS**—Thousands are dying of hunger (pathos).

Here we may place the exclamatory or interjectional use of art. and noun; and a certain use of the art. before ordinal numerals:—1° **AN** **τ-AMADḡÁN**! **7** **Δ** **čEAPḡḡ** **ḡO** **NOÉANḡAINN** **Δ** **leičéḡO**! —Fool that he was, to think I should do such a thing! 2° **ḡEIR** **AN** **TRÍOMḡḡ** **ḡUINE** **ḡURḡ** **AMḡLAḡḡ** **Δ** **ḡUARAS** **AIḡḡEAD** **ΔΖ** **ḡUL** **AMḡḡḡA**—A third fellow suggests that I found lost money!

## CHAPTER II.

### SYNTAX OF THE NOUN.

**167.**—The n. is that part of speech whereby any object or property existing in, or presented to, the mind is expressed by itself alone:—*ῥεαρ*, *βαν*, *meisce*, *μαcάν-τὰcτ*—man, woman, intoxication, honesty.

Use of the cases:—**The Nominative:**—The cases are the forms which nouns assume to express their relations to other words in the sentence. The N. denotes:—

(a) The **Subject**:—*ᾯο βυαῖλ Σεάν* *έ*—S. struck him; *ᾯο βεινεαᾯο βρúscar βε*—it was crumbled (Passive).

(b) The **Predicate**:—*is σαζαρτ* *έ* *sin*—that is a priest; *is í cέαᾯο cειστ ᾯο cuireaᾯο αῖρ*, *νά cέρ' ᾯίοᾯ έ*—the first question put to him was who was he. (Here the pred. n. is *complex*—the clause—*cέρ' ᾯίοᾯ έ*).

(c) The **Projected N.**—Used at the beginning, when the speaker has not quite formed the sentence in his mind; or when, for rhetorical or other reason, it is deliberately put first. E.g., *Dominus in caelo sedes ejus* (Ps. x. 5)—The Lord's throne is in heaven. When thus projected, the N. *form* is often *absolute*.

(d) The **Virtual N.**

**168.**—The **Projected N.**—1° *Αη τέ α cιoσῤαιᾯο cύḡamsa ní βειᾯο ocras αῖρ* (Cmᾯ. 261)—He who comes to Me shall not hunger (*Αη τέ*, absolute). 2° *Αη τέ α ᾯ' ιcεανν mise βειᾯο sé beo ᾯem' βάρρ-σα* (Cmᾯ). 262)—He that eateth Me shall live by Me (*Αη τέ*, N.). 3° *Αη τέ ná βειᾯο cιall αῖγε, βειᾯο cuῖnne αῖγε* (Aes.)—He who will not have “reason” shall have “reason to remember” (*Αη τέ*, absolute). 4° *Αη ruᾯο naç ᾯῤuil ιcτε nó zoῖᾯce, ḡeoᾯcαr* *έ*—What is not eaten or stolen will be found (UP.—*Αη ruᾯο*, N., if *ḡeoᾯcαr* is taken as Pass.).

**169.**—The **Virtual N.**—1° *ᾯί eαḡla αῖρ ᾯul léi* (Cmᾯ. 253)—He was afraid to go with her. *ᾯul* is here **virtual**

N., i.e., it is N. because of two other constructions, conveying the same meaning, in which *oul*, is **actually** N.:—(a) *b'eaḡal leis oul léi*. (b) *Čuir sé eaḡla air oul léi*. This is always the case where *effect* and *cause* are simply juxtaposed, without one saying in so many words, that the one *is* the cause of the other. 2° *bí ionḡna orča a ráð nár f'eaḡadur é f'agáil lastoir* (CM<sup>o</sup>. 259)—They were surprised to think they could not find Him East. (*ráð*, virtual N.). 3° *bí leisge orm teact lem' ḡnó beaḡ f'éin aḡ cur isteac ort* (TBC. 134)—I was loth to come and disturb you with my own little worry. (*teact*, virtual N.).

### 170.—Apposition:—

A.—**Grammatical**:—1° *b'sin é ačair čomáis Uí nuallám*—That was T. O'N.'s father. 2° *a šeáin Uí šeagħa*—S. O'Shea (V.). 3° Common in O.I. after proleptic *a*:—a masse in chuirp—the beauty of the body. 4° *fá clann do šairb inḡin čuinn an triúr* (FF. Bk. 1, 272)—The three were children of S. Conn's daughter. In these exx. *čomáis Uí*; *šeáin Uí*; a . . . . in chuirp; *šairb inḡin*, are in **grammatical** apposition.

B.—**Logical** (only):—1° *bí a f'ios aḡam é* (lúc. 41)—I knew it well. 2° *íomáig pól apstai* (E.S. 26)—The image of the Apostle Paul. 3° When a noun preceded by a title is used, the title only is inflected:—(a) *a ačair peadur*—Fr. P. (Voc). *peadur* is **absolute**. (b) *leabair an ačar peadur ó laogaire*—Fr. P. O'Leary's books. [*ačar*, G.; *peadur*, abs., and *ó* (in grammat. appos.) abs. also]. (c) So, when the title *follows* the name, the *title* is not inflected:—*aḡus ainm bictória bainríogain šasana faoi* (Smb. 130)—With V. the Q. of E's name under it. (*bainríogain* abs.).

C.—**Apposition to a sentence**:—1° *bí áčas air, níð nárð ionḡna*—Naturally, he was glad. Here “*níð nárð ionḡna*” is in appos. to “*bí áčas air*,” and *níð* is best explained as **virtual** N. 2° *ruð is measa ná san f'éin, is cončabrčac an ara iad* (TBC. 19)—Worse still, they're a dangerous lot! *ruð*, **virtual** N.

D.—**Partitive** Apposition:—A *part* is placed loosely in apposition to *the whole*:—1° *deinrð siad, an čurð* is

mó acu, ar an gcuma san é—They do it like that—the most of them. The apposition is **corrective**, toning down a too general statement. Cuir, **virtual** N. 2° Do daoraò an cuir eile, gac re duine acu, cum báis—The others were condemned to death—every second man of them.

E.—**Prepositional** Apposition:—1° Cía'cu de'n dá ceann is fearr leat?—Which of the two do you prefer? Acu is proleptic, de'n dá ceann being its term, and this is **prepositional** apposition. Cía de'n dá ceann would suffice **logically**, but cíá'cu . . . is usual. 2° Cía'cu aghainn-ne, cíá'cu aghaib-se, and even cíá'cu acu san—Which of us, you, them?

**171.—Absolute Construction:**—The N. **forms** of nouns and pronouns are often *not* N. in *function*. This occurs when, logically, the meaning involved is that of G. D. A. or V., and usage allows none of them:—

1° In the “Bracketed Construction” (179) where the first noun (or pronoun) resists inflection, **the phrase being taken as a unit**; or, if the phrase is a noun-adj. one, the adj. at any rate resists inflection:—(a) Toisc (an saibbreas go léir a beic aige) (G. 4)—Because he was so wealthy; an saibbreas, abs. the **phrase** G.

(b) Ar fearò (rainnt beas aimsire) (bn. 710)—For some little time.—rainnt beas, abs.—the phrase (a **complex** n.) G. (c) 7 ceas (taras as) (S. 20)—with permission to withdraw the money.—taras, abs.—the phrase, G. (d) 1 scaiteam (oireas 7 don lá amáin) (Im. 118)—For even a single day. oireas, abs.—phrase, G. (e) Duairt sé le (gac bean díob) (br. 21)—He told each of the women. (f) Tá tosac aghat ortá go léir ac ar (sile beas) (S. 18)—You're before them all, except little S. (g) tímpal (an trímáò h-uair), (CS. 55)—About the third hour. (h) a (solas an tsolais síoruí) (Im. 271)—Thou light of everlasting light.

2° Cum (to) and tréis (after) do not inflect a vb. n. preceded by proleptic a:—(a) tréis a ráò go dtiocfá (TBC. 188)—having said that you would come, (b) tánaas annso cum a iarraib ar óia . . . (S. 42)—I came here to ask God. . . . (c) In the same circumstances ad' iarraib

leaves the vb. n. uninflected:—**נָא בִּי אַד' יִאֲרֵאִיךָ אַ חֹרֶן** 'na luige orm zur tu an saḡart—Don't try to convince me that you are the priest.

3° The term of proleptic **א**, **וֵע**, **אִי**, *etc.*, is abs., except in the case of prep, appos., and the cases mentioned in **216**:—(a) **טָא אַ פֿילס אַזאַם** **é**.—**é** abs. (b) **פֿאַס פֿומסאַ אַ זײַטִיגט צאָר** **é** **אַן סאַזאַס אַרִיסטֹטֶלֶס** (לִיך. 36)—Leave it to me to judge what sort A. was. (c) **נִי פֿעאַררֵע** **זו** **é**—You're nothing the better of it.—**é** abs. (d) **צִיא'צו אַן צאַצאָיר נֹ אַן מִין נֹ אַן ט-וֹבֵאלל בַּא וֵעאַס?** (**S.** 6)—Was it the chair, or the meal, or the apple that was nice? **צאַצאָיר**, **מִין**, **וֹבֵאלל**, abs.

4° Wherever there is **logical** without grammatical apposition:—See **170**, B.—There is a word used absolutely in every one of the exx. given there. Thus:—In 1° **é**; in 2° **אַפּסטאַל**; in 3° **פֿעאַררֵע**, *etc.*

5° The Projected N. forms given in **168** are often not N. syntactically, and must then be taken as abs.—This is the case in exx. 1° and 3°.

6° After “**is פֿיִו**”=**is worth**:—**וֹיר** **is פֿיִו אַן פֿעאַר וִיבֵר** **é** **צֹזִו** (**צמ״ו**. 246)—For the labourer is worthy of his food.—**é**, abs.

7° **אַן טֵע** is abs. in sentences like the following:—**בַּא מֹר אַן ט-וֹאַצֵבֵאָס** **é**, **אַן טֵע אַ צִפֿעאַר** **é**—It was a very dreadful sight, had one seen it.

**172.—Sense Construction:**—1° **צאָר** **é** **אַן בַּאצ אַטָאָרַאִינן** **מִצֵּעַאַצט** **לֵאִיצֵרעאַצ?** (לִיך. 42)—What is there to prevent us from going away at once? **צאָר** **é** **אַן בַּאצ אַטָאָרַאִינן**=**נאַצ צעאַוויגִצטע וִוִינן**, or **נָא פֿויל** **סֵע צעאַוויגִצטע אַזאַינן**, either of which would be followed by the N. **מִצֵּעַאַצט** (this being, therefore, in the orig. sentence **virtual N.**). Or one might render the sense by—**צאָר אַ צֹמֵעֵאָבֵפֵאָרֵאָ סִינן זאַן. . . ?**—In which case the orig. **מִצֵּעַאַצט** would be virtual A. 2° Exx. like—**וֵעאַרֵע** **עאַזלאֵאָנמ** **וול** **יסֵעאַצ**, can be justified on the same principle of “Sense Construction.” 3° **וֹוב' ואַסאַל אַן טֵסֵיסֵעאַר** **יאָר** (**טב״צ**. 2)—They were a noble Six (Meadhbh is here referring to herself and her five sisters. **Seisear** (M.) is therefore treated as F.). 4° **אַ רֹזאַ בעאַן**=**אַאן וֵעאַן בַּא רֹזאַ לֵיס**—any woman he chose.

## 173.—The Genitive:—

A.—The **Possessive G.** (with various shades of meaning)

1° **Possession or ownership**:—(a) **TRÍ** **FIGEAD**, **CÚIG** **DEAG**—23, 15 (lit. 20's 3; 10's 5). (b) **LEABAR** **SEÁIN**—S.'s book (He owns, or possesses it). 2° **Made by**:—**AMRÁIN** **7** **DÁNTA** **AN** **CÉITINNIGH**—Keating's Poems. 3° **Representing**:—**ÍOMÁIG** **PÓIL** **APSTAL** (K.)—a statue of the A.P. 4° **Commemorating**:—**SRÁID** **UÍ** **CONNELL**—O'Connell St. 5° **Remarkable for**:—**COILL** **NA** **ION**—The Wood of the Blackbirds (in Tyrone). 6° **Partitive**:—**ZEARR-CUIO** **AIRGID**—a tidy sum of money.

N.B.—The **partitive G.** is *not* used:—(a) With pronouns. Partitive **AG**, or **DE** (with D.) are used instead:—**AN** **CUIO** **DÍOB**—those of them; **CIA'CU** **ACU?**—which of them? Except in—**A** **BFURMÓR**, **A** **LEAC**, **A** **TRIAN**—the most of them, the half of it (them), the third of it—and similar phrases, (b) With Compar. and Superl.—**SÉ** **TAOS** **IS** **FEARR** **DE'N** **BEIRT**—T. is the better of the two; **AN** **TÉ** **IS** **FEARR** **ORÉA** **GO** **LÉIR**—the best of them all. (c) With numerals:—**AN** **DARA** **DUINE** **DE'N** **DREAM**—The 2nd one of the lot; **AN** **FIGEAD** **CUIO** **DE**—the 20th part of it. (d) With the Numeral Substantives, unless the G. is **indefinite**:—Thus we say:—**BEIRT** **FEAR**, **SEISEAR** **BAN**—two men, six women. (These are, perhaps, not **partitive**, but **appositional** or **explanatory**). But—**BEIRT** **DE** **SNA** **FEARAIÓ**, **SEISEAR** **DE** **SNA** **MNÁIÓ**—Two of the men, six of the women. (e) Outside the classes of exx. in—(a) **definite** partitive G. is not permissible. Hence:—1° **SLUAG** **DE** **DÁOINIÓ** **BOCTA** **NA** **CATRAC** (CMO. 57)—Crowds of the city poor. 2° **A** **LÁN** **DE** **DÁNTAIÓ** **AN** **FÍLE** **SIN**—many of that poet's "dánta."

B.—The G. of **Quality**:—Denotes some quality or characteristic of what is denoted by the governing noun:—1° **BÁ** **MISE** **CROÍDE** **NA** **FÉILE** **ACU**, **ORÓCE** **7** **LÁ** (Song)—I was "the heart of hospitality" with them day and night. 2° **MNÁ** **FUAĞÁLA**—seamstresses. 3° **SCIÁN** **COISE** **DUIBE** (S.)—a black-handled knife. 4° **ORÓCE** **SEACA**—a frosty night.

C.—The **Subjective (Active) G.**—(a) The subjective G. is, properly speaking, that which denotes the **agent** of



the action implied by the governing word:—1°  $\zeta\text{R}\acute{\alpha}\grave{\text{o}}\ \text{D}\acute{\text{e}}$ —the love of God (which God has for us). 2°  $\text{Is beag é sum na n}\text{D}\text{aoine sin sa n}\zeta\text{aoluinn}$ —Those people take but little interest in I. (b) Although the G. in (a) is active, since it represents the **agent**, the name **Active G.** is sometimes given to the G. of the vb. n. itself used actively:—1°  $\text{Ceard d}\acute{\text{e}}\text{anta crocán }\zeta\text{cria}\grave{\text{o}}$  (K.)—An artificer of earthen pots. 2°  $\text{Cailín deas crúite na mbó}$ —the pretty milk-maid.

D.—The **Objective (Passive) G.**—Denotes the **object** of the action implied by the governing word, and is therefore also called **passive**:—1°  $\text{Ar grád Dé}$ —For the love of God (i.e., which *we feel* for God). 2°  $\text{An amlaio ba mair leat do dí-ceannd anocht?}$ —Can you possibly wish to be beheaded to-night?

E.—The **Appositional G.**—Sometimes used instead of a n. in apposition. Cf. L. urbs Roma, I.— $\text{Caiteoir na Róma}$ —the city of Rome.

F.—The **Explanatory G.**—Akin to E.—1°  $\text{Rinnceoir mná}$ —a female dancer. 2°  $\text{Duibálce na dúise}$ —the vice of impurity.

G.—The **G. of Time**:—1°  $\zeta\text{ada bliadna, }\zeta\text{ada míosa, }\zeta\text{ada maíone}$ —Every year, month, morning. Common in K. Orig. partitive, arising out of such phrases as,  $\text{lá }\zeta\text{ada bliadna}$ . 2° In  $\text{Dia Domnaig}$ , etc., we have an old G. of time, from the noun  $\text{dia}$ , *die*=day.

H.—The **G. of Purpose**:—An extension of the **terminal** meaning of the G. after  $\text{cum}$ :—1°  $\text{Cum bláit cliait is ead do cuadar}$ —It was to D. they went. 2°  $\text{Cum na ndaoine do saoraib is ead do éanna}$ —I have come to save the people. Cf. the early use of E. *for*, and Fr. *pour* before infinitives:—I have come *for* to save the people. Je suis venu *pour* sauver le peuple.

I.—G. of **Cause or Origin**.— $\text{uaigneas do mná}$  (F.SA 13)—loneliness (arising from loss) of your wife;  $\text{uó circe}$ —a hen-egg;  $\text{sicíní cearc}$ —chickens;  $\text{buile feirge}$ —raging frenzy.

J.—G. of **Material**.— $\text{caiteoir súgáin}$ —a “soogawn” chair;  $\text{carn cloc}$ —a heap of stones;  $\text{bórb admaib}$ —a wooden table;  $\text{roé iarrainn}$ —an iron wheel;  $\text{fonnsa práis}$ —a brazen fillet;  $\text{mála mine}$ —a bag of meal;

sac plúir—a sack of flour. The last two exx. are G. of Material Contained—the contents.

The G. is not used after participles, or other adjectives, except when the latter are used as nouns:—**bíod' truaḡ aḡat do b'ochtaiḃ dé**—Have pity for God's poor.

**174.—The Dative:**—The D. does duty also for the Ablative, Instrumental and Locative cases:—D.—**ṭabair déirc dí**—Give her an alms. Abl.—**i b'fad ó baile**—far from home. Instr.—**le buille (de) claiḡeam'**—with a sword-thrust. Loc.—**sa b'aille**—at home: **sa Róim'**—in Rome.

The D. is used:—1° Without a prep.—**maidin**—in the morning (also **ar maidin**); **feasda**, henceforward (O.I. ind fecht sa=now); **inniu**, to-day; **anoct**, to-night (O.I. in-nocht=*the* night); **an f'air**, whilst; **nuair**, **tráḡ**, when. These are all D. of time. **fé** (in **fé mar**) is a **modal D.**

2° With certain preps, (as set forth in **162**). For the case of **pronouns** after preps., see **116**.

The D. expresses:—(a) Possession:—**ṭá leabhar aḡ Seán**—S. has a book. (The G. may denote either possession or ownership). (b) Ownership (with **le**, and A. of **pronouns**).—**lám' liom**, a hand of mine; **is le Seán é**, it is Sean's; **ní f'eadair cos léi caḃ a d'éanfaid' lám' léi** (S.)—Not “a foot of her” knows what “a hand of her” will do. (c) The subjective view, with **is** and **le**; the objective fact with **is** and **do**:—**is maḡ liom ṭae aḡ ní maḡ dom é**—I like tea but it isn't good for me; **ní féidir liom**,—I don't think it possible; **ní féidir dom**,—It is not possible for me. (d) Advantage and disadvantage:—**ḡein ruḃ ar do máḡair**—obey your mother; **is salaḡ a d'einis le Seán é**—you treated S. scurvily. (e) The indirect object—**ṭabair do liam é**—give it to William; **ár n-arán laeḡeamail ṭabair dúinn inniu**—Give us this day our daily bread, (f) The agent (with **do**)—**ar mbeid' aḡ triall, i n-éirinn do Coin ṡCulainn (f.f.)**—When C.C. was proceeding to I. (eclipsis after Coin is irregular); **ní ḡearánta do lil**—L. needn't complain. (g) Local relation:—**i ṡCorcaig atá sé anois**—He's in Cork now; **bí sé ar an aonac' inné**—he

was at the fair yesterday; is *ó ċorcaiḡ dom*—I'm from Cork. (h) Various relations, after verbs, before and after nouns, and after adjectives and participles (see 305-6). (i) Mode, condition, instrument:—*le conḡam ḡé*, with God's help; *ar meisce*, intoxicated; *ḡ'adon ḡnó*—on purpose; *ar ḡealaiḡ*; (*bñ. 617*), like a lunatic; *ar luas* (*bñ. 639*), speedily. (j) Reason, purpose:—*ar an adḡar san*—for that reason; *ar a usaċt a ḡí sé*—considering how easy it was. (k) Measurement:—*ḡá ḡaid an lá is ead is ḡiorra an oirċe*—the longer the day the shorter the night.

“*ḡo ċómaiseas mo ḡic is mo ḡota 's mo cárċ  
le ḡic is le ḡota 's le cárċ mná an mārḡaidḡ  
ḡa mḡo iad mo ḡic is mo ḡota de cárċ  
ná ḡic aḡus ḡota 'ḡus cárċ mná an mārḡaidḡ.*”  
(Riddle)

“I measured my peck and my pot and my quart with those of the market-woman; my peck and pot were larger by a quart, than the m-w.'s peck and pot and quart.”—(So the difference between the two sets of measures was two quarts). There is a variant:—

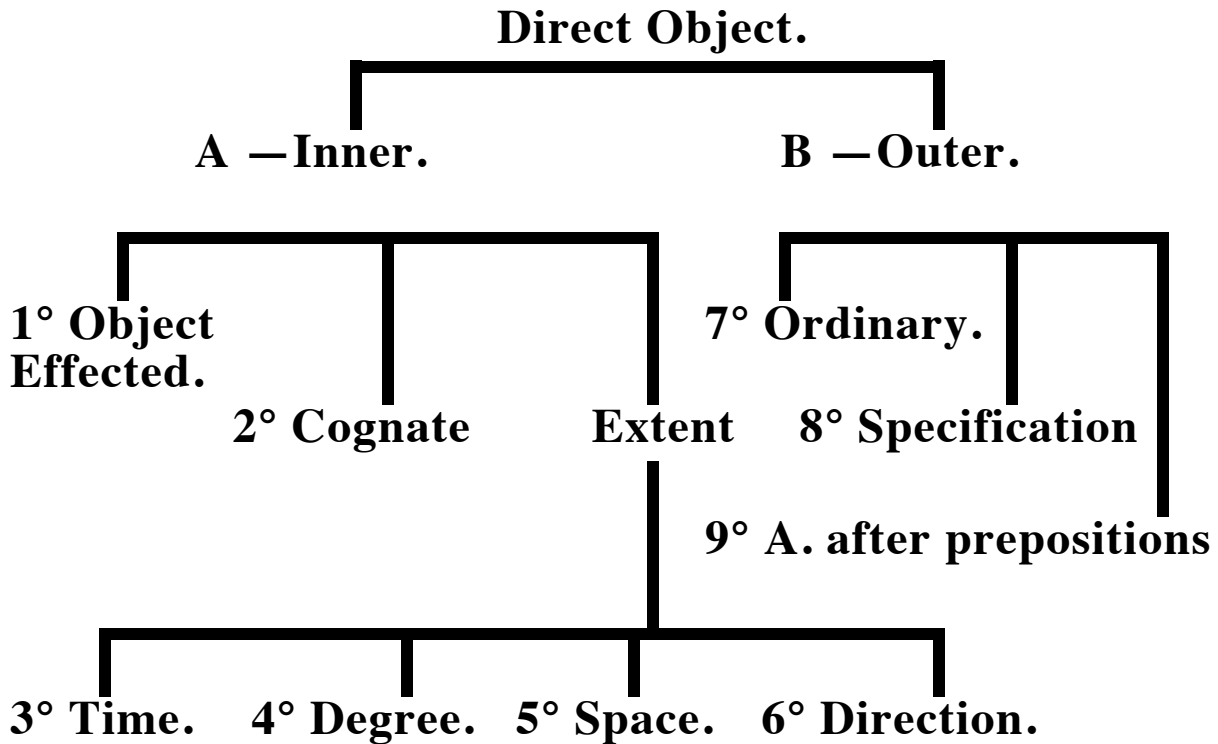
*ḡa mḡo iad mo ḡic is mo ḡota de ḡic is de ḡota  
ná ḡic 7 ḡota 7 cárċ mná an mārḡaidḡ!*

(So the m-w.'s measures were just half the standard!)

(l) Time:—*ó ċeann ceann na bliadḡna*—from one year's end to another; *ón lá úo*—since the day. . . . (m) Origin:—*is de muinntir ċonail me*—I'm an O'Connell. (n) Price:—*ḡíolfaid tu as an obair sin*—you'll pay for all that; *cé méro a ċuḡais ar an mbuin?* How much did you give for the cow? *ḡo ḡíolas an ḡá buin ar ċaoḡaid púnt*—I sold the two cows for £50. (o) Plenty, and emptiness:—*ḡí an seomra lán de ḡadoinḡ beaḡa ḡuḡa*—the room was full of little black folk; *ḡá an áit follam ó ḡadoinḡ*—the place is a wilderness; *a h-aighe ciuin ó ḡeirḡ 7 ó buairċ* (*ḡbċ. 5*)—Her mind at rest from anger and worry.

For other meanings of the D. see 304.

**175.—The Accusative:—**The A. is the case of the direct object, *i.e.*, the object which defines directly the action of the verb. The object may be:—(a) virtually contained in the verb itself. This is called the Inner Object, the Object Effected. (b) Or distinct from the vb. This is called the Outer Object, the Object Affected. These distinctions give us the following scheme for the uses of the A.



C—To denote the general object of thought, etc.  
**The Exclamatory A.**

**The A. after verbs, vb. nouns, and adjectives.**

A. 1° The Inner Object:—*Ḑo crúcuig Ḑia an ḑomán*—God created the world.

(God *made a creature*—the world. 2° The Cognate A. is a special form of the A. of the Inner Object:—*ḑo buail sé buille orm*—he struck me a stroke. 3° The A. of Extent in Time:—*Ḑíodas as feiceam faid gac n-faid* (bn. 264)—They were waiting ever so long; *scaoil leis an ḑliam seo*—let it be for this year; *is ḑóic liom go raib sí i ngráib leis go mór, tamall* (TBC. 5)—I think she was deeply in love with him for a while. 4° The A. of Extent in Degree:—*Ṫá an leat-scéal san ró-caol iarraict* (TBC. 188)—That excuse is a little too subtle;

ḅí sé pas beas fuar—It was a little bit cold. N.B.—This A. is sometimes found in the Rel.—**pé méio a ñerò tú caillte leis** (CMḶ. 318)—Whatever the amount that you are “down” through him; **ḁo cúas amuò a mórán**—I went a deal astray. 5° The A. of Extent in Space:—**ḁo éarla go raib sagart as gabáil an treo** (CMḶ. 317)—A priest happened to be going that way; **éanaðar siubal aon lae ar ašaiò** (CMḶ. 71)—They advanced a day’s journey. 6° **Terminal A.**—**ḁo gluais an deatac an simné amač** (S.)—The smoke went out the chimney; **an té ná tagann an doras isteač** (CMḶ. 311)—He who cometh not in through the door; **ná h-iompuišib uaiò ñeiseal ná, tuacal** (bñ. 256)—Turn not away from it, right or left.

B.—The Outer Object:—7° Ordinary exx.—**b’sin é a loic iad**—That’s what destroyed them; **ná bris nós**—do not violate a custom.

8° The A. of Specification:—**An té is las creideam**—He who is weak as to faith; **An té is mó práiòinn, is é is cinnte beic ar ñeiread** (up.)—The one in greatest hurry is sure to be last; **ní feicimse doinne annso is mó šáb leis an mbia seo ná mé féin** (CḶ. 29)—I see no one here in more need of this food than myself. 9° The A. after prepositions: See 162.

C.—The Exclamatory A.—Used interjectionally in such expressions as:—**An t-amadán**—the fool! **An fear boct**—the poor fellow! **Ac šráò a éabairt dóib!** (CMḶ. 317)—But to think of loving them!

176 (a).—**Muna mbead**, “only for” in such expressions as:—**muna mbead é, muna mbead seán**—Only for him, S., may be said to take the A., if we are to look upon it as identical with O.I. ma-ni-bad, which took an A. owing to cen (=gan) with which it is almost identical in meaning.

(b) The **Projected A.**—1° **ḁo ñeinn toilteanač ar scrí cuige, ac ñul cum cainnte leis, ní féadfaim**—I should be willing to write to him, but as to giving him a personal interview—I couldn’t! (Rhetorical for—**ní féadfaim ñul cum cainnte leis**). 2° **Déra dam a Dé, cé no béra acht tu?** (Quoted by Kuno Meyer, PIM. 13)—Who will give me tears but Thou, o God?

(c) The **Virtual A.**—*ní féadfaí a óiceall a éanamh* *ac an t-uan do mabú* (CMO. 247)—All he can do, at his best, is to slay the lamb. *An t-uan*, virtual A. The sentence is an abbreviation of—*ní féadfaí a ó.* (puinn eile) *a ó.*, *ac (féadfaí sé) an t-uan do mabú*; *cad a éanfaí mac an cáit ac an luc a mabú?*—What should the kitten do but kill a mouse! *an luc*—virtual A. The sentence is a contamination (309) of ques. and ans.—*Cad a éanfaí mac an cáit?* (*Ar nóin ní éanfaí sé a malairt*) *ac (éanfaí sé) an luc a mabú!*

**177.—The Vocative Case:**—That of direct address. As it expresses no relation to any other word, it presents no syntactical difficulties. The V. of *Dia*, God, is, in mod. I. *a Dia*, probably to avoid confusion with *a gé* (Goose!).

**178.—The Verbal Noun:**—**I.** Its ordinary use, in N.G.D.A., or abs. **II.** In phrases where the agent and the object of the action are both expressed. **III.** In a passive sense. **IV.** In answers to questions, etc.

**I.** (a) N. Is *usa do camal gabáil tré cró snáchtáir,* *ná do'n duine saibhir dul isteach i rígeacht na bflaitheas*—It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of heaven; *níor gáir ó téacht na dtreo i n-aon cor an lá san* (CMO. 334)—He needn't have come to meet them that day at all.

(b) **Projected N.**—*ac dul a baile na ceannra súb,* *níor maic liom san*—But to go home with that fellow! I shouldn't like it.

(c) **Virtual N.**—*do beaí náire orm dul isteach*—I'd be ashamed to go in; *tá ačas orm bualaí umat*—I'm pleased to meet you.

(d) **Absolute:**—*i n-aíre gac casaí 7 achrú dá dtéig-eaí ar an gceol,* *chéig-eaí a comtrom d'achrú ar ghlaiseaí na ndaoine* (S.)—For every change and turn that came upon the music, a corresponding change took place in the people's movements; *ní deirim ná gur fearr de tu beir ad' aonar*—I'm inclined to think you're better alone.

(e) **Genitive:**—*Cailín deas crúite na mbó*—The

pretty milk-maid; CEAPΘ ΔΕΑΝΤΑ CROCÁN SCRIAΘ (K.)—an artificer of earthen pots; ŠEOBPAR FEAR A ŠONTA FÓS (TBC. 117)—We'll find a man to wound him yet.

(f) **Dative**:—ΘΟ ΤΟΪΑΣ-ΣΑ Ο ΤΟΣΑĆ ΙΑΘ, ΞΑΝ ΙΑΘ ΘΟ ΔΕΑΝΑΜ ΔΟΝ ΡΥΘΑ ĆUM ΑΝ ΤΟΪΑ ΣΑΝ ΘΟ ΤΥΙΛΛΕΑΜ (ĆS)—I have chosen them from the beginning, without their having done anything to merit that choice; ΒÍ ΑΝ ΞΡΙΑΝ ΑΞ ΤΑΙĆNEΑΜ ΟΡĆΑ, 7 ΒÍΟΘΑΡ ΑΞ ΞΛΑĆΑΘ ΝΑ ΞΡÉINE (CMΘ. 333)—The sun was shining, and they were sunning themselves.

(g) **Accusative**:—1° ΑΝΝΣΑΝ ΞΟ ΞΑΙĆFΘIS FΑΝΑΜΑΙΝΤ ΑΜΥΪ, ΜΑΡ Α ΜΒΕΑΘ ΞΟΙ 7 ΒÍΟΣΞΑΝ FΙΑĆΑΙ (CMΘ. 331)—That then they should have to remain outside, where there would be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 2° A. after ΞΑΝ:—ΝÍΟΡ ΜΑΙĆ ΛΙΟΜ ΞΑΝ ΘΥΛ Α ΒΑΙΛΕ—I shouldn't like not to go home. 3° A. after ΙΘΙΡ, ΞΟ, etc.—ΙΘΙΡ ΟΣΑΙΛΤ ΝΑ ΝΘÓΙΡSE, 7 ΝΟĆΤΑΘ ΝΑ Ν-ΥΡĆÓΙΘΕΑĆ—Both the opening of the doors, and the exposure of the culprits; ΞΟ ΒΕΙĆ ΘΑ ĆΡΕΑĆΤΑΙΘ CNEASΥΪĆE (K.)—Until his wounds were healed; ΤΡÉ ΘΥΛ Ι ΝΞΥΑΙS IS ΕΑΘ ΤΥΙΤΕΑΝΝ Α ΛΑΝ—Many fall through courting dangers.

**II. Agent and Object in vb. n. phrase**:—ΙS ΙΟΝΞΝΑ ΛΙΟΜ Ε ΘΟ ΤΟΪΑΘ ΝΑ Ν-ΑΡΜ ΣΑΝ (ΤΒC)—I'm surprised that he chooses those weapons; Sometimes the agent is expressed by a rel. particle:—ΝÍ ΤΥ ΒΑ ΜΑΙĆ ΛΙΟΜ Θ'FΑΞΑΙΛ ΒΑΙS ΑΡ ΑΝ ΞCΥΜΑ ΣΑΝ—It isn't you I should like to die thus; when the obj. is a pron., the latter must precede the vb. n., so that agent and object come together, connected generally by ΑΞ (Ć):—Θ'ΑΘΜΥΪΞ ΣΕ ΝΑΡΘ' FÉΙΘΙΡ Α ΜΑΙĆ ΘΟ ΛΟΤ, ΤΟΙSC ΜΕ ΞΑ ĆΑΒΑΙΡΤ ΥΑΙΜ ΑΡ ΣΟΝ ΑΝ ΤΣΛΑΝΥΪĆEΟΡΑ (S. 62)—He admitted it was impossible to mar the good it did, since I gave it away for the Saviour's sake.

**III. The vb. n. in passive sense**:—ΒΑΙΛΥΪΘ ΑΝ CΟΞΑΙ ΑΡ ΘΤΥÍS, 7 CEΑΝΞΑΛΑΙΘ Ε ΝΑ ΠΥΝΑΝΝΑΙΘ LE ΘÓΞΑΘ (CMΘ.)—Gather up first the cockle, and bind it into bundles to burn (=to be burned); ΝΑ ΛΕΟΞ-SE ΜΟ ĆΥΘ FΟΛΑ ΘΟ ΘΟΡΤΑΘ (Bη.407)—Do not allow my blood to be spilt.

The vb. n. is negated by ΞΑΝ:—ΘΥΒΑΙΡΤ ΣΕ ΛΙΟΜ Ε

ðeanam—He told me to do it; ÐUBAIRT sé liom gan é  
ðéanam—He told me not to do it.

**IV. In answers to questions, etc.**—CAÐ cuige dóib  
beic as maḡað fúinn? É beic tuille aḡainn—Why are  
they making fun of us? Because we've deserved it!  
(=É beic tuille aḡainn fé nðeár é, or some such thing);  
hamlet do tēact isteac—Enter H. (taḡann h. isteac  
is rank bēarlacas); an duine a bí gan lúč a ḡeas 'á  
leigēas as Críost (ĈS. 90, Title of Chap.)—C. heals the  
sick of the palsy.

**179.—Phrase Nouns:—I.—The Bracketed Construction**  
(See 171). Further exx.—cun (ḡabáil de cosuib i ḡcómačt  
an áirseora) (CMṼ. 4)—to quell the power of the devil;  
fan (bruač na mara san) (CMṼ. 81)—along that sea-  
shore; tar éis (díoḡaltas do baint amac) (Smb). 80)—  
after wreaking vengeance. N.B. ḡabáil, bruač, díoḡaltas  
are absolute.

**II. The Unbracketed Construction:**—Phrase nouns may  
also be **unbracketed**, *i.e.*, the fundamental n. or pron.  
functions as N. G. D. or A. In the phrase “ceist a  
cú” —to put a question—ceist may be:—

(a) **Subj. N.**:—1° to the vb. is—ba maic liom ceist  
a cú ort—I should like to put you a question.  
2° Appositional N.—Tá sé cóim maic aḡainn ceist a cú  
air—we may as well put him a question. 3° Projected  
N.—ac ceist a cú air, níor maic liom san—but as for  
putting him a question, I shouldn't like it. 4° Virtual  
N.—beaḡ eagla orm ceist a cú air—I should be afraid  
to put him a question.

(b) **Predicate N.** to is:—'Sé ruḡ a ðeim íosa ná ceist  
a cú cúca (CMṼ. 336)—Jesus simply put them a question.

(c) **Genitive.**—ð'éis na ceiste cú cúca ð'imciḡ  
sé uača—when he had put them the question, he left them.

(d) **Dative.**—ðá mbeaḡ uain aige ar cēisc a cú  
cúca—if he had had time to put them a question.

(e) **Accusative:**—1° After transitive vb.—ð'órtuiḡ sé  
ðom ceist a cú air—he bade me put him a question.  
2° After gan—gan ceist a cú ar aoinne—to question  
nobody. 3° After ðoir—ðoir ceist a cú 7 freaḡra do



ḡḷACAḡ—both putting a question, and receiving an answer.

(f) **Virtual A.**—ní f́eáḡḡainn ḁ ḡéanam ḁc̄ an ceist ḁ c̄ur cúc̄a—I could only put them the question.

**III. Adverbial Noun-Phrases:**—(a) níḷ rí ḁcu nár c̄áinig breis 7 líon ḁ c̄ríoc̄a céaḡ (TBC.37)—Every King of them has come with more than the complement of his barony.

(b) b̄í ḡac̄ ḁon ruḡ iompuiḡce láic̄reac̄, taob̄ síos suas, 7 taob̄ soir siar (bñ . 634)—Everything was forth-with turned completely topsy-turvy. See 175 A. 4°.

**IV. Prepositional Noun-Phrases:**—These may be:—

(a) **Subj. N.:**—1° To the vb. is:—níor̄b̄ f̄iú ḡuit ḡan f̄anamaint liom (S. 19)—It wasn't worth your while not to wait for me. 2° Appositional N.—c̄á sé c̄óm maiḡ ḁḡac̄ ḡan ḡul ḁ ḡaile ḁnoc̄t—You may as well not go home to-night. 3° Projected N.—ḡan ḡul ḁ ḡaile, an eaḡ?—Not go home, is it? 4° Virtual N.—ḡeaḡ náire orm ḡan é c̄aḡairt ḡó—I'd be ashamed not to give it to him. 5° N. after ḡo ḡc̄í:—ḡo ḡc̄í c̄réis mórán aimsire (AR. 103)—until after a long time.

(b) **Pred. N. to is:**—'Sé c̄ómairle c̄uḡ sé ḡom ná ḡan ḡul ḁ ḡaile ḁ c̄uille—He advised me not to go home any more.

(c) **Absolute:**—níor̄ mis̄ḡe ḡuit ḡan é ínnsint ḡúinn—It wouldn't have been amiss if you hadn't told us.

(d) **Genitive:**—1° c̄oisc ḡan iad ḁ ḡeic̄ ann (CS. 5)—because they are not. 2° C̄un ḡan é ḡéanam (msf. 137)—for not doing it. 3° AR f̄eaḡ i b̄ḡaḡ—for a long time. 4° I n-éaḡmuis ḡan ḁon c̄oinne ḁ ḡeic̄ ḁcu (bñ)—in addition to their not expecting. . . . 5° C̄un ḡan ḁon tsuim ḁ c̄ur sa c̄ainnt (CMḡ. 53)—for not attending to the words.

(e) **Dative**—1° Aníos ó in-ḁice an ḡaile mór (S. 130)—up from somewhere near town. 2° Ó roim̄ Ábraham ḁ ḡeic̄ ann (CS. 251)—before A. was made. 3° le ḡan an scoil ḡo c̄aic̄eam̄ c̄uḡe (msf. 159)—for not relinquishing the school to him. 4° AR iḡir saḡart 7 ḡaoine (CMḡ. 15)—upon both priest and people. 5° Ó roim̄ an éirḡe amac̄ (Smb. 147)—since before the Rising.

(f) **Accusative:**—1° After trans, vb.—ḡuḡairt sé liom ḡan bac leis ḁ c̄uille—he told me not to mind it any more. 2° After ḡan—ḡan iḡir leaḡair is peic̄túirí ḡo ḡóḡaḡ—without

burning both books and pictures. 3° After *tré*—*tré* *san aire* *caibairt* *dó*—owing to inattention. 4° **Virtual A.**—*ní* *duibairt* *sé* *liom* *ac* *san* *don* *dá* *cuir* *a* *deanam* *dem* *óiceall*—he told me just to do my level best.

**180.—Noun Clauses:**—Like other nouns, these may be either N.G.D.A. or abs.:—A. Nom. noun-clauses:—

(a) Subj. N.—1° To is:—*níor* *maid* *liom* *go* *ndéanfá* *a* *leiceo*—I shouldn't like you to do such a thing. 2° Appos. N.—*tá* *sé* *ráite* *ná* *deanfað* *éire* *cú* *de* *ma-da-ruað*—it has been said that “nothing will make a silk purse out of a sow's ear.” 3° Projected N.—*go* *ndéanfað* *sí* *an* *feall* *san*, *is* *deacair* *é* *cuiscint*—that she should have worked this treachery is hard to believe. 4° Virtual N.—*bí* *náire* *uirri* *go* *raib* *sí* *cóm* *dána* *sin* (*Smb.* 138)—she was ashamed of her boldness. 5° N. after *go* *rtí*:—*go* *rtí* *go* *rtiocfað* *séadna*—till S. should come.

(b) Pred. N.—*b'é* *ba* *maid* *liomsa* *ná* *deanfaí* *go* *deo* *é*—I should really wish it were never done.

(c) Genitive:—1° *Cun* *go* *ndéanfaí* *é*—that it might be done. 2° *Toisc* *gur* *cuais* *céad* *púnt* *dom* (*S.*)—seeing that you gave me £100.

(d) Dative:—*ní* *raib* *deimne* *aiße* *ar* *gurb* *é* *mac* *dé* *é* (*Cmb.* 92)—he was not certain that He was the Son of God.

(e) Accusative: —1° After trans, vb.—*nuair* *a* *cuiz* *an* *feall* *boct* *cé* *bí* *aiße* *ann* (*Smb.* 124)—when the poor fellow realised who it was. 2° After *san*—*ní* *beað* *don* *iongna* *orm* *gion* *go* *ndéanfá* *é*—I shouldn't be surprised if you didn't do it.—*gion* *go*=O.I, *cen* *co*, without that . . . . lit.=although . . . . not, but sometimes=although. The clause “*go* *ndéanfá* *é*” is A. governed by *san* (*gion*); while the clause “*gion* *go* *ndéanfá* *é*” is virtual N.

3° Appositional A.—*ná* *cuirimís* *san* *de* *masla* *ar* *ár* *nglóire*, *go* *nteicfimis* *ón* *scrois* (*Im.* 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross!

4° Absolute:—*ní* *cuirfinn* *a* *caíú* *go* *bráct* *díom* *go* *mbeinn* *pósta* *as* *amaðán*—I should never cease to regret being married to a fool.

5° Virtually absolute:—*ní* *feadfaíð* *sé* *a* *ráð* *ac* *ná* *tiocfaíð* *sé* *arís*—The only rejoinder left him is that he'll not come again.

**181.**—Aspiration of noun is often **dynamic**, *i.e.*, employed to mark certain psychological distinctions:—(a) **ḡán molta** (Cḡ)—a panegyric poem. (b) **AR BRUAĆ NA FAIRRGE**—on the sea-shore (indefinite): **AR ḡBRUAĆ NA F.** on a (particular) shore of the sea. (c) **ḡuine zan cos**—a person without legs: **ḡuine zan ćos**, one deprived of a particular leg. (d) **ΔIRM COGAḡ**—war-weapons (general): **ΔIRM ćOGAḡ**, weapons for a particular war. (e) **culaić šaGAIRT**, a priest's dress (particular).

**182.**—Remarks on the Cases:—(a) **ḡíos ann an lá san** (not **AR an lá san**)—I was there on that day. But—**ḡeḡ troSCAḡ AR an lá san**—that day will carry with it the obligation of fasting. (b) The D. pl. in -iḡ is often used **dynamically**:—**Cuirfiḡ san rać AR ḡaoine**—that will make people prosperous: **ḡíonn an rać AR ḡaoimiḡ áiriće**—some people are lucky. (c) The N. pl. for the G.—**ḡo lean sé aš sGRÍ leitreaća éigin AR an ḡtalam** (CMḡ. 305)—He continued writing certain letters on the ground.

**183.**—Number:—(a) **Siḡdal lae**, a day's journey; **siḡdal trí lá**, a three days' journey; **i zCAIĆEAM an ćuiš lá**, during (the period of) 5 days; **an ḡeic lá**, the (period of) ten days. But when the space of time is looked at in its component parts the pl. is used:—**ní raiḡ aon uair a' ćluiš i zCAIĆEAM na nḡeic laećeanta san . . .** there wasn't an hour during those ten days.

(b) The sg. noun is often used in speaking of a multitude where English uses the pl. 1° **ná bíḡ ḡr ná aIRGEAḡ ná saḡḡbreas i ḡtaišge ašaiḡ i nḡur zcrios** (CMḡ. 246)—Have neither gold nor silver nor any other kind of wealth in your girdles. 2° **ní fÉAḡFAIḡÍs Δ meAḡRÚ n-Δ n-aišne** (ḡḡC. 89)—they couldn't imagine.

(c) But when the multitude act individually, the pl. is used:—**. . . . ḡom' fEARaiḡ boćta Δ ḡí aš imirt Δ n-ANAM** (G. pl.) **aš troiḡ le nḡur namaiḡ** (ḡn.)—to my poor men who were risking their lives fighting against your enemies.

(d) The sg. is used generally after **is mó**=many a:—**Is mó ḡuine ḡí i rioćt spARáin ḡ'fAšáil 7 ná fUAIR**—many a man was on the point of getting a purse, and didn't. But the pl.

occurs when there is question of a class:—*is mó daoine na c'ia d'atá, riam ó soim, as déanam an uile sa gas d'icill ar an b'fírinne sin do b'ogad' (CM'D. 264)*—many other people besides them are ever since making every effort to discount that statement

(e) The sg. *an té* may mean “those who”—*An té is lúgá ciall is é is mó cainnt*—They who have least sense talk most.

(f) The sg. is often used with numerals:—1° *trí ní d'gan ríadail—bean, muc 7 mülle (UP.)*—Three ungovernable things—a woman, a pig, a mule! 2° *na trí b'ail, is furus a g'ortuad'—súil, glún 7 uille (UP.)*—The three members easily hurt—the eye, the knee and the elbow. 3° *seallad' naoi mbó ficead' dam le cailín duib' buide gan céill. Ac mo mairg sur pós mé a riam í, is ainoir na gcraob' mo d'éir' (CCU. 104)*—I was promised 29 cows, and a dark yellow girl with no sense, Alas! that I ever married her, leaving behind me the maid of the flowing hair!

## CHAPTER III.

### SYNTAX OF THE ADJECTIVE.

**184.**—An adj. is **attributive** when it qualifies the n. without the intervention of any verbal form:—*ṽ'fíll an mac breoite*—the sick lad returned; *ṽo mairb Seán óg é*—young S. killed it. An adj. is **predicative** when attached to the n. only through the medium of a verb:—*τὰ ἀν ῥοσαιῶεαῖτ san ἀνα-ῶρεαῖ*—that pasturage is very fine. The vb., however, may be present only by implication:—1° *ṽ'fíll an mac 7 é breoite*—the lad returned sick. 2° *ṽo mairb Seán 7 é óg é*—S. killed it when he was young. 3° *ṽo mairb Seán é 7 é óg*—S. killed it young.

The **attributive** adj.—with the exceptions given below—follows its n. and agrees with it in gender, number and case, but not necessarily, of course, in declension:—*ῑear mór*, a great man; *ῑir móra*, great men; *bean maic*, a good woman; *mná maice*, good women; *mac an ῑir móir seo*, this big man's son; *inḡean na mná maice sin*, that good woman's daughter.

**185 (a).**—The **Cardinals** from 1 to 10 precede their nouns, whether other numbers are added or not:—*τρί βλιαῶνα*, *τρί βλιαῶνα ῑίεαṽ* (*seascāṽ*, *7rl.*), three, twenty-three (63) years. N.B.—*ḃróz*, *ṽά ḃróiz*, *τρί ḃróza*—one, two, three shoes; *don ḃróz*, any shoe; *don ḃróz amáin*, one shoe.

(b) The **Ordinals**, also, except *τάνaise*, *τάνaište* (2nd) precede the n.—*an ṽara h-aois ṽéaz*—the 12th century. But—*an aois τάνaište*—the 2nd age of life (from 7 to 16 years).

(c) The **pronom. adjs.**—*ḡac*, *ḡac don*, *ḡac uile*, *an uile*, *ḡac 're* precede the n. Add to these the article, and the interrog. adjs., *cia*, *ca:*—*cionnus*, *conus*, how; *canaṽ*, where; *ca h-uair*, when, etc.

(d) **Simple** adjs. (but not those with the suffixes -ΔĆ, -ṁAR, -ΔṁAIL, -ṁΔ, ċΔ, -τΔ; nor participles) may precede the n. attributively, but then they form compounds, and often have a special shade of meaning:—**mÓR-cÚIS**, conceitedness: **cÚIS mÓR**, a grave reason; **ṁUA-ṁIAṁṁAISE**, New Testament; **ṁIAṁṁAISE ṁUA**, fresh evidence.

(e) **ṁEΔĠ**—good, **ṁROC**—bad, always precede the n. After the n. and also when predicative **ṁAIĆ** and **OLC** must be used:—**AN ṁEΔĠ-ṁEΔN**, the good lady; **ṁROC-scÉAL**, bad news; **nÍOR ṁRIS ṁOCAL ṁAIĆ ṁIACAL RIAṁ**—a good word never did any harm; **IS ṁAIĆ ṁEΔN ṁEĠ-ṁIR** (TBC. 1)—a good man's wife is good.

(f) **Sean**, old, often precedes the n., but also follows, both attributively and predicatively, though, when pred., **ΔOSṁΔ** is often preferred:—**AN seAN-scÉAL** ṁ ṁCÓṁ-nurṁE—the old, old story; **τÁ sé ΔOSτΔ ṁO ṁAIĆ**—he's fairly old. The prefixed **sean** is sometimes contemptuous or humorous:—**AN seAN-ṁUAĆAILL**—the devil. N.B.—**AN ṁIOMNA seAN**, **AN ṁIOMNA ṁUA**—the Old, the New Testament.

**186.**—The Ordinals are indeclinable. Before **ΔONṁΔṁ**, **OLCṁΔṁ**, the art. is **AN τ-** (N. and A.) whether the n. is M. or F., and **NA ṁ-** in G. sg. F.—1° **AN τ-OLCṁΔṁ ΔOIS ṁÉΔĠ**, the 18th century: **ṁÁR NA ṁ-OLCṁΔṁ ΔOISE ṁÉΔĠ**, the middle of the 18th c. 2° ṁ ṁTOSΔĆ **AN OLCṁΔṁ CAIBOṁIL** (CMṁ. 231), in the beginning of the 8th chapter. 3° **cÉΔṁ**, 1st, is uninflected, as it forms a compound with the noun:—**ṁEΔCA NA cÉΔṁ ṁṁÁ** (CMṁ. 21), the 1st woman's sin. 4° **AN τARNA**, the 2nd, keeps this form in G. sg. F.—ṁ ṁTOSΔĆ **AN τARNA ṁ-ΔOISE**—in the beginning of the 2nd century. But—ṁ ṁTOSΔĆ **NA ṁARA ṁ-ΔOISE**.

**187** (a) In mod. I. pred. adjs. are not inflected:—**IS ṁAIĆ IΔṁ NA ṁIR ċUM NA ṁBAN ṁO ċOSC**—Men are good for checking women.

(b) Compar. and superl. adjs. are always pred. N. to some form of **IS**, and are not inflected for gender or number. **nÍOS** (nÍOSΔ) **nÍBA** sometimes occur even after some form of **IS**:—**ċIOCṁΔṁ AN OĠREΔĆĆ cÚĠAT nÍBA**

ḡáḃálcā an bóčar ḡíreac, bíoḡ ḡo mba níba ríḡne é (lúc. 30)—the inheritance would have reached you more safely by the straight road, though it would have been slower.

(c) Certain adjs. do not admit comparison:—**féirir**, possible; **cuma**, the same; **céadna**, same; **eile**, other; **uile**, all; numerals. In regard to **féirir**, one *could* say:—is móirde is féirir ḡuit é, más féirir leac é, it is all the more possible for you, if you think it so.

(d) “Less” and “least” are usually rendered by **lúḡa** with A. of Specification:—ní fēaca riam̃ don ḡean ba lúḡa tuisḡint ná—I never saw a less intelligent woman. In the first member of a Proportion sentence (212) “the less” is ḡá luḡeac:—ḡá luḡeac í an tuisḡint is eac̃ is mó an tuisḡac̃ cum cainnte—the less the intelligence, the greater the propensity to talk.

(e) **níos**, **níosa**, **níba**, are often strengthened by the addition of a numeral, generally **ḡá** or **seac̃**:—1° ḡo ḡeac̃ olc níba seac̃ measa ná é caḡaiḡe air (ṡḃc. 10)—A very much greater evil would have come upon him. **níosa** eclipses f:—ṡá sé i ḡfāc̃ níosa ḡfearr inḡiu—he’s much better to-day. 2° ṡá sé níosa ḡá measa ná mar a ḡí—he’s twice as bad as he was. 3° Sometimes the thought is fully expressed:—ḡo ḡeac̃ olc ba seac̃ n-uaire níba measa caḡaiḡe air.

**188** (a) When several adjs. are used of the same n. or pron. **aḡus** is often absent, when the adjs. are of similar meaning, or when one of them is merely intensive:—1° **cailín ciúin ciallm̃ar** (S.)—a quiet, sensible girl. 2° **lá breac̃ boḡ**—a beautifully soft day. 3° **naḡ breac̃ boḡ a caḡann cainnt cúḡac̃!**—how very easily you talk!

(b) When the adjs. or advs. express quite different ideas, or when there is a gradation, or a climax, **aḡus** is used:—1° **ḡí an cainnt ḡo láirir, 7 ḡo ciallm̃ar 7 ḡo bunac̃asac̃**—the words were strong, and sensible and to the point. 2° **ṡá sé ḡo holc, 7 ḡo h-ana-olc, 7 ḡo malluḡe**—he’s bad, very bad, even vicious. 3° **ḡá ḡáḃáil ḡo h-árḡ, 7 ḡo ceolm̃ar 7 ḡo binn** (CMḡ. 378)—chanting it aloud, musically, melodiously. 4° **ḡo ḡiúlṡuḡḡar ḡo tur 7 ḡo fuac̃m̃ar, 7 ḡo seas̃m̃ac̃** (CMḡ.

384)—they refused, not only with dourness, but with hatred and obstinacy.

**189.—Participial** adjs. are used with *τÁ* in an elliptical construction:—1° *τÁ ríte leat tamall maic gan díol as* (TBC. 6)—you've run a good while without punishment. 2° *τÁ íte 7 ólta aghainn*—we've eaten and drunk. 3 *b'fuit críochnuigte aghat?*—have you finished?

**190.—The Dual** adj. has the same form as the pl. Its initial is ordinarily aspirated:—*ḃÁ ḃróis ḃeasa*—two nice shoes; *ḃÁ súil ḡorma*—two blue eyes; *ḃÁ ḡaḡart ḃiaḃasaḃla*—two pious priests. When *ḃÁ* is preceded by the G. pron. *a*, that pron. may aspirate or eclipse the init. *ḃ-* according to circumstances; in which case *ḃÁ* will asp. the following consonant:—*ḃí na ḡloiní na nḃÁ ḃorn acu*—they had the glasses in their two fists. Or the *ḃ-* of *ḃÁ* may be aspirated in all cases, and then the pron. produces its natural effect on the n.—*a ḃÁ ḃorn*—*her* two fists; *a ḃÁ ḃorn*—*his* two fists; *a ḃÁ nḃorn*—*their* two fists; 7 *a ḃÁ ḡcroibhe ḃÁ sníom le buairt* (Mac. 263)—and their two hearts rent with anxiety. This seems to be the Conn, and W. Kerry usage:—*a ḃÁ béal buailte ar a céile* (Smb. 17)—her two lips tightly closed. In “*n-a ḃÁ súil ḡlais*” (Smb. 15)—in her two grey eyes—the adj. is irregular for *ḡlasa* (due to the sg., *na súil ḡlais*).

**191 (a)** *τρί, čeičre, cúis, sé* may take a sg. or a pl. n.—*τρί capall* or *τρί čapall*. The aspiration here may be due to O.I. *trí chét* (300), where *cét* is a true pl., and aspiration is regular.

(b) *τρί* and *čeičre* were declined in O.I. and so eclipse in G. *Cúis* and *sé* eclipse analogically—*i ḡcinn na ḃtrí mblian ḃéas*, at the end of the 13 years; *ainmričte na ḡceičre ḡcos*, the four-footed animals; *ar son na ḡcúis ḡcúisí*—for the 5 provinces, etc.

(c) Besides the ordinary method of counting, observe: (a) *seacht ḡcinn ḃéas de ḃuaib*—seventeen head of cows. This form is used when the numeral is compound, and the n. has an adj. attached:—*ceičre činn píceaḃ de*



ḡapallib̃ ḡub̃a—24 black horses. (b) τρί ḡeic̃ ḡ seac̃t ḡe ḡlianab̃ (CM̃. 9)—37 years. (c) seac̃t n-uaire f̃e seac̃t ñeic̃ (CM̃. 292)—seventy times seven times. (d) céaḡ oḡt ñeic̃ ḡ cúig ḡe m̃l̃tib̃ fear (MAC. 7)—185,000 men. (e) sa ḡliañ céaḡ ḡá ḡeic̃ ḡ sé—in the year 126.

**192.—Pronominal Adjectives:**—(a)—The possessives *mo*, etc., are G. (sg. and pl.) of the personal pronouns used (like G. nouns) as adjectives.

(b) Interrogative Adjectives:—

1° These (along with *n*.) are always pred. N. to is understood:—*Conus* (ḡ)tauoi?—How are you?=*Ca ionnus* (ḡn ionnus) ḡ tauoi? Cf. Conn.—*Cia* ḡtauoi ḡ ḡfuil, tu?

2° Even when *the clause itself* is under government the interrog. adj. remains pred. N. to is:—*ḡuim̃niḡeaḡ sé ar conus mar ḡ tuit falláí ár̃ḡa láire na caḡraḡ san ḡun tauim̃ anuas* (CM̃. 81)—He would think of how the strong high walls of that city tumbled to the ground.

3° So, when the clause is absolute:—*ní raiḡ 'fios acu cia'cu ḡuine ḡí acu*—they knew not with which one they were dealing.

**193.—Noun-clauses introduced by interrog. adjs. may be N.G.D.A. or absolute.**

1° **Nom.**—(a) To is:—*ní heol ḡom conus ḡ ḡein sé é*—I don't know how he did it; *ní cuim̃n liom cia'cu ceann aḡub̃air̃t sé ba m̃easa*—I forget which one he said was worst. (b) Pred. N. to is:—*Sí ceist ḡ cuir sé cúca ná cia'cu ḡuine ba ḡóic̃ leo ba cóm̃ursa ḡo'n ḡuine ḡí i bp̃ein*—the question He put them was simply this, which one they thought was neighbour to the man in pain. (c) Appositional N.—*tauá sé soill̃eir ḡo maiḡ cia'cu ḡuine acu atá cioñtaḡ*—it's plain enough which one of them is guilty.

2° **Absolute.**—*ní raiḡ f̃ios aḡam cia'cu leaḡar aḡéar-f̃ainn ba ḡeise*—I didn't know which book I should call the nicest.

3° **Virtual N.**—*ḡí ionḡna orm cia'cu ḡuine acu ḡo raiḡ an cion ḡo léir aici air*—I wondered as to which of them she was so fond of.

4° **Genitive.**—**ní** **raib** **ac** **tuairim** **acu** **i** **ḡtaob** **cia'cu** **ḡuine** **acu** **bí** **acu**—they could only guess to which of them they were speaking.

5° **Dative.**—**ḡo** **cuimniḡeadar** . . . . **ar** **conus** **mar** **a** **bíodar** **féin** **aḡ** **obair** (**CMḡ**. 378)—they reflected on how they themselves had been working.

6° **Accus.**—**ḡo** **cuig** **an** **ṡ-aḡair** **peadar** **ḡo** **háluinn** **conus** **is** **ceart** **ḡaoluin** **a** **scrí**—Fr. P. knew perfectly how I. should be written.

**194.**—Fem. adjs. in D. sg. sometimes resist inflection. At times this may be explained on the phrase-noun principle:—**isteac** **i** **ḡclais** **béaḡ** (**CMḡ**. 80)—into a little hole; **aḡ** **an** **lánamain** **óis** (**CMḡ**. 110)—at (by) the young couple; **ar** **cloic** **mór** **ṡrom** (**LMC**. 42)—on (of) a big heavy stone; **i** **sráib** **uaḡtarac** **uí** **ḡonaill** (**Smb** 135)—in Up. O'C. St.; **Aisling** **a** **ḡainic** **ḡuḡam** **aréir**, **a** **mearuig** **7** **a** **bṡeoiḡ** **mo** **ḡroiḡe**, **ar** **óis-mṡnai** **béas** **maiseac** **a** **ḡainic** **ḡuḡam** **le** **n-a** **póig** **san** **oiḡc'** (**C.ḡ.U.** 100)—A vision came to me last night, that quickened and sickened my heart, of a fair lovely young woman who came to me with her kiss in the night; **ṡrío** **an** **ḡcaḡair** **béaḡ** (**CMḡ**. 159)—through the little town; **cuir** **sí** **isteac** **ar** **an** **ḡcainnt** **bḡadaraḡ** **seo** (**Smb**. 164)—she interrupted this insinuating language. Sometimes the fem. adj. is inflected—**aoinne** **ḡe'n** **lánamain** **óis** (**bn**. 577)—any one of the young couple.

## CHAPTER IV.

### SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN.

**195.—The Personal Pronouns.**—These are fully declined, having N. G. D. and A. forms. The N. forms may be absolute:—

(a) In the Bracketed Construction:—1° **Δο' ιαρραιὸ ἐ λεῖξαι ἀνυας ἀρ ἀν ὕταλαμ (CMO. 325)**—trying to throw Him on the ground. 2° **τρεις ἰ τεᾶτ ιστεᾶτ**—when she had come in. 3° **Ὅα ὕτοιγῖνν cun tu ῖά μαρβὰο (bη. 406)**—were I to consent to your killing him. 4° **le linn isi βεῖτ ᾶς τεᾶτ (bη. 545)**—while she was coming.

(b) When they are the term of proleptic **Δ, οε, acu**, etc.—1° **Ὅοβ' φεαρροε δον κόμαρλεῖ βεῖτ ἀνν (AR. 38)**—any council would have benefited by her presence. 2° **Is móre mo mian é cios tusa βεῖτ ῖά ράὸ san liom (FSA.)**—I desire to hear it all the more since you tell me that. 3° **Clá'cu é cročai nó é leogaint saor is roḡa lib?**—which is your choice, to have him hanged or acquitted?

(c) After **is** **φύ**=is worth, is worthy of, and speaking generally, wherever there is logical, without grammatical, apposition—**ní φύ ἰ é**—it is not worth it.

**196.—The personal pronouns:—**

(a) In virtual Nom.—1° **Ὅί ᾶτας μόρ αῖρ ιαὸ οο τεᾶτ (AR. 8)**—he was delighted that they came. 2° **τά κατὺ ορμ ἰ τὰβαιρτ ριαμ ὀό (bη. 803)**—I'm sorry I ever gave her to him. 3° **Ὅί κατὺ ἀρ na ῖαεὸil ιαὸ οο οὐλ ᾶς κόμ saor (AR. 89)**—the Irish were sorry that they (the enemy) got off so lightly.

(b) As A. of Extent in Space.—**AR siublaís é ḡo leir?**—did you walk the whole way?

**197.**—The G. forms are usually either:—

(a) Possessive:—*mo leabhar-sa*—my book, or—

(b) Subjective:—*is m'óire mo mian é cíos*—my desire to hear it is all the greater.

(c) Objective:—*táchtar cum b'ur marbtha*—they're going to kill you.

(d) Partitive (but only within certain limits):—*a leath*—half of it (them); *a b'furmór*—the most of them. Generally partitive *de* or *as* (with D. of course):—*an cuib is mó acu*; *a lán asainn*—many of us; *cuib asaiib*—some of you.

When the n. is V. the G. of the personal pronoun is usually not expressed in mod. I.—*a t'igearna Dia*—my Lord God; *a Dia na glóire*—O! my God Almighty; *a Cáit a laoḡ*—my dear Cáit. In—*ár n-atair atá ar neamh*—*ár* is retained on account of its theological importance.

**198** (a) The D. forms are found (suffixed) with those preps, that governed the D. alone; never after *ar*, sometimes after *in*.

(b) These prons. as well as nouns, may be in the virtual A. (**176**, c).

(c) Besides the ordinary emphatic particles, *féin* is sometimes attached:—1° *Cuair sé féin 7 iad san ar bórb na luinge* (CMO. 254)—Both He and they embarked. 2° *B'íodar aradon ann, é féin 7 í féin*—They were both there, he and she (man and wife).

(d) For the conjunctive and disjunctive uses of 3 sg. and 3 pl. forms, see **110**.

### Prolepsis (199—216).

**199** (a) The first use of the personal pronouns was analeptic, *i.e.*, retrospective, referring to some person, place, thing, group or name already mentioned. Prolepsis means the anticipatory use, referring to a noun, pronoun, phrase or clause to follow, and pronouns so used are called proleptic.

(b) The general rule governing prolepsis may be stated thus:—1° When the proleptic pronoun is N. or A. governed by a transitive vb., the “term” is likewise

N. or A. 2° When the proleptic pron. is G. D. A. governed by a prep., or absolute, then the term is absolute.

(c) The following pronouns are used proleptically in mod. I.—A.—*é, í, iad, ead*. B.—*sé*. C.—*san*. D.—*so, seo*. E.—*é sin*. F.—*sioé (sioí, sioiad)*. G.—The 3 sg. G. pron. *a*. H.—The 3 pl. G. pron. *a*. I.—The suffixed prons. (D. or A.) after many preps., notably, *de, acu, air, uime, leis, cuige, amhlaid*.

**200.—Proleptic *é, í, iad, ead*:—**

1° All four are used in Identification Sentences to anticipate the predicate in Types I, II, III, VIII, IX, and X. (See Syntax of the Copula).

2° *é, í* and *iad* are also used proleptically to anticipate:—(a) the subject in interrog. sentences:—*Cad é an áit as ar tuisaís cúḡaimh an mada so?* (Lúc. 42)—Where did you bring this dog from? (b) Sometimes outside interrog. sentences:—*Is líonmair iad a mbuḡne* (TbC. 148)—numerous are their battalions. But the next sentence has, without any proleptic pron.—*is gléineadḁ tairḁneam a n-éirí 7 a n-arm*—their armour and weapons gleam brightly.

3° In other than is sentences *é* is used proleptically:—(a) In the Nom.—*Ní beir orm é tadbairt le ráḁ ḡoib gur ḡeineas é*—I shan't have to give them to say that I did it. (b) In the A.—*Dein é fógairt go scuirfar an cime cum báis*—have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death. (c) Virtual N.—*Tá ádas orḁa é beir le ráḁ acu go bfeacadar an rí*—they are glad to have it to say that they saw the king. (d) Absolute:—*Tá a fíos acu é beir socair go ndaorfar é*—they know it is settled that he will be condemned. (e) Appositional N.—*Tá sé ag soilleadaint orm é beir socair, go . . .* I'm worried that they have arranged that . . .

N.B.—In all these exx. the “term” is to be parsed according to rule given in 199 (b).

**201.—Proleptic *sé*:—**(a) *Tá sé uaigneac a beir folam* (UP.)—its a lonesome thing to be empty. (b) *An té a mbeir sé na cinneamain é croḁḁ, ca báirḁtear go bráḁ é* (UP.)—He who is destined to be hanged will

never be drowned! (c) *níl sé ceart agat an sgeál do ghlacadh óm bog* (AR. 40)—you should not take things so easily. (d)—*bí sé an-áiseamail aige áit dá sórt beic aige le leireada a sgríobhadh ann* (Smb. 129)—he found it very convenient to have such a place to write letters in.

**202.**—Proleptic *san*:—*ná cuirimis san de masla ar ár nglóire go bteicfimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. *San* denotes “the distant object.” For the Christian “to shirk the cross” is an odious thing, and should be put far from him. *San* is here utterly contemptuous.

**203.**—Proleptic *so, seo*:—*1° Cad a tús so dómsa máthair mo tisearna do tadt ag triall orm?* (CS. 140)—Whence is this to me that the Mother of my Lord should come to me? *So* denotes that which is near the speaker. Pleasant things are brought near in thought and imagination. *2° Ac cuireadh so buairt ort, san tu beic óm mair ná óm h-airead ort féin 7 ba ceart do buine déimíreac a beic i seirbís Dé* (Im. 224)—But be troubled about this, that thou art not as good or as watchful over thyself as a devout person should be in God’s service.

Good advice is brought “near the mind’s eye.” Note that *so* is much stronger than either *sé*, or *é*.

**204.**—Proleptic *é sin*:—*1° Agus má’s fíor é, a fíor tuis, cad é sin d’aoinne eile sin?* (TBC. 16)—And if it’s true, Mr. Steward, what’s that to anyone else? *2° Cad é sin duitse 7 dómsa san?* (CMO. 110)—What is that to thee or to Me? In these exx. *é sin* is primarily analeptic, but *sin, san*, are added at the end to satisfy the proleptic tendency of *é sin*. When *é sin* is analeptic it refers ordinarily to a M. (or orig. neut.) noun. But when proleptic, it may refer to either gender, either number, and any of the three persons:—*3° Cad é sin dúinne éusa?* (CS. 21)—What art Thou to us? *Cad é sin dúinne sibse?*—What are ye to us? *Cad é sin daoidse í siúd?*—What is such a woman to you?

4° This proleptic *é sin* (preceded by *cað*) often anticipates another *cað* (*cia*) question:—(a) *Cað é sin ðó san cað a ðéanfaið an árd-rígeačt?* (N. 296)—What is it to him how it fares with the High-Kingship? (b) *Cað é sin ðúinne cia'cu 'táčar socair air nó ná fuiltear* (N. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? N.B.—Pred. of 1st is.—*Cað . . . ðúinne*. Subj.—*é sin* (proleptic): Real subj.—*cia'cu . . . fuiltear*. Pred. of 2nd is (understood with *cia*)—*cia'cu . . . fuiltear*. Subj.—*é, understood*.

**205.**—Proleptic *siðé* (*siðí, siðiað*):—:—*Siðé is mó a choisceann sólás ó ðia ar čeačt čužat, a ðeacračt leat iompáil čun úrnuižče* (Im. 150)—This is what mostly prevents heavenly consolation from reaching you, the difficulty you experience in turning to prayer. Note that *siðé* is stronger than *is é*.

**206.**—The proleptic G. sg. *ā*:—There are three uses:—

I.—Before a vb. n. to anticipate the object of the action (when this is a phrase or clause which cannot be inflected); also before nouns like *burðeacās* which imply action.

II.—Before a n. denoting quality, quantity, time, intensity, meaning, and similar notions, to anticipate—(a) the action itself (verb); (b) a noun which is not a noun of action at all; (c) a pronoun.

III.—Before a noun denoting state, condition, etc., to anticipate a *čá* clause.

**207.**—Before a verbal noun:—1° *ðioð a fíos an méro seo ažadð zo ðfuil rígeačt ðé i n-āčamaireačt* (CMð. 314)—Know ye this, that the Kingdom of God is at hand. 2° *čiz liom a ráð leat zo ðfillfíð mé féin* (Smb. 112)—I can tell you I shall return myself. 3° In Conn. I. proleptic *ā* is sometimes absent:—*āž iarraðð ar an easboc smačt a čur ar an sažart* (Smb. 125)—requesting the bishop to keep the curate in order. Strict I. idiom requires *žá iarraðð*.

**208.**—Before equivalently vb. nouns:—1° *ā ðia,*

beirim a buíðeacás leat ná fuilim-se mar an cúib eile  
 de sna daoine (CmD. 359)—God, I thank Thee that  
 I am not like the rest of men. 2° Cad é a b'ríg feall  
 Concubair seacás an feall so? (TBC. 42)—What signi-  
 fies C's. treachery compared with this?

**209.**—Before a non-vb. noun:—1° Agus a liachtaiḡe  
 bean áluinn bí sa tír! (Smb. 153)—And there were so  
 many fair women in the land! 2° Bí iongna a zcroiðe  
 orḡa a f'eadbas òineaduar an zno (S. 183)—They were  
 amazed that they did the thing so well. 3° In U. and  
 Conn. I. instead of proleptic a, we often find the fol-  
 lowing:—Cuirniḡ sí anois ar cóim minic is duḡairt sí  
 le na mac (Smb. 34)—She thought now of how often she  
 had told her son (=Munster I.—ar a miniciḡe aduḡairt;  
 or—air, cad é a miniciḡe).

**210.**—Anticipating a “τά” clause:—1° iongna orḡa  
 a f'aid atáim uaḡa (TBC. 252)—surprised that I am so  
 long away from them. 2° Cad é an beann a beaḡ aise  
 siú ar uisge te, 7 a t'eo atá an áit as a t'áinig se?  
 (S. 113)—What should he care about hot water, con-  
 sidering the heat of the place whence he came?

**211.**—ḡá=however, notwithstanding, etc.—This is  
 simply proleptic a preceded by the prep. do or de.  
 At first a was analeptic. E.g.—i zcaḡ ḡá t'ruime, i  
 n-éigin ḡá ḡéire, i spéirlinn ḡá òéine (N.)—In battle  
 for (all) its heaviness, in stress for (all) its sharpness,  
 in combat for (all) its sternness. Here, caḡ, éigin,  
 spéirlinn are D. When a is proleptic these nouns become  
 absolute:—ḡá t'ruime caḡ, ḡá ḡéire éigin, ḡá òéine  
 spéirlinn. Take the Eng. sentence:—For all his clever-  
 ness, he has made a mistake. The I. for this is like the  
 E. with one important difference:—ḡá ḡastaḡt é, tá  
 dearmad óanta aise. The E. “he” is rendered in  
 aise, and the I. é is not in the E. at all. There is another  
 difference. When the E. possessive “he” changes for  
 gender, number and person, “his” must change also.  
 Thus—For all *her* cleverness, she has made a mistake.  
 If I. followed the same scheme we should have—ḡá



ḡASTAČT (í) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AICI. So—D'ÁR NḡASTAČT (sinn) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AḡAINN—for all *our* cleverness, etc. But this is not done. The 3 sg. form DÁ ḡASTAČT is *generalized* for both genders and numbers and all three persons. Once the principle of Generalization is understood the whole matter becomes quite simple. Examples:—1° DÁ FEABAS RÍ BÍONN DROC-ŮINE ÉIGIN AR A ČÍ (FSA.)—No matter how good a king may be, there is always some evil person to attack him. 2° DÁ LUḡEAD ČU, NÍ LEANŮ TU—You may be small, but you're no child! 3° CUIRPČEAC ULC IS EADŮ É, DÁ ŠLEAMÁINE A ḡIALL 7 DÁ ÓIGE A FÉAČAINT (TBC. 107)—He's a vicious wretch, though his jaw is so smooth and his look so young.

**212.—Proportion:**—Proportion sentences like “the more the merrier” are expressed in mod. I. by the formula:—DÁ . . . . IS EADŮ IS . . . . This is a further use of proleptic A found in DÁ:—1° DÁ LUATČAČT A ŮEIMÍŮ ČIAR SA ŮAILE IS EADŮ IS FEARR É (TBC. 118)—The sooner we are back at home, the better. 2° DŮ ČUIḡ SÍ . . . . DÁ MÉIŮ 7 DÁ FÍRINNIGE É AN MOLAŮ ḡURB EADŮ IS MÓ AN ČONNTAŮAIRČ (CMŮ. 32)—She knew that the greater and the juster the praise, the greater is the danger (to humility). 3° DÁ LUATČAČT A ŮEIOÍS IMČIḡČE AS AN ḡCAČAIR, ḡURB EADŮ B'FEARRA ŮÓIŮ FÉIN É (ŮN. 718)—that the sooner they left the city the better it would be for themselves. In order to understand the genesis of this formula, let us consider three stages:—

(a) The Mathematical stage:—DÁ FÁIŮ A RAḡAIŮ SIŮ AR AḡAIŮ IS EADŮ IS ḡIORRA ŮEIŮ SIŮ DON ŮAILE—The farther you advance the nearer you'll be to home. Here we are measuring spacial distance by spacial distance, and the measurement is mathematically accurate. The sentence is of the Type—PVpS. It is the emphatic form of—Is DÁ FÁIŮ A RAḡAIŮ SIŮ AR AḡAIŮ IS ḡIORRA ŮEIŮ SIŮ DON ŮAILE. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—Is É A FÁIŮ A RAḡAIŮ SIŮ AR AḡAIŮ AN MÉIŮ SLIḡE N-ARB ḡIORRA ŮEIŮ SIŮ DON ŮAILE ŮE. The subj. is absolutely clear—AN MÉIŮ SLIḡE . . . . ŮE, i.e., the distance by which you'll be nearer home; the pred. is equally clear—

Δ ḡΔΙΘ Δ . . . . ΔḡΔΙΘ—the distance you shall advance, and the statement is mathematically accurate.

(b) The Intermediate stage:—ḐÁ ḡΔΙΘ Δη ΛÁ is εΔḐ is ḡΙΟΡΡΑ Δη οΙḐḑe—the longer the day, the shorter the night. Here a certain “looseness” has crept in. When we analyse it we shall find an inexactitude which was not in the previous sentence. The unemphatic form is—Is ḐÁ ḡΔΙΘ Δη ΛÁ is ḡΙΟΡΡΑ Δη οΙḐḑe. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—Is É Δ ḡΔΙΘ Δη ΛÁ Δη ḡΔΙΘ η-ΔΡḐ ḡΙΟΡΡΑ Δη οΙḐḑe ḑe. The subj. is clear now—Δη ḡΔΙΘ . . . . ḑe—the length by which the night is shorter; and the pred. is—Δ ḡΔΙΘ Δη ΛÁ—the length of the day (*lit.*—the length of it—the day). But this is not true, taken literally. The length by which the night is shorter is not the length of the day, but rather the increase in length. The formula which was “above suspicion” in (a) is now used with a little latitude—that is all.

(c) The Final stage:—The formula is now used for all kinds of proportion:—ḐÁ ḡΔΙΘ Δ λεοḡḑAR ι η-ΔΙΣḡe léi É, is εΔḐ is ḑÁNA leanḑΔΙΘ sí ḑe (S. 119)—The longer she’s let off with it, the more brazenly she’ll stick to it.—Emphatic form of—Is ḐÁ ḡΔΙΘ . . . . É, is ḑÁNA . . . . ḑe. And this is the complex elliptical form of—Is É Δ ḡΔΙΘ . . . . É, Δη μέηΘ . . . . leanḑΔΙΘ sí ḑe ḑe—the extent to which she’ll stick to it more brazenly is the length of time she’s let off! That “time” should be a fit measure of “increase in boldness” is only accidental. The real causes of the increase in boldness were in operation as time went on, and so the passage of time is used loosely as the measure of the increase.

The following exx. from U.I. recall some of the formulae used in early mod. I.—1° ḡÍL ḐÁ μέΔḐ Δ’ τεΔḑΤΑΙΡΕ ηΔḑ móηΘe ηΔ ḡηḐḑuḡḑe (*sic*) (UP.)—The greater the envoy, the more important the business. 2° ḐÁ móηΘe μέΔḐΔS tu ΔR Δ’ ḡRÁḡḐΔ ḡΔη ḑḐḡḡ, ḐÁ móηΘe íslḡeΔS tu (UP.)—The more you elevate an ugly person of no merit, the more you lower him. With móηΘe, here, cf.—’SΔ ḡCÚ ḡLACA RE ηΔḡΔΙΘ ḐÁ móIRE (ΔÓR. 66)—And their hound in battle against the greatest foe. For

K's six ways of expressing Proportion, see "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. IV, pp. 38-41.

**213.**—The 3 pl. G. pronoun **Δ**:—1° **Δn** **ṽtiocfaiṽ** **Δ** **ṽfurmór** **so slán ó'n ṽcoṽaṽ** (TBC. 29)—Whether the most of these will come safely out of the war. 2° **ṽí** **Δṽam** **Δ** **ṽcoimneas san ṽe mṽcaibṽ uasal** (TBC. 2)—I had as many more sons of Nobles (Here, **so** and **san** are absolute).

**214.**—The Suffixed Pronouns:—**I. ṽe**:—(a) Apart from Comparatives:—**ṽí** **ṽeimniṽṽeacṽ** **ṽe**, **ṽo n-oscalófar** **Δ** **ṽuite** **láiṽreacṽ** (BN. 585)—Be assured that his eyes will be opened promptly. (b) With Comparatives:—1° **ní** **ṽeadar an fearṽṽe** **iaṽ** **ar ṽuṽas** **ṽóibṽ** (S. 56)—I wonder are they anything the better of all I gave them. 2° **ṽa** **móṽṽe** **mo ṽonas** **ar an saṽṽal é** (Smṽ. 30)—My earthly happiness would have been all the greater (é, abs.). 3° **is** **ṽeṽṽe** **ṽo'n mṽrat** **Δ** **ṽúbṽaṽ** (UP.)—The blanket is the warmer for being doubled! (Said when relations marry). The subj. here is **é** (understood). Another form—**is** **ṽeṽṽe** **an brat** **Δ** **ṽúbṽaṽ**—has **an brat** as subj. In both, **Δ** **ṽúbṽaṽ** is the "term" of proleptic **ṽe**, and is absolute. (c) **ṽe** is sometimes analeptic:—**ṽura'** **móṽṽe** **munnṽṽir na cille** (UP.)—May the churchyard folk increase by him! (I.e., may he soon join them! ). (d) And sometimes both analeptic and proleptic:—1° **má** **noṽṽann fear** **Δ** **rún** **ṽá mṽnai**, **is** **ṽiorraṽṽe** **Δ** **saṽṽal é**—If a man reveal his secret to his wife, his life is thereby shortened. 2° **ṽá** **mṽeaṽ** **ṽo** **ṽeo cóm** **oíreacṽ** **leṽ'** **mṽrbṽ**, **ṽa** **ṽiaṽṽe** **ṽo** **saṽṽal é** (Aes.)—Had you been as straight in life as you are in death, your life would have been all the longer. 3° **má** **ṽainimíṽ** **roinnṽ** **ṽáirí** **aisci**, **is** **fearṽṽe** **í** **é**—If we make her laugh a little she's all the better for it.

**II. —Δcu**:—1° **Caṽ** **é** **sin** **ṽúinne** **cia'cu** **'ṽáṽar** **soṽair** **air nó ná** **ṽuitṽear?** (n. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? In this type of sentence a direct rel. is used with the affirmative verb, and the neg. rel. with the second verb. This is due to sentences where the rel. had a true modal meaning. E.g., **ní**

FEADAR CIA'CU ðEINEANN SÉ É NÓ NÁ ðEINEANN—(I don't know whether he does it or not) is due to—CIA'CU MAR SEO NÓ MAR SIÚD A ðEINEANN SÉ É—where the subj. is—AN CUMA N-A NðEINEANN SÉ É (the way in which he does it). In sentence 1° above, neither 'TÁČAR nor FUILTEAR involves any real relative meaning. 2° PÉ 'CU TIOCFAD SAN MAR SIN NÚ NÁ TIOCFAD (AR. 12)—whether that should happen or not. 3° PÉ 'CU BÍODAR CIONNTAC NÚ NÁ RAÐADAR (AR. 17)—whether they were guilty or not.

III.—AIR, leis, uime, cuige, etc.—1° AS BRAČ AIR, SO NGEODAD SÉ A PÁIRT (MAC. 54)—in the hope that he would take his part. 2° NÍOR FÉADAS DON TUAIRIM A ČADAIRT DÓ, CÉRB É AN BÍČEAMNAC—I couldn't guess who the villain was. 3° IS UMIE ČEANA RUŽ DIA AN DADOR-BREČ SO AR NA DADINIB, TRÉ ČAILL A ČÁNA DO'N ČEAD AČAIR Ó'R FÁSADAR (KTB.)—God passed this judgment of condemnation on mankind, because their first parents broke His Commandment. N.B.—In the I. sentence, there is prep. apposition.

IV.—AMLAIO:—When the subject of *is* is omitted with proleptic *amlaio* a pleonastic direct rel. precedes the following vb. If neg. the particle is *ná*, *nač*, *nár*. This rel. does not appear when the subj. of *is* is expressed. The insertion of the rel. is due either:—(a) to modal clauses after *analeptic* *amlaio*.—IS MAIT LIOM É ŽÁ ðÉANAM MAR SIN, 7 IS AMLAIO A ðEINEANN SÉ É DE ŽNÁC—I like him to do it like that, and that's how he usually does it. (b) Or in compensation for the modal rel. always contained in the suppressed subj. Various meanings are expressed by proleptic *amlaio*:—

1° Descriptive:—IS AMLAIO A BÍ CRUINNŘČE 'SAN ÁIT SIN RÓMPA SLUAŽ DADINE (CMO. 254)—They found there gathered together a crowd.

2° Removal of wrong impression:—NÍOR ðEIN SÉ DON BODAD AR AN ŽČAINNT. IS AMLAIO A ČUIR SÉ I BFEROM Í NÍBA DAINŽNE (CMO. 260)—He did not tone down the words. On the contrary, he insisted on their literal meaning more strictly.

3° The reason:—AN AMLAIO A BÍS ANA-ŠAIOBIR (LUC. 46)—Is it because you were very wealthy?

4° Surprise:—*An amlaiò nac eol òuit caò iaò na cačanna a čagann uaiò?* (lúc. 56)—Don't you really know what temptations it causes?

5° Hurt feelings:—*An amlaiò ba čeart òo rí teačt annso lomračta?* (lúc. 23)—Would you have Royalty come here naked? (Surely not!)

6° Satire:—*An amlaiò ba čeart òom žan bás ò'fažál nuair ná raiò an t-airgeað ažam?* (lúc. 41)—I suppose I did wrong to die, not having the dues! (Charon's fee).

7° Indignation:—*An amlaiò a òeir-se ar an doinne amáin a maioiòfiò žo òtáinis sé anall i n-aisge?* (lúc. 41)—Am I to suppose that you are the only one to boast that he got across (the Styx) free?

8° Contempt:—*An amlaiò a measfaò siò òeic aš cainnt žo òtí žo žcruaòfaio an sioc na carbail ažaiò!* (TBC. 61)—I suppose you mean to keep on talking till the frost hardens your gums!

9° The Result:—*Is amlaiò a òein piasaí òioò istiž na čorp (Cò. 5)*—The result was, they turned into worms in his body.

10° The Unexpected:—*Is amlaiò a òí sé féin žá òaoraò féin róam* (lúc. 45)—He actually condemned himself in advance of me. (Unlike the others, who blamed someone else for their own follies).

11° Explanatory:—*Is amlaiò a òí òeamān éigin i seilò innti (Cmò. 330)*—The reason (of her infirmity) was, she was possessed by a devil.

In Conn. I. "is é an čaoi" often takes the place of "is amlaiò":—(a) *'Sé an čaoi žur réabao ruaož žosaž an òeròlín orm (Smb. 24)*—The fact is, the first string of my violin has broken.

(b) *Δčt is é an čaoi žo òtáinis seiròe na žlór siúo (Ibid. 31)*—But rather a bitterness crept into the woman's voice.

(c) *'Sé an čaoi žur čačtuiž sé a òean (Ibid. 159)*—the fact is, he choked his wife.

(d) *Ńó, an é an čaoi žur òož doiòneas na háite 7 na n-aimsire a croiòe? (Ibid. 17)*—Or, rather did the delightfulness of the place and of the weather affect her heart? In these exx. the following clause is preceded by a conj. So, when "is amlaiò" is used:—1° *An*

AMLAIÕ ZO RAĨ AN SEAN-BEIÕLÍN AS SEINÑT UAĨÕ FÉIN SAN  
 DORCÃDAS? (Smb. 7)—Could it be that the old fiddle  
 was playing of itself in the dark? 2° B'FÉIOIR ZO MB'  
 AMLAIÕ ZUR CUIR ZNÉ B'RONAC̃ NA MNÁ BÍ SÍOS (*sic*) FAOI  
 COS̃ LEIS (*Ibid.* 17)—Perhaps the fact was that the  
 doleful look of the woman below checked it (the bird's  
 song).

Is AMLAIÕ, with subj. expressed:—1° Is AMLAIÕ MAR  
 ATÁ SÉ, NÍ FÉIOIR TEAC̃T SUAS LÉI (LÚC. 13)—As a matter  
 of fact you can't reach her. 2° Is AMLAIÕ MAR ATÁ AN  
 SGEAL, NÍ MÓR DÚINN ÁRDÁN ÉGIN D'FAGÁIL (LÚC. 48)—This  
 is how things stand—we must procure some elevation.  
 3° Is AMLAIÕ MAR ATÁ AN SGEAL, NÍ DLEAG̃TAC̃ SA TÍR SEO  
 AN SÓSAR DO PÓSÃÕ AR BÉALAĨÕ AN TSÍNÑSIR (BH. 57)—  
 The fact is, it is not lawful in this country for the junior  
 to marry before the senior.

**215.**—“NÍ MIS̃DE A RÁ̃Õ” (one may well think) is  
 generally, in Munster I., followed by NÁ (NAC̃, NÁR):—  
 1° NÍ MIS̃DE A RÁ̃Õ NÁ ZUR BINN AN CEOL LEIS CEOL NA  
 CAINÑTE SIN (AR. 66)—One may well say that the music  
 of these words was real music to him. 2° NÍ MIS̃DE A  
 RÁ̃Õ NÁ ZO RAĨÕ AN TEASPÃC̃ 7 AN MÓRÁIL BAIÑTE DÍÕB̃ I  
 ZCEART (AR. 84)—One may well say that their wanton  
 pride was lowered completely.

When the final clause is neg. there will be two  
 negatives:—

3° NÍ MIS̃DE A RÁ̃Õ NÁ NÁ RAĨÕ AON F̃ONN OR̃C̃A TEAC̃T  
 ARÍS—One may well say they had no desire to come  
 again.

With these uses of NÁ, cf. the affirmative NÁ of IS  
 sentences (247).

**216.**—Further remarks on proleptic Δ:—1° In mod. I.  
 its “term” is usually absolute. In O.I. a G. in gram-  
 matical apposition was common, but this is allowed now,  
 only after Δ LÁN, much, many, and Δ CUILE, more, fol-  
 lowed by an **indefinite** G. Δ LÁN AIR̃G̃IÕ—a lot of money:  
 Δ CUILE AIMSIRE—more time. But—Δ LÁN DẼN AIR̃GEAD̃  
 ÚÕ—a lot of that money; Δ CUILE DEM' AIMSIÑ-SE—  
 more of my time. 2° In—Δ OIREAD̃ SAN AIMSIRE, AIR̃G̃IÕ

(that much time, money)  $\Delta$  anticipates  $\text{san}$  (abs.) and the G. is governed directly by  $\text{oireadh}$ . In  $\text{dá fáid aimsire}$ , the G. is governed by  $\text{fáid}$  ( $\text{fáid aimsire}$  being opposed to  $\text{fáid slíge}$ ). 3° In expressions like— $\text{bí sí á innsear conus mar fuair séadna an sparán}$ —She was telling how S. had secured the purse— $\Delta$  is required by I. idiom.  $\text{innsear}$  (being a n.) takes the G., and as the following clause cannot assume a G. form, the relation was expressed clearly by placing the pronominal G. object ( $\Delta$ ) before  $\text{innsear}$ . 4° Proleptic  $\Delta$ , thus established, spread to cases where such necessity did not exist. Thus O.I. a masse in  $\text{chuirp}$ —the beauty of the body. But mod. I. does not use both proleptic “ $\Delta$ ” and a (definite) G. If  $\Delta$  is used the “term” is absolute; if G. (def.) is used there is no  $\Delta$ :— $\text{maise an cuirp: dá maise an corp}$ , etc. 5° The two modes of expression exist side by side but differ in meaning:— $\text{bríge an sgeal}$ —the meaning of the business (in itself); but  $\Delta \text{ bríge an sgeal}$ —the significance of the matter (in reference to other things).

### 217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns:—

1° **Sin** has its s- aspirated sometimes, contrary to phonetic law:—(a)  $\text{nac sin í rígeadh beethseubub 'na dá cuir}$  (CMO. 321)—Does not that mean B.’s Kingdom divided in two! (b)  $\text{Deir sé gur b sin é díreach é}$ —he says that’s just it.

2° **Súo**, **siúo** are often contemptuous:—(a)  $\text{ní blaisfir aon fear acu súo mo bia}$  (CMO. 337)—Not one of those shall taste my food! (b)  $\text{'San easonóir a tusaodar súo eile nó}$  (CMO. 222)—In regard to the dishonour those others offered Him.

3° We sometimes find **siúo**, **sin**, **so**, close together:— $\text{ac o'fanaid sé siúo go dtí go dtéigead na daoine soir as triall air. ní mar sin nó so}$  (CMO. 171)—But the former would wait till people went over to him. Not so with the latter.

(Here  $\text{sé siúo}$  refers to the Baptist, relegated to a distance by the thought of Jesus;  $\text{so}$  refers to Christ who was engrossing their thoughts and  $\text{sin}$  to the Baptist’s habit already mentioned).

4° **So** and **súo** are sometimes used to denote the

extreme limits of “the universe of discourse”:—(a) *Ṯ’Áḡ; san í ḡan aon cúmas aici ar so ná súṽ ṽo ráṽ le h-Ulṽaib* (TBC. 188)—This left her powerless to say one thing or another to the Ultonians. (b) *Abair-se le Fearḡus, a Fiacha, ḡo ḡcuirfar so 7 súṽ orṽa* (TBC. 123)—Do you, Fiacha, tell Fergus that they shall be delayed in both ways (referred to by Fiacha).

5° **So, súṽ, san, may,** like other pronouns, be absolute:—(a) *Má’s cun san ṽínnsint ṽom a tuḡaṽ annso mé, ní misṽe ṽom beic aḡ imṽeaṽt* (TBC. 93)—If I was brought here simply to be told this, I may as well be going (b) *Is móṽe mo mian é clos tusa beic ḡá ráṽ san liom* (FSA). *san*, abs.

6° Sometimes governed directly by preps.—(a) *ṽar so 7 súṽ*—By this and by that! (by all the oaths). (b) *Níor ṽeaḡas ann ó soim*—I never went since. In—*ḡo ṽtí seo*, up to this, the pron. is N.

**218.—Interrogative Pronouns:**—Cf. Interrog. Adjs. 192-3. The clauses introduced by interrog. prons. may be N.G.D.A., or they may be absolute:—1° **Nom.** (a) Subj. N. to is:—*Is eol ṽaoib conus mar a cuir sé cómaṽt ṽur namad an neamníṽ ar ṽur son*—You know how that, for your sakes, He annihilated the power of your enemies. (The interrog. in *conus* is an adj. But see 220). *Is cuma cad ṽéarfair*—It matters not what you say.

(b) **Pred. N.** to is:—*‘Sé ruṽ is mó aṽa aḡ ṽéanam buarṽa ṽom, ná cia raḡaib aḡ triall air*—What’s worrying me most is, just who will go to him.

(c) **Appositional N.**—*ṽa sé socair aige ceana féin cad a ṽéanfar sé*—He has already decided on his course of action.

(d) **Virtual N.**—*ṽí ionḡna orainn cad cuige an t-uisge ḡo léir* (CMṽ. 112)—We wondered what all the water was for.

2° **Genitive:**—(a) *I ṽtaob cad tá le ṽéanam aḡainn* (CMṽ. 124)—as to what we have to do. (b) *I ṽtaob cé ṽí ann* (CMṽ. 155)—as to who it was. (c) *I ṽtaob cé ṽó ḡur ceart ṽó an ríḡeaṽt a ṽabairt* (bh. 254)—as to whom he should give the Kingdom.

3° **Dative:**—(a) *Ar cad cuige ṽó beic aḡ ṽéanam ar*



CUR-ċré-ċéile go léir (CM̃. 99)—as to why he was causing all this confusion. (b) AR CAD É AN SAĞAS AN BEANNÚ SAN (CM̃. 21)—what manner of salutation this was. (c) ΤΑΙΜ ΒΟΪ ΑΡ CAD Α ΜΕΑΣΑΝ ΔΟΙΝΝΕ ΕΙΛΕ (TBC. 163)—my mind is easy as to other people's opinions.

4° **Accusative**:—(a) ΘΟΥΔΑΙΤ ΣΕ ΛΕΟ: “CAD CUIGE GO ΡΑΒΔΑΒΑΙΡ ΑΡ ΜΟ ΛΟΓΪ?” (CM̃. 72)—He said to them:—“Why did ye seek Me?” (b) ΙΝΝΙΣ ΘΥΙΝΝ CÉ ΒΪ ΔΝΝ—Tell us who was there. (c) ΝΙΟΡ CUIGEADAR CÉ ΒΪ ΔCΥ (CM̃. 305)—They knew not whom they had to deal with.

5° **Absolute**:—(a) ΖΆ ΦΙΑΦΡΥΘΕ ΘΕ CΑ ΘΤΙΟCΦΑΘ ΝΑ ΗΥΙC GO ΛΕΙΡ (CM̃. 358)—Asking Him whence all the evils should come. (b) ΤΆ ΄ΦΙΟC ΑΪΑΜ CÉ ΗΕ CΥ (CM̃. 155)—I know who you are. (c) ΑΡ ΜΙCΘΕ ΛΕΑΤ Α Θ΄ΙΝΝCΙΝΤ ΘΟΜ CÉ ΗΕ CΥ? (BH. 573)—Would you mind telling me who you are?

219 (a).—Ro is used by analogy with βα in interrog. sentences like—CΙΑΡΘ ΙΑΘ ΝΑ Η-ΥΑΙCΤΕ ΙΑCΑCΤΑ? (CM̃. 57)—Who were the foreign nobles? This is due to questions containing an oblique rel.—CΆΡΘ΄ ΔC ΙΑΘ, 7 CΕΡΘ΄ ΙΑΘ ΦΕΙΝ (CM̃. 57)—*Where they were from*, and who they were. Cf. CΙΑΡ΄ Θ΄ΙΟΘ CΥ? = CΙΑ (ΗΙΑΘ ΑΝ ΜΥΙΝΝCΙΡ) ΔΡ΄ Θ΄ΙΟΘ CΥ?—Who are the people from whom you are sprung? (b) The pres. tense of is is often used, though dependent on past.—ΝΪ ΘΟΥΔΑΙΤ ΣΕ CAD Ε ΑΝ SAĞAS Ε—He didn't say what sort it was. But the past occurs also:—CAD ΑΒ΄ ΙΑΘ ΝΑ ΦΙΟΛΑΙΡ (CM̃. 356)—What did the eagles signify? (c) Instead of CIA'CU, we find CAD Ε . . . . ΔCΥ:—CAD Ε ΑΝ ΪΝΙΟΜ ΦΟΪΑΝCΑ ΔCΥ GO ΜΕΑΣΑΝ CΙΘ ΪΑΒΆΙΛ ΘΕ CΛΟCΑΙΘ ΙΟΝΝΑΜ ΜΑΡ ΪΕΑΙΛ ΑΙΡ? (CM̃. 333)—Because of which of these good works do ye think of stoning Me?

220 (a).—Exclamatory “How!”—1° CAD Ε ΜΑΡ ΙC ΘΕΑCΑΙΡ ΘΟ ΛΥCΤ CΑΙΘΒΡΙC ΘΥΛ ΙCΤΕΑC Ϊ ΡΪΪΕΑCΤ ΘΕΪ! (CM̃. 363)—How difficult it is for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God! 2° CAD Α Θ΄ΦΥΙΛ ΘΕ ΘΔΟΙΜΘ ΘΟ ΜΕΑΙΛΛΑΘ! (Im. 20)—How many have been deceived!

(b) **Conus**, and **conus mar**:—The interrog. in conus (cionnus) is an adj., but we may note here the difference

between *conus* (modal) and *conus mar* (non-modal):—  
 1° *bí míniḡte ḡo soilléir aḡe conus ba cēart an ṽliḡe  
 ṽo cimeáṽ ḡan ṽul ar neamníṽ* (CMṽ. 209)—He had  
 explained clearly how one should prevent the neutraliza-  
 tion of the Law (modal). 2° *Conus mar a bí aḡ éirḡe  
 leo san obair a cūḡ sé le ṽéanam ṽóib* (CMṽ. 254)—how  
 that they had succeeded in the work He had given them  
 to do. (non-modal).

**221.—Indefinite Pronouns:—**Δον is sometimes used pronominally:—1° ní creirfinn-se ó don naç n-éireoçaðò éamonn slán (CCU. 25)—I shouldn't have believed from anyone but that é. would have survived. 2° ζαν don acu ας éirçe slán (*Ibid.*). 3° Is don mise 7 an τ-Δçair (CMD. 333)—The Father and I are one. 4° brisfirò don ðe slioçt na mná so ðo çeann (CMO. 3)—One of this Woman's offspring shall crush thy head. 5° Don ðem' çáirðið siðe is eaò é (TBC. 149)—He's one of my "supernatural" friends. 6° Agus berò fios ας na ζeintirò zo ðfuil i n-Israel don a ðeineann slánú 7 fuas-ζailt (bñ. 732)—And the Gentiles shall know that there is One in Israel who heals and redeems.

## 222.—The Suffixed Pronouns:—

1° When two prep. pronouns come together one or both may dispense with the emphatic particle:—**ní raib** ðuine ðe ríogra ulað ná raib fuac̃ 7 miosgaib aise riam̃ ðo c̃onnaçtaib, 7 acu ðó (TBC. 14-15)—Not one of the Ulster princes but had always thoroughly detested the Connaught men, and they him. So, when a prep. pron. is added to a verb, and denotes a different person:—**fé mar ba m̃aich lib a ðéanfað ðaoine lib, ðeim̃ò-se leo**—Do unto others as you would have others do unto you.

2° A prep. pron. is often used where Eng. has G. or N.:—(a) Instead of G.—**ḅΔ ṁαιτ̃ leis . . . . ʒo ʒΔRƆΔḅ ΔNAM le colΔinn Δiʒe** (Im. 20)—He would like his soul to separate from his body; **Ḃo ḅris ΔR Δn ḅƆoṛḅne Δcu** (S. 226)—Their patience became exhausted; **Ḃo neΔR-tuiʒ sé ΔinṁiΔNTΔ Δcu** (Ser. 179)—It strengthened their passions; **Is fíOR-ḅeisʒiobuil ΔʒAM siḅ ƆEΔʒOΔ** (ĈS. 249)—Henceforth ye are My true disciples.

(b) Instead of N.—1° *An fáid is beo ar an saogal so óó* (Im. 21)—As long as he is alive in this world. 2° *Do dubaig 7 do gormaig aige* (S. 73)—He became black and blue. 3° *Nuair a gabann don rud beag 'n-ár scoinniú, tuiteann an luí ar an las againn* (Im. 17)—When some trifle goes against us, we collapse utterly.

### 223.—Relative Pronouns:—

I.—We sometimes find the rel. in the A. of Extent in Degree:—(a) *Is maic léi fíos a beic aici i gceart, cao é an líon a táinig sa rí-féinne* (TBC. 36)—She likes to know exactly with what force each warrior-king has come. (b) *Dein airmeas ar an líon a cuadar éarainn soir* (TBC. 63)—Calculate the number (to the extent of) which they have passed us eastwards. (c) *Pé méid a beir tú caillte leis, tabórfad-sa é, nuair a beir mé ag teacht éar n-ais* (Cm. 318)—Whatever you have lost by him, I shall repay you on my return.

II.—The direct relatives are used for the oblique:—A.—In temporal clauses. B.—In modal clauses. C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences. D.—In a somewhat rare construction.

A.—1° *Cá raib an t-airgead an fáid a bíos ag cuardac?* (S. 40)—where was the money while I was searching? (Or the rel. might here be taken as A. of Extent in Time). 2° *Ón lá úd a gab sé ar an mór seisear* (S. 38) since the day he whipped the seven men. 3° *An méid aimsire a bí an t-airgead as do seilb* (S.)—all the time the money was out of your possession. (Cf. 1°). Sometimes, however, we find the oblique rel.—(a) *Um an taca go raib a macnamh críochnuigte* (S. 62)—by the time he had finished his reflections. (b) *I scaiteam na h-aimsire 'n-a raib an cao ar siubal* (Mac. 157)—all the time that the battle was in progress. So, often, in Conn. I.—(c) *Tráa a mbíod an tsaoire beag aige* (Smb. 129)—while he had a little leisure. (d) *An céad uair eile a dtáinig peadar isteach cúici* (Smb. 141)—the next time P. came in to her.

Sometimes we find both direct and oblique forms in one sentence:—1° *Ón lá a tánaí annso 7 gur taraisead*

AS AN leitin mé (Eis. 88)—from the day I came here and was pulled out of the porridge (Or, *sur* may be explained as a conj., with ellipsis, before it, of—7 A RÁINIS). 2° NUAIR A tÁINIS AN t-AM 'n-AR mictio do TADÓIS Ó Ceallais. . . . (N. 24)—when the proper time came for T. O'C. to . . . .

B.—1° DO h-ínnsead conus ab' éigin niam do tógaint AS AN obair sin (N. 245)—He was told how N. had to be removed from this “job.” 2° BÍ iongna A scroibhe ORCA A fearbas A veineadar AN gnó (S. 183)—They wondered much at how well they did the thing. 3° B'féidir SUR véine-de A déanfar AN suibhe, AN teacht-AIREACT DO CUR tÍmceall uait-se (N. 225)—Perhaps they will pray all the harder if the message is sent round from you. 4° IS fearr IS eol duitse é ná mar IS eol d'aoinne eile é—You know it better than anyone else. (The clause—*is eol duitse é* is modal, with *rel.* A understood). 5° But when the compar. clause is itself relative, the following *rel.* clause ceases to be modal, and so the oblique *rel.* is used if the sense requires and allows it:— (a) NÍL aoinne IS fearr SURB eol dó SAN, ná mar DOB eol duitse é (TBC. 1)—No one knows better than you did. (In 4° above the subj. of the 1st *is* is the modal clause—*is eol duitse é*. In 5° (a) the subj. of the 1st *is* is *rel.* A understood, and “*surb eol dó san*” is connected not with *is fearr* but with *aoinne*) (Double *Rel.* Construction, see 223, IV.), and the sense requires the oblique *rel.*—“to whom that is known”). (b) TÁ I n-easnam fós AIR AN níó IS mó n-A bfuil gáó aige leis (Im. 85)—He is still without the thing he needs most.

The sense does not allow the oblique *rel.* when the D. relation appears *before* the compar. (or superl.) clause. With 5° (a) cf.—*Is dó san IS fearr IS eol conus é déanam*—he knows best how to do it. With 5° (b) cf.—*Is le h-airgead IS mó atá gáó anois aige*—it's money he needs most now.—This is because the last two sentences are complex elliptical forms, in which, according to 223, II. C., the direct *rel.* must be used for the oblique. 6° On the other hand, in sentences beginning with *cia*, *cad*, followed by a prep. pron. or prep. phrase, before the compar. (or superl.) clause, we have not complex

elliptical forms, but merely a transference of the prep. from its logical place in the sentence. Hence an oblique rel. may appear in the clause following the compar. or superl. clause:—1° *féadaint cia aige doob' fearr n-a mbeaò an t-ollmucán déanta* (n. 180)—to see who would have made the best preparation. 2° *féadaint cia aige (ba túisge) n-a mbeaò an fosaíoeacht fóganta* (bh. 21)—to see which should (soonest) have the rich pasturage. With these two cf.—Is *asamsa is fearr a beaò an t-ollmucán déanta*—It is I who would have made the best preparation; Is *asatsa is túisge a beaò an fosaíoeacht fóganta*—it is you who would have first secured the rich pasturage.—These are complex elliptical sentences, and therefore have the direct rel. (C. below).

C.—1° *ní de a déanfí rí-ollam*—not he should be made Chief Bard. This=*ní hé* (the person already mentioned) *an té go ndéanfí rí-ollam de*. Here the prep. *de*, which necessitates the obl. rel. (*go*) is in the subj. But in the complex elliptical form *de* is transferred to the pred. and so the direct rel. must appear in the subj. 2° *óir is dóic leo gur as méid a scainnte do h-éistfar leo* (CS. 14)—For they think that in their much speaking they may be heard. This=*gurb é méid a scainnte an níò as a n-éistfar leo*. See remark after 1° above.

D.—1° *cad é an rud a bí bruaídar ar aigne a déanam?*—What did B. intend to do? *b.* is subj. to *bí*, and we might have expected an obl. rel. The anomaly is due to analogy. *Cad é an rud a bí as b. ar aigne a déanam*, would be quite normal. So would—*bí b. ar aigne an rud san a déanam*. We may look upon 1° as a *contamination* of these two (309).

2° *Sin mar a leanfaimís gan contadairt an bótar atá tosnuighe agaimh ar gabáil* (Im. 156)—Thus shall we safely keep to the road we have begun to travel.—Here the rel. may be A. of Extent in Space, after *gabáil*. Cf.—*as gabáil siar an bótar a bíos*—I was going along the road westwards.

III (a).—The obl. rel.  $\Delta^n$ ,  $\Delta^e$  is used in Munster:—

1° Immediately after a prep.—*Do meas na daoine gur é íosa an fáil le n-a raið súil aḡ na lúdaíḡ* (Cmḃ. 256)—The people thought that Jesus was the Prophet for whom the Jews hoped. 2° After *sul*, *sar*—before, lest.—*sul a mbeinn déireanaic* (S.)—lest I should be late. 3° In such sentences as:—*Ciar' dóib tu?*—What's your surname?

(b) In U. and Conn. I. this is the chief obl. rel. in use:—1° *Cé as a dtáinig sé* (Smb. 12)—whence it came. Sometimes *go*, *gur*:—*cén áoi go bfuair mé bás* (Smb. 81)—how I died.

**IV. Double Relative Construction:**—(a) When we say—*Is dóic liom gur scríob duine éigin leictir*—I think someone wrote a letter—the clause *gur . . .* is subj. of *is*. But when *is* becomes rel. this construction must be dropped. *Cia is dóic leat do scríob an leictir?*—Who do you think wrote the letter? Here *is* has already its subj. in rel. *a* (understood), and the following clause cannot be conjunctive (in connection with *is*), but must be relative (in connection with the antecedent of rel.). (b) So—*Dubairt sé go ndéanfað sé é*—He said he would do it. Here the *go*- clause is object of *dubairt*. But when we say—*Cað é an rud adubairt sé a ndéanfað sé?* the object of the vb. is now rel. *a*, and the following clause must be relative (in connection with *rud*), not conjunctive (in connection with *dubairt*). (c) Again, if we wish to say, in I.—He is still without the thing he needs most—there being no superl. (or compar.) adverb in mod. I.—we must have recourse to Double Relative Construction:  *Tá in-easnam fós air an níð*—1° (*a*) is *mó*—2° *n-a bfuil ḡáð aige leis*.

The two conditions required for Double (or Multiple) Relative Construction are:—1° Co-ordination in construction—the relatives must have the same antecedent. 2° Subordination in meaning—each rel. clause must limit the meaning of the other (or others). The following combinations occur:—

1° Both relatives N.—(a) *Ac ní hé an gluaisceán is mó bí aḡ cur air* (Smb. 113)—But it wasn't the motor that worried him most. (b) *Níl aoinne is fearr a táinig*

as ná mise (TBC. 6)—No one escaped better than I did.  
(c) Deín-se anois an ruð is dóic leat is fearr (lúc. 49)—  
Do you now what you think is best.

2° First Rel. N., second A.—(a) Cað ba maic leat a ðéanfaínn duit (CMð. 367)—What would you have me do for you? (b) Iarr orm an níð is maic leat a ðaðrfaínn duit (bh. 477)—Ask me what you wish me to give you.

3° First Rel. A., second N.—(a) b'sin é síl Antoine bí uirri (Smb. 26)—That was what A. thought was wrong with her. (b) A lán scéalaíðeaçta i ðtaob' neice aðeir-tear a duit amaç (CMð. 66)—many stories concerning things which they say happened. (If ðeir-tear is passive both relatives are N.).

4° Both A.—(a) An ruð a meas sé aðéarfaíðís (CMð. 177)—What he thought they'd say. (b) Sin obair nár measas a ðéanfí orainn (TBC. 71)—That's a thing I didn't think would be done to us. (ðéanfí, Autonomous).

5° First Rel. N., second D.—níl aoinne is fearr surb eol dó san ná mar ðob' eol duitse é (TBC. 1)—No one knows that better than you did.

6° First Rel. N., second temporal D.—An fáð ba dóic leis a bí aoinne ðe slíoçt na macabéaç beo (CMð. 9)—As long as he thought any descendant of the M. was alive.

7° First Rel. N., second direct for oblique in complex elliptical clause:—Ar çaçair Ierúsalem is eað is fearr a bí an çaoi aige ar an ðtreic sin a ð'oibriú—It was on the city of J. he had the best opportunity of putting this trait (aesthetic taste) in practice. This is the complex elliptical form of—Is i caçair l. an áit is fearr n-a raib an çaoi aige ar an ðtreic sin a ð' oibriú air.

8° First rel. A., second direct for oblique (local D.) in complex elliptical clause:—I mbeçlehem aðuðairç na çarçaireaçtaí a béarfí an slánuiççeoir (CMð. 40)—It was in B. the prophecies said the S. would be born.= Is í b. an áit aðuðairç . . . na mbéarfí. . . . When in is transferred to the pred. it is omitted in the subj., which therefore has the direct rel. for the oblique:—(Is) i mb. aðuðairç . . . a béarfí. . . .

9° First rel. N. or A., second, G.—Çá . . . çaðaice orm buairç nár measas riam surb féioir a leicéio ðo

ḡeac̃t ar m̃naoi (TBC. 133)—A worry has come upon me, the like of which I never thought could fall upon a woman. N.B.—If nár be understood as a conj. (as it may be—buairẽt “cóm mór san” nár . . . .) then sur will be a conj. also.

10° First rel. local D. second the same:—’sa n-áit ’n-ar òóic̃ le Críostaĩe sur ceart̃ an altóir̃ a beic̃ (CM̃. 146)—where a Christian would think the altar ought to be.—The two clauses logically involved are:—(a) ’sa n-áit̃ (a) bã òóic̃ le C. (b) ’sa n-áit̃ n-ar ceart̃. . . . When the oblique rel. of (b) is transferred to (a), the direct rel. of (a) is usually transferred to (b), giving—’sa n-áit̃ n-ar òóic̃ le C. bã ceart̃ . . . . (with direct rel. a understood before bã). But sur may be a conj. Thus—bã òóic̃ le C. sur . . . . ann, is made rel. by transferring the prep, in ann to the rel. ar.—’sa n-áit̃ n-ar òóic̃ . . . . sur ceart̃. . . .

11° First rel. D., second N. (by “Inversion,”—see preceding ex.)—bí̃ ḡac̃ doimnẽ aḡ breic̃niú̃ na h-aimsirẽ n-ar òóic̃ leõ a beãõ an t-ár̃õ-rí̃ aḡ teac̃t̃ a bailẽ (N. 210)—Everyone was looking forward to the time when they thought the High-King would be coming home.—The two clauses involved are:—(a) na h-aimsirẽ (a) bã òóic̃ leõ (Rel. N.) and (b) na n-aimsirẽ ’n-a mbeãõ (Rel. D.). But the direct and oblique forms are transposed. This “Inversion” is quite common. See next ex.

12° First rel. neg. loc. D., second direct (By “Inversion,” for A.—local D.).—Cãõ é̃ a m̃iniciḡẽ a fuaras̃ é̃ san áit̃ nár̃ m̃easas̃ a ḡeõḡainñ é̃ (Im. 187)—How often have I found it where I never expected to find it! The clauses involved are:—(a) sa n-áit̃ nár̃ m̃easas̃ (Rel. neg. A.); (b) sa n-áit̃ n-a b̃fuig̃inñ é̃ (Rel. loc. D.). Inversion has taken place. But, as nár̃ may be either direct or oblique, the 1st clause remains as it was, the change being apparent only in the 2nd clause.

13° First rel. temporal D., second, the same (Direct for oblique in both):—(a) nuair̃ is̃ òóic̃ leõ a bí̃õ aḡ mõlãõ a céilẽ, is̃ aḡ cameãõ a céilẽ a bí̃õ—When they think they are praising each other, it is just then they are finding fault.—The stress is on the point of time. If it were on the contrast between what they are actually



doing, and what they imagine they are doing, it would run thus:—(b) Is  $\Delta\zeta$  cáineadh  $\Delta$  céile  $\Delta$  bío siad, nuair is bóic leo go mbí siad  $\Delta\zeta$  molaí  $\Delta$  céile (Im. 206)—It's blaming each other they are, when, as they think, they are praising each other!

14° Both clauses modal (Direct for oblique in both):—  
 (a) ní duðairt sé na focail lom díreach mar  $\Delta$  teastuiḡ uada  $\Delta$  déanfaí sé (Cm. 333)—He didn't say the words precisely as they wanted. (b) bí cneasta leis, fé mar ba maí  $\Delta$  leat  $\Delta$  beifí leat féin (Im. 22)—Be gentle with him, as you would like to be treated yourself. (c) Deirí go léir díreach mar  $\Delta$  cífrí sib  $\Delta$  déanfaí-sa (bh. 278)—Do ye all exactly as ye shall see me do. (d) tósuiḡ neite ar teacht cun cinn fé mar  $\Delta$  meas Seleúcas  $\Delta$  tiocfaíois (bh. 757)—Things began to come to a head, as S. thought they would. These exx. (14°) show the “spread” of Double Rel. Construction, and there is something abnormal in each. In (a) teastuiḡ has no grammatical subj. In (b) ba has no grammatical subj. In (c) cífrí has no grammatical obj. Nor in (d) has meas.

#### V. Multiple Rel. Sentences:—

1° Deirim leat gurb é seo an cuma aduðairt sé ba bóic leis ab' fearr  $\Delta$  taitnefaí le cáic—I tell you that this is the way he said he thought would best please everyone. Four rel. clauses, co-ordinate in construction, and subordinate in meaning:—(a) an cuma aduðairt sé (Rel. A.); (b) an cuma ba bóic leis (Rel. N.); (c) an cuma ab' fearr (Rel. N.); (d) an cuma  $\Delta$  taitnefaí (Rel. N.).

2° Cía hé is bóic leat aduðairt sé do measadur ab' fearr  $\Delta$  déanfaí an gníom?—Who think you did he say they thought would be the best to do the deed? Five co-ordinate clauses, each, however, qualified in meaning by the others:—(a) an té ( $\Delta$ ) is bóic leat. (b) an té aduðairt sé. (c) an té do measadur. (d) an té ab' fearr. (e) an té  $\Delta$  déanfaí.

#### VI. Negative Relatives:—

(a) ná is used in Munster, outside the past tense, with all verbs, except is. In U. and Conn. nac is usual.

(b) **naċ**, everywhere, as direct and obl. rel. with **is** (outside past tense).

(c) **naċ**, with past and condit. of **is**, and the past of other verbs [except those in which **ro** combines with the vb. itself (**raib**), and verbs which do not take **ro**—(**fuaib**)].

### VII. The Relative in Compar. and Superl. Clauses:—

(a) **níl aoinne is fearr gur b eol do é ná mar is eol duit-se é**—No one knows it better than you do.

(b) **Sin é an rud is fearr atá ar eolas aige**—That's what he knows best.

(c) Note that the I. for "that is the best thing he knows" is:—**Sin é an rud is fearr dá bfuil ar eolas aige**.

VIII. **Interrogative and Relative**:—Contrast—1° **Cad cuige go ndubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?** 2° **Cad cuige adubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?** 1° is a single rel. question—why did she say she was no good? 2° is a double rel. question—what was it that she said she was no good at?

Similarly:—(a) **Cadoin adubairt sé go ndéarfadh sé é?** (b) **Cadoin adubairt sé a déanfaid sé é?** (a) is a single rel. question—when did he make the statement that he would do it? (b) is a double rel. question—when, did he say, he would do it? (referring to the time of the doing, not of the statement).

IX. **The Compound Relative**:—The following combinations occur:—

A.—Both antecedent and rel. N.—**bí gac ar cóir 7 ar cuibhe a déanam doib déanta aige doib** (CMO. 137)—He had done for them everything it was right and fitting to do for them=**gac níò (a) ba cóir**. Anteced. N. to **bí**; rel. N. to **ba**.

B.—Both anteced. and rel. A.—**Déanfaid a ndéarfair liom a déanam**—I'll do everything you tell me. Anteced. A. after **déanfaid**; rel. A. governed by **déarfair**.

C.—Anteced. A., Rel. N.—**agus gac a mbaineadh do leigistí iad** (CMO. 258)—and all who touched (the hem of His cloak) were healed.—Anteced.—Projected A. (N. if **leigistí** is passive); rel. N. to **baineadh**.

D.—Anteced. N., rel. A.—**τὸς** **φάρ** **υαῖο** **ζαὶ** **α** **μεσάνν** **σέ** **ατά** **αἰε**—All he thinks he has shall be taken from him.—Anteced.—N. to **τὸς** **φάρ** (if passive); rel. A. governed by **μεσάνν**. There is Double Rel. Construction here. If the 2nd clause were alone it would be—**ζαὶ** **α** **ῥφιλ** **αἰε**.

E.—Anteced. D., Rel. N.—**ῥεῖο** **λεαζαῖντ** **σίος** **αῖ** **ḡeoiníní**, **'sa** **maireann** **ḡe** **n-a** **ḡpór** (**ḡC.** 31)—Shoneens and all survivors of their seed shall be put down! Anteced. D. (or A.) gov. by **αῖ**. Rel. N. to **maireann**.

F.—Anteced. D., Rel. A.—**τά** **ḡíoltá** **αῖ** **uinn** **αῖ** **αῖ** **ḡeineadár** **ḡ'éazcóir** **riam** **orainn** (**TBC.** 146)—They have paid us for all the wrongs they ever did us.—Anteced. D. gov. by **αῖ**. Rel. A. gov. by **ḡeineadár**.

G.—Both Anteced. and Rel. D.—1° **ḡarḡuibḡeár** **an** **uile** **ruḡ** **i** **ḡfuirm** **ḡuine** **ḡe** **ḡliocht** **ḡaeḡeal** **ḡár** **ḡéadadár** **ḡeact** **suas** **leis** (**Sḡ.** 54)—They slew everything in the shape of human Irishman they could reach. Anteced. D. gov. by **ḡe**; rel. D. (A) gov. by **le** (in **leis**). 2° **ḡráḡmár** **ḡár** **ζαὶ** **níḡ** **ḡár** **ḡuz** **ḡuine** **ḡráḡ** **ḡó** **riam** **ḡós** (**Im.** 248)—Loveable beyond anything man ever yet loved.—Anteced. D. gov. by **ḡe**; Rel. D. gov. by **ḡo**. 3° **ḡáinḡ** **αḡac** **αῖ** **an** **loc** **an** **capall** **ḡob'** **áilne** **ḡár** **leozas** **mo** **ḡuil** **riam** **air** (**ḡR.** 33)—There came out of the lake the most beautiful horse I ever laid eyes on.—Anteced. D. gov. by **ḡe**; Rel. D. (A.) gov. by **αῖ**. 4° **ḡá** **ḡaiḡeann** **tu** **ζαὶ** **ḡḡeant** **ḡá** **ḡfázfar** **αῖ** **an** **saḡḡal** **so** **ḡu**—If you spend every Advent during which you're left in this world . . . . Anteced. D. gov. by **ḡe**. Rel. oblique temporal D. (or A. of Extent in Time).

For fuller consideration of these exx. see 310.

H.—Anteced. G., Rel. N. (A.).—**αὶ** **ḡí** **uáiste** **αῖ** **na** **ḡamaratánaiḡ** **in-éazḡais** **αῖ** **ḡarḡuibḡeḡ** (**ḡac** 274)—But there were others amongst the S. besides those who were slain. Anteced. G. gov. by **éazḡais**. Rel. N. (or A. if **ḡarḡuibḡeḡ** is Auton.).

I.—Anteced. N., Rel. G.—**ḡin** **α** **ḡfuil** **ḡios** **αḡam** (**ḡn.** 454)—That's all I know.

J.—Anteced. absolute; Rel. N. or A.—**ní** **ḡeḡadár** **an** **ḡeḡarḡḡe** **iaḡ** **αῖ** **ḡuzas** **ḡóíḡ** (**S.**)—I wonder are they improved by my gifts.

## CHAPTER V.

### SYNTAX OF THE VERB.

---

#### The Copula.

**224.**—*is* is merely a logical copula, and forms no part of the predicate. *E.g.*—1° It must never be stressed. If it were a real predicate it would be stressed, when emphatic, like all other verbs (which are real predicates or part-predicates). 2° One cannot answer a question with *is* alone, although one can with practically every other verb. Why? Because *is* by itself conveys no information—*is* not a predicate. Since it is never stressed, and is not a predicate, it is used to introduce the predicate. This gives us the rule for all (or nearly all) *is* sentences:—(a) VS. (Verb-Subj.) must always be avoided. (b) VP (p) (Verb-Pred.) must always be secured. (When the vb. is expressed. *is* is often omitted). N.B.—P (p). P=the real pred. p=one of the prons.—*é, í, ιαϑ, εαϑ*, used to take its place. The real pred. is often too long, or too cumbrous, to come immediately after *is*, in which case one of these prons. takes its place. Or P. is placed elsewhere, to secure some special shade of meaning, and in this case also p. must take its place. The rule may be put, graphically, thus:—(a) —VS. (b) +VP (p). The rule does *not* say:—1° That we must begin with the vb. That is not necessary and is often impossible. 2° That P., the real pred. must come immediately after *is*. That is not necessary, either, and is often impossible. 3° That the subj. must come last. Unnecessary, also, and often impossible. The rule, in fact, says nothing about the position of the subj. except negatively; nor of P., except that, *if* it does not follow *is* immediately, then “p” must take its place.

**225** (a). Subj. and Pred.—The grammatical subj. is the word, or group of words, pointing out the person, place, name, thing or group, about which the assertion (or denial) is made, or the question asked. The grammatical pred. is the word, or group of words, pointing out what is affirmed, denied, or queried about what the subj. denotes.

(b) Any word or group capable of being subj. or pred. is called a “term.” The pred. is either definite or indefinite. A pred. is definite when it is an individual term; indefinite, when it is a general term.

(c) An individual term is one which can be asserted, in the same sense, of only one person, place or thing, or one group,—**Σέδνα, an peann** so—**Seadna**, this pen. A general term is one which may be applied, in the same sense, to each of an indefinite number of persons, places, things, names or groups:—**duine, páirc, bóro, pádrais** (see **261**) **sgata**—person, field, table, Patrick, company.

**226.**—This gives us the division of **is** sentences into—**A.**—Classification (pred. indefinite). **B.**—Identification (pred. definite). In **C.**—Complex Elliptical sentences, the pred. is either def. or indef. (so that this class is a sub-division of **A.** and **B.**).

**A.—Classification Sentences:**—Type I.—The pred. is a common noun. The subj. may be a noun, pron., phrase or clause:—

1° **Is oncú do Connaçtaib an cú, is mí-çlú do Connaçtaib a çlú** (TBC. 96)—The “Hound” (Cúchulainn) is a wolf to Connaught-men, his fame, to them, is ill-fame. 2° **Is bean gan eagla mise** (TBC, 3)—I am a fearless woman, **gan eagla** narrows down the meaning of **bean**, but not completely. It remains a general term. 3° **Ní fios conus oirfeadh do çongnam dúinn** (TBC. 15)—There’s no knowing how your help might suit us. The subj. here is the complex noun—**conus . . . dúinn**.

**227.**—Type II.—The pred. is an adj. (equivalent to a common noun):—1° **Is buan gan sgur sul na gaoithe** (CCU. 19)—The moaning of the wind continues un-

ceasingly. 2° Is minic saoi ó òaoi (UP.)—Often a clown's son is a sage. 3° Is fearr fuigeall an madaio ná fuigeall an madaio—Better the leavings of the dog than those of the cynic! 4° Is fearr leat ná meac—“Half a loaf is better than no bread.”

**228.**—Type III.—The pred. is an adj. but the subj. involves a rel. clause:—1° Is trom an t-ualach aineolas (UP.)—Ignorance is a heavy burden. Subj. an t-ualach (a is) aineolas. 2° Is maic an saogal é—má maireann sé i bfao—The times are good—if they last long. (Said to foolish young people). Subj.—an saogal (a is) é. 3° Is cruaidh an cainnt í sin (CMO, 260)—These are hard words. Subj. an cainnt (a is) í sin. 4° Ní maic an luict faire sib (bh. 407)—You are but indifferent guards. Subj. an luict faire (a is) sib.

**229.**—Type IV.—The pred. appears to be a proper n. but is really a general term:—1° Agus (is) éamonn a acair (S. 20)—And his father is “an E.” also. 2° Is “Connla” a bíobh ag niam air—N. called him “Connla.” Subj. of is:—an ainm a bíobh ag n. air. The sentence is nominal. 3° Dubairt sé gur éasairias ab ainm dó (bh. 574)—He said his name was A.

**230.**—Type V.—The pred. is a prep, pron., or prep. phrase.—1° Is dóic liom go raib sí ingráib leis go mór tamall (TBC. 5)—I think she was very much in love with him for a while.—The pred. dóic liom=a thing likely in my opinion. 2° Ac ní creideann sib-se, mar ní dem' caoire-se sib (CMO. 333)—But you do not believe, for you are not of My Flock.

**231.**—**Emphatic Forms:**—Type VI.—1° Treab imchige amúda ab ead iad (CMO. 245)—They were a strayed flock. 2° Uaigneas san áitreab is ead an áit seo (CMO. 255)—This place is a homeless desert. 3° Rógaire fill ab ead é (bh. 807)—He was a treacherous rogue. 4° Ionann saogail ab ead an leact san (bh. 826)—This monument was a world's wonder. N.B.—(a) The predicates here are very strong, and call for an emphatic

position. (b) The pron.  $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$  must be inserted after the vb. in order to avoid "VS."

**232.**—Type VII —Emphatic form of II. 1°  $\text{O}\iota\text{c}$  is  $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$   $\Delta\text{n}$   $\text{pe}\Delta\text{c}\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$ —Sin is an evil. Type III has no more emphatic form. The adj. pred. there is already very strongly emphasized.

**233.**—Type VIII.—Emphatic form of Type IV. 1°  $\Delta\text{lb}\Delta$  is  $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$  is  $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\text{o}'\text{n}$   $\text{c}\acute{\text{r}}\text{í}\text{c}$   $\text{s}\text{i}\text{n}$ —A. is the name of that country. 2°  $\text{F}\text{i}\text{n}\text{n}\breve{\text{o}}\text{e}\Delta\text{n}\text{n}\Delta\text{c}$  is  $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$  is  $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{o}}$ —Whitehorn is his name (English often begins with the logical predicate).

**234.**—Type IX.—Emphatic form of Type V.— $\text{u}\text{i}\text{n}\text{n}-\text{ne}$   $\Delta\text{b}$   $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$   $\Delta\text{n}$   $\text{r}\acute{\text{e}}\text{i}\breve{\text{o}}$  ( $\text{msf.}$ )—The moor belonged to us. N.B.—Some exx. of Type V are not emphasized by means of  $\epsilon\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$  and the **projected** predicate. E.g.— $\text{Is}$   $\acute{\text{e}}$  is  $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{o}}\text{í}\text{c}$   $\text{u}\text{i}\text{om}$   $\zeta$   $\text{ra}\text{i}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\text{sí}$   $\text{i}$   $\text{n}\zeta\text{r}\acute{\text{a}}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\text{leis}$  . . . is stronger than **230**, 1°, but is an Identification sentence of the Type VpSP. (**246**).

**235.**—Type X.— $\text{Ca}\text{i}\text{l}\acute{\text{i}}\text{n}$   $\zeta\text{ur}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$   $\zeta\text{i}\text{le}$   $\text{n}\Delta$   $\text{m}\breve{\text{b}}\text{i}\acute{\text{a}}\text{c}$ —A girl named G. na mB. It has been said that  $\zeta.$   $\text{n}\Delta$   $\text{m}\breve{\text{b}}$ . (the grammatical subj.) is the logical pred., and that  $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$  (the grammatical pred.) is the logical subj. This is wrong. If we wish to make  $\zeta.$   $\text{n}\Delta$   $\text{m}\breve{\text{b}}$ . pred. we have two ways of doing so:—(a)  $\text{Ca}\text{i}\text{l}\acute{\text{i}}\text{n}$   $\zeta\text{ur}$   $\zeta.$   $\text{n}\Delta$   $\text{m}\breve{\text{b}}$ .  $\Delta\text{b}$   $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$ . (b)  $\text{Ca}\text{i}\text{l}\acute{\text{i}}\text{n}$   $\zeta\text{ur}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\acute{\text{e}}$   $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$   $\text{u}\text{i}\text{r}\breve{\text{c}}\text{i}$   $\zeta.$   $\text{n}\Delta$   $\text{m}\breve{\text{b}}$ .

**236.**—Type XI.—In the last ex. in **235** the pred. remains indefinite. It means "a name spelled  $\zeta$ -i-l-e," etc. Such sentences must be distinguished from Type II b, Identification (**247**). The particle  $\text{n}\acute{\text{a}}$ , which precedes the pred. there, has found its way into the present Type also:—1°  $\text{Is}$   $\acute{\text{e}}$   $\text{ru}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\Delta$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$   $\Delta\text{i}\zeta\text{e}$   $\text{n}\acute{\text{a}}$   $\text{c}\acute{\text{e}}\Delta\breve{\text{o}}$   $\text{o}\acute{\text{c}}\text{t}$   $\text{n}\breve{\text{o}}\text{e}\text{i}\text{c}$   $\Delta$   $\text{cú}\text{i}\zeta$   $\breve{\text{o}}\text{e}$   $\text{m}\acute{\text{i}}\text{l}\breve{\text{c}}\text{i}\breve{\text{o}}$   $\text{corp}$  ( $\text{b}\eta$ . 569)—He found himself with only 185,000 corpses! 2°  $\text{Is}$   $\acute{\text{e}}$   $\Delta\text{inm}$   $\Delta$   $\breve{\text{o}}\acute{\text{i}}$   $\Delta\text{i}\text{r}$   $\text{n}\acute{\text{a}}$   $\text{S}\acute{\text{e}}\Delta\breve{\text{o}}\text{n}\Delta$  ( $\text{S}$ . 6)—His name was S. 3°  $\text{Is}$   $\acute{\text{e}}$   $\text{cead-}$   $\text{chrann}$   $\text{tarla}$   $\text{dhó}$   $\text{soileach}$   $\text{mhór}$  ( $\text{BK}$ . 1)—The first tree he met was a large willow.

**237.**—Type XII.—*Ḑá mba ná beaḑ sé faḡálčá roim ré aige* (S. 67)—if he had not got it beforehand. Usually explained by saying that the pred. *ruḑ*=a fact, is understood. It is more satisfactory to take *ná . . . . aige* as pred. with subj. understood at the end (*é*=the state of affairs in question).

**238.**—Type XIII.—SVP.—The subj. is a rel. and must come first. 1° *níl doimne is fearr a čáinig as ná mise* (TBC. 6)—No one has come out of it better than I. The subj. (rel. *a*) is understood before *is*. There is Double Rel. Construction (223, IV).

**239.**—Type XIV.—A long pred. is often divided, the fundamental noun coming first, then VpS+the remainder of pred. This we may call “The Split Predicate”. 1° *fir ab’ eaḑ iad ná leoḡfaḑ a ḡcroiḑe ná a n-aighe ḑóib’ fanamaint sa baile*—They were men whose hearts or minds would not allow them to stay at home. 2° This is usual, also, when the pred., though short, contains a rel.—*bean is eaḑ í ná fuil puinn céille aici*—She’s a woman of but little sense. Conn. I. sometimes does not avail of this order:—*bean nár čuḡ sé don áirḑ uirri ariam’ b’eaḑ í siúḑ* (Smb. 184)—Instead of *bean ab’ eaḑ í siúḑ nár . . . .*

**240.**—Type XV.—SVPs.—The subj. is projected for emphasis, and a pron. (s) takes its place at the end:—1° *An ceaghas so a čuḡaim-se, ní liom é* (ČS. 245)—This doctrine which I give is not Mine (Much better than—*ní liom . . . .*). 2° *Óir an áit na ḑfuilir ab’ šeasam, is talam’ naomčá é* (bñ. II. 1)—For the place where thou standest is holy ground.

**241.**—Type XVI.—SPVps.—*na sḡéalčá beaḡa san a ḑínNSEaḑ losa, neiče ab’ eaḑ iad a čuit amac* (Cmḑ. 318)—These little stories which J. told were things that had happened. This is much neater than—*neiče ḑo čuit amac ab’ eaḑ na sḡéalčá . . .* Note the split predicate (239).



**242.**—Type XVII.—PS. The verb is omitted:—  
 1° *nasaret ainm an bhaile sin* (CM̃. 17)—The name of this village was N.  
 2° *muire ab' ainm í* (CM̃. 331)—Her name was M.  
 3° *faða céir teist an oiní* (AÓR. 210)—Far fares the fame of generosity.  
 4° *tríú a ghníveas treabha* (UP.)—It is rivalry that makes good ploughing (tríú=M. tnúč).

**243.**—Type XVIII.—SP.—*An cuairt is fearr cuairt gearr* (UP.)—The best visit is a short one. Another way of saying *cuairt gearr* (is eab) *an cuairt is fearr*.

**244.**—Type XIX.—PsS.—*Ca b' é an donas é seo atá ar siúbal?* (TBC. 157)—What's all this mischief that's going on? *Ca b'* is pred. N. to *is*. *é* is proleptic subj. (s), the real subj. being *an donas (a is) é seo*, etc.

#### B.—Identification Sentences:—

**245.**—Type I.—VpPS—1° *Is é leigeas na loðar is mó cuireab iongha 7 alltacht ar gach aoinne* (CM̃. 162)—It was the curing o\* the lepers that most amazed everyone.  
 2° *Is é briathar Dé an síol* (CM̃. 232)—The seed is the Word of God.  
 3° *'Sí an dias is truime is ísle cromas a ceann* (UP.)—The heaviest ear most lowly bends its head (A commendation of Humility).  
 4° *'Sé an t-éadach a ghní an duine* (UP.)—Clothes make the man.

**246.**—Type II. a.—VpSP.—Two reasons for the evolution of this Type:—(a) A long cumbrous pred., if placed immediately after *is*, would have spoiled the sentence. It is, therefore, put at the end, a pronoun taking its place after *is*, in order to avoid VS! 1° *A agus is é freagra a fuair sé:—“Aingeal is eab mise. Is mé an trímaib h-aingeal gur cuais déirc dó iníu ar son an tslánuišteora. Agus anois tá trí gniúe agat le faáil ó Dia na glóire. Iarr ar Dia aon trí gniúe is toil leat 7 geobair iad. Ac tá aon cómairle amáin agam le tabairt duit. Ná dearmáib an trócaire.”* Here the pred. contains six complete sentences, and could not possibly be put immediately after *is*. (b) To put even a short pred. after *is* would sometimes sacrifice some important shade

of meaning. A vivid, rhetorical form is required, and Type II supplies it:—2° Is é is fada liom go mberò an baiste sin déanta (CMO. 326)—I long exceedingly to have that baptism accomplished. 3° b'é b'fada leis go raib sé amuig (S. 39)—The one thing he longed for was to get out (See note on this sentence, "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. I, 16-17).

**247.**—Type II. b.—VpS ná P.—More vivid and rhetorical than the preceding, and should be used only when rhetoric is justified.—1° b'e cómarca é sin ná a bás 7 a aiséirge féin (CMO. 274)—This sign meant precisely His own death and resurrection. 2° Sé ruo a òein íosa ná ceist a cur cúca (CMO. 336)—J. simply put them a question. 3° Is é ruo a òein sé ná an breic do cur ar ač-lá (Mac. I, 59)—He simply postponed the judgment. 4° b'í seoir í sin ná b'aistí (bh. 616)—The treasure I mean was Vashti.

**248.**—Type II. c.—VpS ač P.—Canon O'Leary does not use this. But his books are full of the rhetorical questions and negations from which this type has developed.—1° Cía gaoibh ear an ndorus ač Séadna? (S. 89)—Who should pass the door but S? This leads to—b'é duine gaoibh ear an ndorus ač S. 2° níor òein sé ač éirge 7 imcheacht amach (CMO. 175)—He just rose up, and went out. The information given here can be conveyed in at least seven different ways, each with its own shade of meaning:—(a) D'éirig se 7 D'imcig sé amach (Bald statement of fact), (b) Do òein sé éirge 7 imcheacht amach—He *deliberately* rose and went out. (c) níor òein sé ač éirge 7 imcheacht amach—He *simply*, etc. (d) Cad a déanfaid sé ač . . . . (Rhetorical), (e) 'Sé ruo a òein se . . . . [More vivid than (b) or (c) ]. (f) 'Sé ruo a òein sé ač . . . . [more vivid still than (e) ]. (g) Sé ruo a òein sé ná . . . . (most vivid of all).

**249.**—Type II. d.—VpS mar P.—Here, mar is pleonastic, just as "because" is, sometimes, in E. We say—(a) He stayed at home (the fact), because he was unwell. So, in I.—D'fan sé sa baile, mar ní raib sé

AR fógnaím. (b) A rhetorical form:—E.—The reason why . . . . was (because) he was unwell. I.—'Sé cúis gur fán sé sa baile (mar) ná raib sé ar fógnaím:—'Dúbairet sé gurb é cúis n-a nbeig sé i bfolac, mar go raib eagal air (bh. 3)—He said he went into hiding, because he was afraid.

**250.**—Development of ná:—1° From neg. ná in:—  
(a) rhetorical questions. (b) rhetorical negations;  
2° comparative ná.

1°a:—Cia déarfaiò ná gur deag-òine é?—Who will say he wasn't a good man? This leads to—sé déarfaiò zac doinne (ná) gur ò.ò. é.

1°b:—Ní bíoò fíos as doinne ná gur òine de muinntir na tíre é (n. 138)—No one knew but that he was one of the natives. This leads to—'Sé ceapao zac doinne (ná) gur òine, etc.

2° Níl don cuma is fearr cum na hoibre deanaím ná an saoluinn do saocrú ins na h-áiteanaib 'na bfuil sí beo fós—There's no better plan for accomplishing the work than to work up I. wherever it is still living. This leads to—'Se cuma is fearr . . . . ná . . . . The mod. compar. and superl. having the same form helps this assimilation.

**251.**—Type III.—VpSP.—In Type II the subj. contains a rel. clause, implicit or explicit. In Type III the subj. is simple—a noun preceded by the art., or followed by an adj. Contrast with Type I.—1° Gurb í an íomáig úd an náúir òanna (KTB. 3)—That that image represents human nature. 2° 'Sé an namao an peacao (Ser.)—Sin is the enemy (E. begins with the logical pred.). The context shows that Can. O'L. was writing about "the enemy" not "sin." The same words, in the same order, might be a sentence in Type I. One might be talking of sin and saying that it is the enemy. We must look to the context to guide us as to which Type is in question.

**252.**—Type IV.—PVpS.—The pred. here, as in Type VI. Classification, is projected, for rhetorical effect.—

1° *An bhean chosnochtaithe* is *í a b'í ann* (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman. 2° *An níò* is *creid-eamhant dóib* is *é is mian leo a séanao*—The very thing that is a credit to them they want to disown. (E., as I., often begins with the logical predicate). 3° *An níò atcí an leanb* is *é a gníò an leanb* (UP.)—What the child sees, that the child does. 4° *'Cé cuireas 'sé baineas* (UP.)—He who sows reaps. 5° *An luib ná fachtar* is *í fóireann* (Proverb)—The herb that helps cannot be found.

**253.**—Type V.—PS.—1° *eoin b'aisce an mac san* (CMb. 17)—This child was John the Baptist. 2° *lomao na lám a baineas an cač* (UP.)—Its the number of hands that wins the battle. 3° *na méara na súile* is *zéire bóis as ball* (Smb. 66)—The fingers are the sharpest eyes of the blind.

**254.**—Type VI.—SP.—1° *Mise cailín an t-igearna* (CMb. 19)—Behold the Handmaid of the Lord. 2° *b'eača teanga í labhairt*—If a language is to live, it must be spoken. 3° *Labhair an bochtáin béal na h-uaiže* (UP.)—The mouth of the grave is the poor man's refuge. 4° *Ceo ar abainn, ceo an tsonais, Ceo ar cnoc ceo an donais* (UP.)—A river-mist is prosperous, a hill-mist unfortunate. N.B.—Type V is related to Type I or Type IV, in both of which P precedes S. But Type VI is related to Type II, in which S. precedes P. Type V therefore, when dependent, becomes Type I or Type IV:—*An ruo* is *annam* is *iongantac* (V) becomes Type I:—*Deir an seanfocal gurb é an ruo is annam is iongantac*. Or—Type IV—*Deir an seanfocal an ruo is annam gurb é is iongantac*. But—*tír gan teanga tír gan anam* (VI) becomes Type II:—*Deir an seanfocal gurb é sažas tír gan teanga ná tír gan anam*.

**255.**—Type VII.—VPS.—The pred. is a pers. pron. 1 or 2 p., or a demonstrative, 3 p., or a pers. pron. strengthened by *féin*:—1° *Má's tu an Críost* (CMb. 333)—If Thou art the Christ. 2° *Measaim gurb í féin* is *fearr a cuig a cainnt* (CMb. 113)—I judge that She

herself understood His words best. 3° *ṢAR* IS *ṢU ṢO RÉAB* *mo ṡroṡe ó ṡéile* (CCU. 50)—For it is you who have torn my heart asunder.

**256.**—Type VIII.—VpPS.—Same as Type I, except that the subj. is here one of the prons. which are preds. in VII. It has been said that in Ident. sentences these prons. must always be pred. This is wrong:—1° *Ḃn é Ḃn CÁRTA ṢUḂ é sin? ní hé, Ḃṡ Ḃn CÁRTA bÁN*—Is that *the black card*? No, but *the white one*. *Ḃn é sin Ḃn c. Ṣ?*—Is *that* the black card? And the answer would be, e.g., *ní hé; sin é é*—No—here it is. The same Eng. words, in the same order, convey at least three different meanings:—(a) Is *that* the b. c? *Ḃn é sin Ḃn c. Ṣ?* (b) Is that the *black* c? *Ḃn é Ḃn c. Ṣ. é sin?* (c) Is that the b. *card*? *Ḃn é Ḃn CÁRTA Ṣ. é sin?* (with emphasis on *CÁRTA*). There is a tendency (a very wrong tendency) to make (a) do duty for all three. 2° *Is é mo ṡorp é seo*—This is My Body—This is the correct translation of “Hoc est Corpus Meum.” 3° *Is é Críst Ṣac Ṣé sin* (Dott. II, 13)—This is Christ the Son of God. Cf.—4° *Ṣo fíor Ṣob é Ṣac Ṣé é sin* (Ṣ.S. 83)—Truly, this was the Son of God.

**257.**—Type IX.—VpSP.—The same as Type II. a., except that the proleptic pron. is *eaṡ*. It is common in the literature down to the early modern period:—1° *Is eaṡ ḂṢUḂAIRṢ “ní ṡḂḂAIR ṢUINE UAIṢ Ḃn níṢ naṡ ṡí Ḃṡe”* (KTB. 8)—This is what he said:—“One does not give away what one has not.” 2° Common in “*ṢAR Ṣ eaṡ*” when the *eaṡ* is proleptic:—*ṢAR Ṣ eaṡ Ṣo RAIṢ sé ḂR meisṡe*—pretending that he was drunk. *é* (understood)=the state of affairs, is subj. of *Ṣ* (=ṡḂḂ).

**258.**—Type X.—SVpPs.—1° *Ḃn ṡé ḂṢUḂAIRṢ Ḃn ṡainnṢ sin, b'é Ḃ ṡceann Ṣo léir é* (CMṢ. 366)—He who said these words was the Head of them all. The *projection* emphasizes the subj. The reference is to our Lord. 2° *Ḃn RUṢ ṢUR Ṣóic leis Ḃn nṢUINE ṢURṢ é Ḃ leas é* (CMṢ. 195)—What one imagines is for one's good.—This could hardly be put neatly in any other form.

**259.**—Type XI.—PsS.—1° *CAD IDA NA NEIÇE IS ŽÁȚAR-aiçe?* What are the most necessary things? A definite answer is expected. 2° *CIA hé AN fear é sin?* Who's that man? P=CIA; s=é; S=AN fear é sin.

**260.**—Type XII.—SVP.—In relative sentences like—*Is é ÍOSA IS CRÍOST ANN*—Jesus is the Christ. A sentence of Type I, but the subj. (*AN té A IS CRÍOST ANN*) is Type XII.—S=A (rel. understood). P.=CRÍOST.

**261.**—**Note on Proper Names.**—There are at least four uses of words like *ÉAMONN*:—1° *agus (is) ÉAMONN A AȚAIR (S. 20)*—and his father is “*AN ÉAMONN*” also. *ÉAMONN indefinite*. 2° *Is é ÉAMONN fé nDÉAR é*—It is *é*. who is responsible. *ÉAMONN definite*—an individual term. 3° *ÉAMONN IS ainm DÓ*—his name is *é*. Here *é*. does not point out a person at all, but a *name*. It means—“a name spelled *é-a-m-o-n-n*” and is therefore indefinite. 4° *Sé ainm A bí AIR ná ÉAMONN.*—A nominal sentence like 3°. *é*. indefinite.

**262.**—The proleptic pron. in Type I. Ident. is due to Types II, III, and IV. In these the pron. is absolutely essential (in order to avoid VS). Without adverting to the fundamental difference between these and Type I, people began to insert the pron. in the latter. But a definite noun may come immediately after *is* (even outside Type XII, where such is nearly always the case):—1° *Ní h-ANois AN céAD uAIR A bEiD aiÇne CURȚA AȚAT AR m' fEIRȚ (LÚC. 14)*—This is not the first time you'll have experienced my anger. 2° *Is ANois é (ĈS. 223)*—It is now. 3° *Ní h-INDIU ná INDE A CUIREAS aiÇne ORȚ*—It isn't to-day or yesterday I came to know you.

All these predicates contain the definite article.

### C.—Complex Elliptical Sentences:—

**263.**—1° *Ní MAR ŽEALL AR fOCLAIB cAINNTE DO MOLPAR ŽÚ (LÚC. 4)*—It is not for mere words you will be praised=*ní fOcaIL cAINNTE AN níD ŽO MOLPAR ŽU MAR ŽEALL AIR.* (Pred. indef. Observe the direct rel. *DO* in the first form). 2° *Is DÓm-SA DO ŽEALLAD Í 7 IS ORMSA AȚÁ AN fEALL DÉANTA (TBC. 196)*—It was to me she was pro-

mised, and it is I who have been betrayed=*is mise an té gur gealladh dó í, 7 is mise an té ar a bfuil an feall déanta* (Preds. definite). 3° *Is ó tuair cun Sairilí a tús sé ašair* (CMÖ. 313)—He turned northwards to Gallilee=*is í an áir tuair cun S. an áir ar ar tús se ašair* (Pred. definite). 4° *ní liomsa a baineann an caint sin*—Those words do not refer to me=*ní mise an té go mbaineann an caint sin leis* (Pred. definite). All such sentences should be expanded in this way, to secure a clear subj. and a clear predicate.

### Idioms with the Verb *is*.

**264** (a).—The prep, *le* with certain adj. preds. denotes the subjective view; *do* the objective fact:—*an rud is féidir leat, is féidir duit é*—What you *think* you can do, you *can* do. (b) Idioms with *beas, mór*:—

1° *nár cóir nár beas dí a bfuil aici ceana díob* (TBC. 15)—Ought she not to be satisfied with what she has of them already?

2° *Is beas acu saibbreas gan mórclú* (TBC. 35)—They think little of riches without reputation.

3° *ní ró-mór ašam-sa é* (TBC. 53)—I don't think very much of him.

4° *ba beas ašam mo saogal a beir buan nó díombuan* (TBC. 63)—I cared little whether my life were long or short.

5° *nač beas leat a luach* (TBC. 76)—that you think it all too soon.

6° *ní mór le dia díob an saibbreas do sgaipe cóm tuš is is mair leo é* (CMÖ. 343)—God does not begrudge it them to squander their wealth as fast as they like.

**265** (a).—**Corrective ní h-eadh**—used, like the English “nay,” to tone down a too-strong assertion, or to add to a too weak one:—1° *Is dóca, ní headh, ac is deimín* (CMÖ. 183)—It is likely, nay, certain. 2° *ní headh, ac ábalta ar a cur fiačaint ar mioscais an áirseora glóire a cābairt do dia* (CMÖ. 3)—Nay more, able to compel the devil's malice to glorify God. 3° *ní h-eadh, ac do fíora an caint ó tosac* (CMÖ. 5)—Nay, more, the words were verified from the very start.

(b) **b'féidir, perhaps:**—1° The Fut. tense is not, as a rule, used after **b'féidir**, though it may be used before it:—**ḡiaḡrócaḡḡ ḡuine, b'féidir, caḡ na ḡaḡḡ ḡur ḡuir an slánuḡḡeoir an mallaḡḡ ar an ḡcrann (Cmḡ. 383)**—Perhaps someone will ask why the Saviour cursed the tree. Once Can. O'L. has the Fut. after it:—**b'féidir ḡo maiḡḡḡḡ sé ḡo ḡeacaí ḡuit (bh. 665)**—Maybe He will pardon you your sins. 2° **b'féidir ḡo ḡḡiaḡrócaḡḡ ḡuine éḡin caḡ na ḡaḡḡ ḡur laḡḡair íosa canḡḡe náḡ tuḡḡeaḡḡ (Cmḡ. 327)**—Perhaps someone will ask why Jesus used words that were not understood. 3° **b'féidir** may be followed by—The Pres. Indic, actual or habitual; the Past; the Imperfect; the Conditional. The Fut. may, of course, follow **má's ḡeidir**; and the vb. n. may follow both **má's ḡeidir**, and **b'féidir**.

## 266.—**ní ḡuláir; ní mór; ní ḡuláir nó . . . .**

(a) **ḡuláir**=excess, hence **ní ḡuláir**=it is not excessive, i.e., it is necessary. **ní mór** has often a similar meaning, but perhaps **ní ḡuláir** is stronger.

(b) 1° **ní ḡuláir**, expresses logical necessity, or duty or obligation (with implicit reference to some responsible agent):—**ní ḡuláir ḡur mar sin aḡá**, it must be so (log. nec.); **ní ḡuláir é ḡéanaḡḡ**—it must be done (by somebody). 2° **ní ḡuláir ḡo . . . .** expresses duty, obligation—with explicit reference to an agent:—**níorḡ ḡuláir ḡó ḡul ḡ aḡḡar ḡo ḡoláḡar (S. 7)**—he had to go to procure some (leather). 3° **ní ḡuláir nó . . . .** expresses logical necessity only.—**ní ḡuláir nó aḡ tuirse ort**—you must be tired. “**nó**” is due to ellipsis:—**ní ḡuláir (ḡur ḡuine ana-laíḡir ḡu) nó . . . .**—You must (be a very strong man) or else you're tired.

(c) When **ní ḡuláir** is not itself dependent, either the direct or the dependent form follows **nó**. It is a question of whether the latter clause (in the full sentence, where nothing is suppressed) is conceived as being the second member of a disjunctive proposition, in construction with **ní ḡuláir**; or as an independent conclusion, formed by the rejection of the statement introduced by **ní ḡuláir**:—Thus:—

A.—**ní ḡuláir**—(1) **ḡur ḡuine ana-laíḡir ḡu; nó** (2) **ḡo**



öfuii tuiſe ort. Here go in (2) is just as natural as gur in (1). Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó go öfuii tuiſe ort. Here, the only surprising thing is the illogical retention of nó.

B.— ní fuláir (1) gur ðuine ana-láðir çu; nó (2)—independent conclusion, not in construction with ní fuláir—tá tuiſe ort. Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó tá tuiſe ort—which is more abnormal than the final form of A. Only the retention of nó saves it from being a monstrosity.

(d) When ní fuláir becomes naç fuláir, nárb fuláir, the clause following nó will always be dependent. But the dependence may be either on naç fuláir, the two parts of the disjunction (in the full sentence) being in construction with it, and only through it, with the introductory verb. Thus:—

A.—Cað ðéanfað na ðaoine aç nárb fuláir—(1) gur ðuine ðána çar na beartaib é; nó (2) nárb çáð öó féin aon eaſla ðeiç aige roimis an ainm. Here, if we suppress (1) the resultant sentence (S. chap. 19) necessarily shows the dep. form after nó, but (thus conceived) the dependence is due to nárb fuláir, and not to ðéanfað. Or the dependence may be due to ðéanfað. Thus:—

B.—Cað ðéanfað na ðaoine aç—(1) nárb fuláir (gur ðuine ðána çar na beartaib é), nó (2) nárb çáð . . . . ainm. Here, nárb following nó depends directly on ðéanfað.

**267.**—Is cuma nó—equivalent to, like, as good as, as bad as, etc., is got, not by suppressing one member, but by a little transposition:—From sentences like 1° ba cuma linn bás nó beaça annsan (TBC. 152)—Life or death would be all the same to us, then—are easily derived sentences like the following:—2° Is cuma nó muc ðuine çan ſeiſc (Proverb)—A shiftless fellow is as useless as a swine. (<is cuma ð. çan s. nó m). 3° Is cuma nó bás an ðeaça so—This life is not much better than death (<is cuma an b. so nó bás). Sometimes there is no transposition:—4° Is cuma a çníom nó an ſplannc! (TBC. 113)—His action is as quick as lightning! Transposed:—Is cuma nó an ſplannc a çníom.

5° Is cuma imeasg a namad é nó leon i measg caorač (TBC. 51)—Among his foes he is ruthless as a lion. Transposed:—Is cuma nó leon é. 6° Is cuma é nó coinneal adanta (TBC. 51)—He is a lighted taper (Cuma nó tones down the metaphor. Transposed:—Is cuma nó c. a. é). 7° Is cuma nó aincheart lom-čearť (Proverb)—Bare justice is not much better than injustice (<is cuma l.č. nó ain-č.). 8° Is cuma tu am' aigne-se nó Aingeal ón tTigearna (bh. 413)—To my mind you are just an Angel from the Lord. Transposed:—Is cuma nó a. . . . tu.

Notice how the meaning of “is cuma nó” is coloured by the context.

**268.**—Very common is the following idiom:—

1° Ní brúigte go dul i n-aois, is ní múinte go coiscrič—One is not down and out till old, and he who has travelled is most polite. 2° Ní féasta go rósta, 's ní céasta go pósta (Proverb)—The best feast is a roast, and marriage is the greatest torture! 3° With ac instead of go:—Ní glóire go gréin ac neam, ní torann tréan ac tóirneac (Df, 54)—No glory like the Sun, save Heaven, No really loud report but thunder. 4° Ní h-aičeantas go h-aoimtičeas (Proverb)—“If you want to know me, come and live with me.”

**269** (a) **Is minic gur:**—When any vb. other than is follows is minic, there is a direct rel. (for oblique, in temporal clause). But an is clause is introduced by gur (nac, nár):—1° Is minic . . . . gurb ead is giorra bím duit (Im. 160)—It is oftentimes . . . . I am nearest to you. 2° Is minic a bíos i gcuideactain 7 gurb fearr liom ná beinn (Im.)—I have often been in company, and would rather I had not. 3° Is minic gur bočť an gnó dúinn é 7 gur follam (Im.)—Oftentimes it is a vain and foolish proceeding.

(b) In dependent “is” sentences ab is *not* inserted after gur before a vowel:—1° When pred. is a vb. n. phrase:—Dubart féin gur í coimead annso ba čearť (n. 251)—I myself advised that she should be kept here. 2° When pred. is a prep. pron.—Mar d ead gur orčťa

**270.—The Substantive Verb.**—(a) The vb. *is*, being a logical copula, can never connect a substantive (n. or pron.) and a mode of being, because what is denoted by a substantive can never be identified with a mode of its being. The vb. *is* can be used only:—1° To connect two substantives (n. and n.; n. and adj.; pron. and n.; n. and pron.):—*Is ainmíre capall*—a horse is an animal; *Is maic bean deag-fir* (TBC.)—a good man's wife is good; *Is tusa fé ndear san*—you are responsible for that; *An tu san?*—Is that you? etc. 2° To connect two modes:—*Is na sheasam a bí sé*—it's standing he was. Here, “*na sheasam*” is one mode (pred.), and “*a bí sé*”=the state in which he was, is another mode (subj.).

(b) *ṭá*, on the other hand, being essentially a vb. denoting state or condition, can connect only a substantive and some mode of being:—1° *ṭá sé ar an úr-lár*—it's on the floor (Local). 2° *ṭá sí i gcruað-čás*—she's in difficulties (Extension of loc. usage). 3° *bí líam ar aigne é òéanam*—L. intended to do it (Mental condition—an extension of the local meaning).

(c) Where  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  seems to connect two substantives, the second one is always modal:—1°  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  sé pas beaz fuar—it's a trifle cold. I.e., it's cold, to the extent of a little bit. pas beaz is A. of Extent in Degree. 2°  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  sé iarraçtín as a meabair—he's a bit crazy.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  connects sé with the mode—as a meabair. iarraçtín qualifies the statement (A. of Extent in Degree). 3° bí pó l tamall 'na gréasair—Paul was a cobbler for a time. tamall is A. of Extent in Time.

(d) There is no pres. part, in I. The meaning is expressed by means of τά+αξ+vb. n. (active); or by

ḃo+Δ (G. pron.)+vb. n. (passive):—1° **ṚÁṬAR AS ḃÉANAM ṠAC ΔON ḃÍCILL**—One is doing one's best (active Auton.). 2° **ṚÁ ṠAC ΔON ḃÍCEALL ḃÁ ḃÉANAM**—every effort is being made (pass.).

(e) With the past part. **ṚÁ** expresses:—1° The completion of an act:—**ṚÁ AN LEITIR CRÍOCHUIṠṬE ASAM FÉ ḃEIRE**—At last I have the letter finished. 2° The resultant state:—**ḃÍ NA ḃÓIRSE ḃÚNTA NUAIR A ṠROISEAMAIR AN HALLA**—the doors were closed (i.e., we found them in that state) when we reached the hall. N.B.—The Irish Trade-Mark "**ḃÉANTA I N-ÉIRINN**" is hardly defensible. If it is understood, it is wrong, because the reference should be to the *act* of manufacturing, and emphatically to the *place*. "**I N-ÉIRINN ḃO ḃEINEADḃ**" would do. Understanding **ṚÁ** things are even worse. "**ṚÁ SO ḃÉANTA I N-ÉIRINN**" means either, "this article has been just made in I." or—"it is in the state of having been made in I." Neither of these conveys the right meaning.

(f) Immediate consecution of events is expressed by **ṚÁ+ṚÉIS (ḃ'ÉIS)+vb. n.**—**ASUS TÚ ṚÉIS A ṠEALLAMAINṬ ṠO ḃṬIOCṚÁ**—Though you had just promised to come!

(g) With prep, in and G. pron. **ṚÁ** expresses:—1° Change—the contrast between what was and is; what is and will be, etc.—**ḃÍ SÉ 'NA ṬRÁṬNÓNA (ḃN. 27)**—evening had come; **ḢÍ ḃIA ÉIRE 'NA N-ÉIRINN (ḢAIC. 95)**—I. will no longer be I. 2° Actual Condition:—**ḃÍ AN ḃÁISTEAC AS TUITIM ANUAS 'NA CAISIB**—the rain was coming down in torrents; **ḃÍODAR AS TEACṬ 'NA ḃṬÁINTIB**—they were arriving in crowds; **ṠIÚO AN FÍLḃEACṬ AS RIṬ ṬRÉ M' AISNE 'NA CAISÍ CEOL**—Lo! poetry runs through my mind in musical streams. **AN FÁIO A ḃEIRḃ FÉAR AS FÁS 7 ḃIA 'NA ḃIA**—As long as grass grows and God is God!

(h) Further exx. of **ṚÁ+in+G. pronoun**:—1° **ḃÍ CALIGULA IN' ÍMPIRE SA RÓIM (CMḂ. 253)**—C. was Emperor in R. (Change). 2° **ṠO RAIḃ 'NA NAMAIḃ AS AN ÍMPIRE (Ibid.)**—that he was an enemy of the E. (Actual condition). 3° **ḃEADḃ SÉ NA CÓMARṬA ṬEINN ḃÓIB (CMḂ. 275)**—It would be a "sore sign" for them (Actual condition). 4° **... NA CÉANN SO-FÉICSE AR AN EASLAIS (CMḂ. 278)**—as visible Head of the Church (Change). 5° **UISGE A ḃEIRḃ NA CÁISE MÓR LÁIDIR (CMḂ. 302)**—water that shall

be a big strong stream (Actual condition). 6°  $\tau u \text{ } \xi \acute{\alpha} \text{ } \rho \acute{\alpha} \ddot{o}$   $\zeta o \text{ } \breve{f} u i l i r \text{ } i o' \text{ } \breve{o} i \alpha$  (CMÖ. 334)—saying that you are God! (Actual condition). 7° . . . .  $\breve{b} i \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } f \acute{\alpha} s \tau \alpha \text{ } s u \alpha s \text{ } ' n \alpha \text{ } \check{c} \alpha r \breve{o}$  (TBC. 11)—he had grown up to be a bull (Change). 8°  $\breve{b} i \text{ } \alpha i n m \text{ } \check{C} o n c u \breve{b} \alpha i r \text{ } ' n \alpha \text{ } \check{c} \alpha \check{c} \alpha \text{ } n i r \tau$  (TBC. 88)—C.'s name was a powerful support (Actual condition—with a hint of change). 9°  $C \alpha s \tau \alpha r \text{ } \zeta o \text{ } \breve{o} e o$  (=  $\breve{b} e r \breve{o} \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } \zeta o \text{ } \breve{o} e o$ )  $i n - \alpha \text{ } \Delta s \alpha \check{c} \acute{\alpha} n \text{ } l i n n \text{ } \acute{e}$  (TBC. 141)—it will be cast up to us as an eternal reproach (Actual condition). 10°  $\Delta n \text{ } c r o i \breve{o} e \text{ } s o \text{ } \tau \acute{\alpha} \text{ } ' n \alpha \text{ } \check{c} \alpha r r \alpha i \zeta \text{ } l e \text{ } c r u \alpha \breve{o} \alpha s$  (CCÜ. 167)—this heart as hard as a rock (Actual condition).

These exx. show that in this construction  $\tau \acute{\alpha}$  does not always imply change.

(i) **MAR A  $\breve{b} e \alpha \breve{o}$ :**—1°  $i \text{ } \breve{o} \tau r e o \text{ } . . . . \zeta o \text{ } \breve{b} f \acute{e} \alpha \check{c} \alpha \breve{o} \Delta n \text{ } \check{c} \alpha \check{c} \alpha i r \text{ } m \alpha r \text{ } \Delta \text{ } \breve{b} e \alpha \breve{o} \text{ } c o i l l$  (CMÖ. 295)—so that the city looked as though it were a wood. 2°  $\breve{o} o \text{ } \check{c} o n n \alpha i c \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } m \alpha r \text{ } \Delta \text{ } \breve{b} e \alpha \breve{o} \text{ } \acute{e} \Delta n$  (S.)—he saw what looked like a bird. 3°  $\tau \acute{\alpha} \text{ } m \alpha r \text{ } \Delta \text{ } \breve{b} e \alpha \breve{o} \text{ } c i \alpha l l \text{ } \breve{o} \alpha o n n \alpha \text{ } \Delta i \zeta e$  (TBC. 11)—he has almost human intelligence. 4°  $\breve{b} i \breve{o} \breve{o} \text{ } n \alpha \text{ } \breve{o} \alpha o i n e \text{ } \zeta o \text{ } l \acute{e} i r \text{ } m \alpha r \text{ } \Delta \text{ } \breve{b} e i \breve{o} i s \text{ } \Delta s \text{ } \Delta \text{ } m e \alpha \breve{b} \alpha i r \text{ } l e \text{ } b u i l e \text{ } \acute{\alpha} \check{c} \alpha i s$  (CMÖ. 332)—The people were all out of their minds, as it were, with joyous abandon.

(j) Note the following uses with the prep,  $\Delta r$ :—1°  $\tau \acute{\alpha} \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } \Delta r \text{ } \Delta n \text{ } \breve{b} f \acute{e} \alpha r \text{ } i s \text{ } \zeta i o r r \alpha \text{ } \breve{o} o' n \text{ } \epsilon \alpha s b o \zeta$  ( $\breve{b} \eta$ .)—he is next to the Bishop. 2°  $\breve{b} i \text{ } \breve{o} r i o \check{c} \acute{\alpha} i r \text{ } \breve{o} ' e o i n \text{ } f \acute{e} i n \text{ } \Delta r \text{ } \breve{o} u i n e \text{ } \Delta c u$  (MAC. 8)—one of them was a brother of John himself. 3°  $\breve{b} ' f \acute{e} i \breve{o} i r \text{ } \zeta o \text{ } m b e \alpha \breve{o} \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } \Delta i r \text{ } \Delta \zeta \text{ } C \acute{u} \text{ } \check{C} u l \alpha i n n \text{ } \Delta n \text{ } \rho \alpha \breve{o} \Delta r c \text{ } \breve{o} ' \text{ } f \acute{u} l \alpha n \zeta$  (TBC. 176)—Maybe it would take C.C. all his time to support the sight.

(k)  $\tau \acute{\alpha} . . . . l e$  means:—1° am with, on the side of. 2° advise, counsel, discuss with. 3° in temporal clauses  $\tau \acute{\alpha} . . . . l e$  denotes a pres. perf.,  $\breve{b} i . . . . l e$  a pluperf.:—1°  $\Delta n \text{ } \tau \acute{e} \text{ } n \acute{\alpha} \text{ } f u i l \text{ } l i o m \text{ } \tau \acute{\alpha} \text{ } s \acute{e} \text{ } \Delta m' \text{ } \check{c} o i n n i b$  (CS.)—He that is not with Me is against Me. 2°  $\eta i \text{ } \eta \alpha o n \text{ } m \acute{\alpha} i \check{c} \text{ } \breve{b} e i \check{c} \text{ } l e \alpha \tau$ —there's no use talking to you. 3°  $f \acute{e} \alpha \check{c} \text{ } , \text{ } \tau \acute{\alpha} i m \text{ } \Delta \zeta \text{ } \tau e \alpha \check{c} \tau \text{ } \Delta n n s o \text{ } l e \text{ } \tau r i \text{ } b l i \alpha n \alpha i \breve{b}$  (CMÖ. 329)—Behold, I have been coming here for three years;  $\breve{b} i \breve{o} \breve{o} \Delta r \text{ } \Delta n n \text{ } l e \text{ } m i$ —they had been there for a month.

**271.—Introductory  $\tau \acute{\alpha}$ :**—(a)  $\tau \acute{\alpha} \text{ } \breve{o} \alpha o i n e \text{ } \Delta n n$ ,  $\gamma$  is  $m \acute{o} \text{ } \Delta c u \text{ } e o l \alpha s \text{ } \breve{o} o \text{ } \check{c} r u i n n i \acute{u} \text{ } n \acute{\alpha} \text{ } \breve{b} e \alpha \check{c} \alpha \text{ } m \acute{\alpha} i \check{c} \text{ } \breve{o} o \text{ } \check{c} \alpha i \check{c} e \alpha m$  (Im.)—

some people make it more their study to know than to live well. (b) **ṬÁ ḡḁoíne ann, 7 le neart uaḡair do ḡéanfaíois trossaḡ ón mbiaḡ go bás** (Im.)—Some people, out of sheer pride, would fast from food till death. (c) **ṢÁ ṡurb é an ríṡ do ḡeir párdún a anma do'n ḡraíṡe** (es. 78)—Although the king pardons the culprit, (d) **ṢÁ ṡur ḡean cuir ḡ'á aniarṡma ria** (TBB. 89)—Even though some of its evil consequences affected her. (e) **ṬÁ a lán ḡḁoíne 7 is í a ḡcoil féin a ḡíonn uaḡa** (Im.)—many people seek their own way. (f) **ṬÁ ḡḁoíne, 7 ba maic leo ḡia do ṡásam** (Ser. 147)—Some people would like to satisfy God.

### Other Verbs.

**272.**—(a) The verb usually precedes its subj.—**ḡÁ ḡá raib sé aṡ ḡéanam brós** (S. 7)—one day as he was making shoes. (b) There are several exceptions to this rule:—1. Considerations of clearness and harmony, etc., may interfere with the normal order (VS+ complement of pred.). See 314, D. 2. The subj. N. is often projected (168). 3. A relative subj. precedes its verb. (c) Interrog. pronouns and adjectives are *not* exceptions:—**Cia ḡein é sin?**—Who did that? **Cia** is *not* subj. to **ḡein**, but pred. to **is** understood. The subj. of **ḡein** is **a** (rel. understood). The subj. of **is** is—**an tḡ a ḡein é.**

**273.**—**Number:**—(a) The 3 sg. is often used with a pl. subj.:—**Cia aḡeir ḡḁoíne is é mac an ḡuine** (CMḡ. 277)—Who do people say the Son of Man is? (b) The pl. is used with a sg. subj. when it is a n. of multitude:—1. **Ṭánaḡar an ceatṡar**—the four came. 2. **ḡár ḡeolsaḡ ál ṡaḡ cránaḡ coisṡríce** (KP. 19)—that the brood of every foreign sow did not suck. (c) When, however, the multitude is conceived as acting as a single whole, the sg. is preferable:—**ḡuḡairṡ an tseisear go raṡóis ann go fonnmṡar**—the six women said they would go willingly, (d) the sg. or pl. is used with a dual subj.—**ḡéanfaíḡ an ḡá leaḡar so mo ṡnó**—these two books will do me. (e) The analytic form of the vb., i.e., the 3 sg. along with **siḡ**, is used in 2 pl. pres. impft., fut. and condit., and pres. and past Subj.—1. **Ṭéíṡeann siḡ a ḡaice ṡaḡ orḡce**—

You go home every night. 2. *Can na čaoð ná filleað sibo?*—Why didn't you return (habitually)? 3. *Molfað sibo í*—you'll praise her. 4. *Do čáinfeað sibo í*—you would have blamed her. 5. *So rčéigro sibo slán a baile*—Safe home. 6. *Do mbuaileað sibo umam*—if I had met you. (f) A sg. vb. is used with a rel. subj. even when the latter is pl. in meaning:—*Čož leat pé leaðair atá uait*—take whatever books you want. (g) When the rel. is A. or D. (temporal, modal, local or instrumental) a pl. vb. may of course be used with a pl. subj.—1. *Na neiče a ðeinro siað*—the things they do. 2. *Nuair a ðeinro siað a leičéroi*—when they do such things. 3. *ba ðóic leat ar an gcuma 'n-a ðfuilro*—you would think, by the way they are. . . . 4. *Cia'cu čoir no čiar atáio*—whether they are in the East or West. 5. *pé'cu le scin nó le claiðeam a marbuiðeðar é*—whether it was with knife or sword they slew him. (g) The 3 sg. is the only form in use, in modern I., in the ordinary pass, or auton. paradigms. The extant *forms* of the vb. is (in all moods and tenses) are 3 sg.

**274.—Tense.**—(a) The pres. habitual is used with *má* in a fut. sense. The fut. may be used if there is distinct reference to one particular occasion. *Molfað sibo í má beio an molað tuillče aici*—You'll praise her of (on that particular occasion) she shall have deserved it. (b) The simple past tense has often the force of a pluperf.:—*bi cačaoir súžain aize do ðein sé féin ró féin* (S. 6)—he had a “soogawn” chair which he had made for himself. (c) In temporal clauses with *le*, the pres. is a pres. perft. and the past a pluperf. in force:—*So raib sean-aicne aš an annsprio orča le faða ð'aimsir* (Cm. 95)—That the evil Spirit had known them for ever so long. (See 270, k).

**275.—Mood:**—(a) **The Imperative** is sometimes interjectional and sometimes conjunctive in value:—*Aðair é*—True! You may say so. Hear, hear! *féac*—Look here (even when said to several). *Cuir i žčás so*—Even if. *Aðair féin so*—Even though. (b) The imper. signifies the act or event which one commands to take

place. It is changed into the vb. n. when it becomes dependent:—1° **ṬAIR** **ISTEAC**—Come in. But—**ABAIR** **LEIS** **TEAC** **ISTEAC**—Tell him to come in. 2° In such a case prohibitions are expressed by **ḡAN** before the vb. n. or vb. n. phrase—**ḤÁ** **ḡEIN** **ḡUIR**—Thou shalt not steal. But—**ṬÁ** **ÓRḡUIḡTE** **ḡUINN** **ḡAN** **ḡUIR** **A** **ḡÉANAM**—We are forbidden to steal.

**276 (a)—The Indicative**, being the mood of fact, expresses pres. or past facts; or future ones, not conceived as mere contingencies. The sentence may of course be negative. Or the fact may be referred to conditionally, but even then it is assumed to be a fact, past, present or future:—1. **ḠO** **ṬÁNAČAS** **ḡAM'** **IAARRAIḠ** **ḠAR** **ḡAINCÉILE** (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to seek me in marriage. 2. **ḠÁ** **ḡEIBÉANN** **SÍ** **LOM** **AR** **ḠONCUBAR**, **BERḠ** **ṬÁINTE** **BÓ** **ḡO** **ṬIUḡ** **Ó** **ḠUIGE** **ULAIḠ** **AḡAM** (TBC. 6)—If she gets a chance at C . . . . I shall have . . . . (b) In the apodosis of a condit. sentence the Indic. is sometimes used for the Condit., to express the certainty of the result:—**ḠUNA** **ḠBEAIḠ** **ṬUSA**, **ḠO** **ḠÍOS** **ḠARḠ** **AḠU**—Had it not been for you, they would certainly have killed me.

**277.—The Conditional** partakes of the nature of a mood as well as a tense. (a) As a tense it is a secondary fut., *i.e.*, it represents the simple fut. when dependent on, or brought into connection with the past. **ḠUBAIRṬ** **SÉ** **INḠÉ** **ḡO** **ḠTIOCFAIḠ** **SÉ** **INḠIU**—he said yesterday he would come to-day. (This represents the direct statement—**ṬIOCFAIḠ** **IMBÁIREAC**). The simple fut. is used after the pres. or the fut.—**ḠEIR** **SÉ** (**ḠÉARFAIḠ** **SÉ**) **ḡO** **ḠTIOCFAIḠ** **SÉ**—He says (will say) that he'll come. **SÉ** **RUḠ** **A** **ḠEAPAS** **ḠÁ** **ḡO** **RAḡAIḠ** **SÍ** **I** **LAIGE**—I really thought she would faint. (This represents the direct thought—**RAḡAIḠ** **SÍ** **I** **LAIGE**). (b) In rhetorical questions like the following, where it is virtually equivalent to a past indic., the “tense” value is uppermost:—1. **ḠAIḠ** **A** **ḠÍFINN** **ÓS** **MO** **ḠÓḠAIR** **AMAC** **AČ** **AN** **ḡALLÁN!** (S.)—What should I see in front of me but a pillar-stone! (More vivid than **ḠO** **ḠONNAC**). 2. **CÉ** **ḠÍFIḠÍS** **Aḡ** **TEAC** **ḠUN** **AN** **ḠORAI** **AČ** **SÉAIḠNA** (S. 89)—(A vivid way of saying **ḠO** **ḠONNACAḠAR** . .



Or, equally vivid:—**b'é** ðuine ðonnacacðar . . . . **ac** **s!**, (c) The condit. occurs sometimes where English has the past tense.—**Ac** ní ðéanfaínn ruð ort—But I didn't do as you wished. Much stronger than níor ðeimeas, which simply express the fact; whereas the condit. embraces the whole mental atmosphere that engendered the fact. Here the modal, not the tense value is uppermost. It is, in fact, a conditional sentence, with the protasis suppressed. The condit. may often have any one of three tense values:—1. **ní** f'éadfaínn a ínnaint ðuit—I couldn't tell you (now, or habitually). 2. I couldn't have told you. 3. I couldn't tell you (in the fut.). The past Subj. with **ðá** has also these three tense values.

**278.—The Subjunctive** is the mood of **Idea**. Hence it is used:—(a) As an Optative (an idea to be realised):—1. **So** ðfóiríð ðia ort—God help you. (2) **So** mbuanuigíð ðia éu—Long life! 3. **Surab** amlaíð ðuit—The same to you. 4. **Nár** cúitigítear do sáoctar leat—May your efforts not be rewarded. 5. **Nár** f'eicið mé an ðoilgeas céadna i súilíð don mná eile arís coròce (**Smb.** 91)—May I never again see the same grief in the eyes of any woman. (b) To express indefinite time:—The action or event is viewed as a pure contingency:—1. **Ná** labðair éun so labðarctar leat—Don't speak until you're spoken to (if that happens). 2. **Sar** a nðruidead níos sia ó aimsir an coláisde (**msf.** 108)—Before I farther depart from my College days. (The departure is still vague). (c) As a final Subj. (to denote the idea aimed at):—1. **So** zcuiríð sé bara a méire i n-uisge (**cmð.** 334)—That he may dip the tip of his finger in water. 2. **Zaib** na h-eic ðúinn, a laoiğ, so leanam iad (**TBC.** 66)—Yoke us the horses, L., that we may follow them. (d) With **ðá** (of an unreal condition):—1. **ðá** nðeintí i ðcuíre 7 i síðón na mírbúiltí a ðeineað ionaib-se is fad ó a beað aicrige ðéanta acu (**cmð.** 315)—If in T. and S. had been wrought the miracles that have been wrought in you, they would long since have done penance. 2. **ðá** mba fear omnac imeazlac a beað pósta azam ní oirfimis ðá céile (**TBC** 3)—Had I married a fearsome timorous husband, we

should not have suited each other, (e) With *muna* (to express uncertainty or indefiniteness):—1. *Muna n-icrò sib feoil mic an Duine, 7 muna n-ólair sib a cuir folá, ní beir beatha aghaid ionaid* (CMO. 262)—Unless ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye shall not have life in you. 2. *Muna n-éistir sé leat, tabair leat duine nó beirt eile* (CMO. 292)—If he listens not, bring with you one or two others.

### Syntax of Conditional Sentences..

**279.**—In actual pres. suppositions with *má*, the apodosis may be:—1. Pres. indie. 2. Impft. 3. Past. 4. Fut. 5. Condit. 6. Imper. 7. Optative Subj.—*má tá sé ann* (Protasis):—1. *tá an lá aghainn*, we win. 2. *bíod sé ann anuirio leis*—he used to be there last year too. 3. *bí dearmad orm*—I was wrong. 4. *bea an sgeal go maic*—things will be all right. 5. *bea sé conntabrtac é déanam*—it would be dangerous to do it. 6. *labra sé*—let him speak. 7. *ná ra' maic aghat-sa*—no thanks to you!

**280.**—In past supposition with *má*, the apodosis may be the same:—*má bí sé ann* (Protasis):—1. *tá buairte aghainn air*—we've beaten him. 2. *bíod sé ann anuirio, leis*. 3. *d'airis sé an sgeal go léir*—he heard the whole story. 4. *tabrfair sé fiaonaise*—he'll give evidence. 5. *b'fearra úinn glaoðac isteach air*—we'd better call him in. 6. *bíod sé in' fínne aghainn anois*—let's have him as a witness now. 7. *Conac san air!*—more power to him!

**281.**—In hab. pres. suppositions, the apodosis may take similar forms:—*má téigeann sé a baile sac oróce* (Protasis):—1. *tá dearmad ormsa*—I'm mistaken. 2. *ní bíonn puinn fáilte roimis*—he's not very welcome. 3. *bíod dearmad ar t-ag*—T. was mistaken. 4. *b'olc uaitse gan é innsint úinn*—you might have told us. 5. *beir eactra i dtig áiríche anocht*—there will be tales in a certain house to-night. 6. *bea sé cóm maic aghainn éirge as*—we might as well give it up. 7. *abair leis*

(b) 1° Ό'ΡΆΣ ΜΟΪΡΙΚΟΣ Α ΡΑΙΘ ΑΙΣΕ ΑΣ ΑΡΙΣΤΕΑΣ Ο'Α

mb'é féin a gheobhad b'as ar dtúis (lúc. 27)—M. left all his property to A. in case he predeceased him. The apodosis is merely hinted at. Expressed, it would be—  
 1° *1 dtreo, dá mb'é féin . . . . go bfuigead A. a raib aige.*  
 2° *D'airig sé an gheallamaint a tug Íosa do'n duine uasal, dá sgaradh sé leis an saibbreas saoghalta (CMO. 364)*—He heard the promise Jesus had given the young man if he would discard his worldly goods. Here the implied apodosis is:—(*Do gheall sé dó dá . . . .*) *go mbeadh saibbreas ar neam aige (CMO. 363)*—he would have riches in heaven. 3° *Dá mb'é Seán Ceatac féin é (S.)*—Even S.C.

(c) 1° *Dá nglacadh sé iad, bí buaire ag an áirseoir air (CMO. 93)*—Had He accepted them, it meant triumph for the devil. 2. *Dá mbeinn na cás bíos cóim marb le h-Art (S.)*—Had I been in his place I should surely have been as dead as a door-nail.

**286.—Auxiliary *dein*:**—Used to express insistence (in command or request); premeditation, deliberate-ness, a promise, etc.:—1° *Déanfaid-sa é tógailt suas (CMO. 261)*—I will raise him up (Promise). 2° *Déanfaid siad cuid acu do m'arbhú (CMO. 324)*—They will actually kill some of them (Premeditation). 3° *Déineadar an teampal do choisreacadh (CMO. 332)*—They proceeded to consecrate the Temple (Deliberate action). 4° *Ad' iarraid go ndéanfaid sé ceart a cur i bfeirém dí (CMO. 358)*—Seeking that he would see that her rights were secured. (Premeditation). 5° *Go ndearnadh é féin do nige i bfuil ríog (FF. Bk. I, 322)*—till he should contrive to wash in a king's blood (Deliberateness). 6. *Deinid é cóimlionaid (bh. 256)*—See that ye fulfil it (Insistence in command). 7° *Dein-se ár scaitana do croid (bh. 823)*—Go and fight our battles (Insistence in request).

**287.—Neutral *dein*:**—Used in a “quasi-passive” sense, meaning—“becomes, changes into”:—1° *An cloic . . . do rinne sliaib mór dí (TBB. 3)*—The stone became a huge mountain. 2° *Déanfaid fairisíneac de (CMO. 360)*—He will become a Pharisee. 3° *Déanfaid*

bró lic' oigre d'ár gcuid fola (TBC. 60)—Our blood will change into a mass of ice. 4° bí sí aḡ calcað 7 aḡ cruachaint go dtí gur òein cloc dí (lúc. 7)—She stiffened and hardened, and finally changed into stone. 5° Do òein licíní sinne de'n airgead (S.)—The money was transformed into little flat pebbles.

**288.—The Verb deirim:**—(a) This vb. and its vb. n. ráð are often used where English has “think”:—1° Déarfad' duine—One would think. 2° ní deirim ná go bfuil an ceart aḡat—I'm inclined to think you're right. 3° Bí iongna mo croidhe orm, a ráð go n'déanfadh sé é—I was amazed to think he would do it. (b) The part. abartha is stronger than ráithe:—Tá abartha aḡam go dtadbarfadh amach sib as an nguais seo atá oraidh san Éiript (bh.)—I have said (and I mean to stand by it) that I will rescue you from this peril you are in, in Egypt.

**289.—Téigim.**—The simple form cuaid is often used for deaḡaid, deachaid, especially when the meaning is metaphorical.—1° Tá méid a bí an cion ar dtúis, gur cuaidh ana-breis air le cúpla lá (TBC. 162)—Great though the affection was at first, that it had increased considerably the last couple of days. 2° Dubhairt sí liom gur cuas i scothuigtheacht go seoiḡ ó anuiridh—She told me I had grown very stout since last year.

Deaḡaid (deachaid) is also used:—Aḡus féad go ndeaḡaid sé òe bean d'fhágáil a beadh dílis dó (FSA. 11)—And yet he failed to secure a wife who would be faithful

**290.—Impersonal Verbs:**—1° bí eagal air go scoilfeadh air—He was afraid he would split. 2° Is é is dóiciḡe go n-éireochaid eatortha—It's very likely they'll disagree. 3° ba dóbair go gcaillfeadh ar a misneach—Her courage almost failed her. 4° Do cuaidh dá gcuid fíona—Their wine failed. 5° Raḡaid díot é déanamh—You'll fail to do it. 6° Do b'ris ar an bfoirne aḡam—My patience became exhausted. 7° Do maoluiḡ ar an ndóigras, 7 do laguiḡ ar an ndóitse (bh. 261)—The zeal waned, and the loyalty weakened. 8° Ceip ortha an

ceist do réiútead (bñ. 299)—They failed to solve the question. Cf.—189.

**291—The Autonomous Forms:**—(a) It has been said that *ṭáṭar buailṭe* is the pass. of the act. auton., *buailcear*. This is wrong. *ṭáṭar buailṭe* is an actual pres., whereas *buailtear* is an habitual pres. The true pass. of *buailtear* is *bítear buailṭe*—someone is (habitually) struck; and even this represents the act as just completed, or else refers to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. form for “someone is being struck (habitually).” The essence of the auton. is that the subject is suppressed. Hence no word defining the sex or the number of the subject is permissible. *bítear dá bualaḁ* (b——, mb——) in the sense of “someone (man, woman, or several people) is being struck” is impossible as a pass.-auton. It says too much about the subject. *bítear dá bualaḁ* is an act. auton. form, and can mean only—“someone is habitually striking him (it).” *bítear buailṭe* is pass.-auton., but with the restrictions noted above.

(b) The following pass.-auton. forms are found. The corresponding active-auton. forms are given in the first column:—

### Active-Autonomous

### Passive-Autonomous

1° Pres. indic, actual:—

*ṭáṭar aḡ bualaḁ*—someone is now striking.

*ṭáṭar buailṭe*—someone is now just—struck.

(Or *ṭáṭar buailṭe* may refer to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. for “someone is now being struck.” That requires the purely pass. form “*ṭá duine éigin dá bualaḁ*.” See (a) above).

2° Present Habitual:—

(a) *buailtear*—someone strikes.

(a) *bítear buailṭe*.

(But see (a) above).

(b) *bítear aḡ bualaḁ*—someone is striking (contemporaneous).

(b) Wanting. See 292.

## 3° Past Indicative:—

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱԼԵԱԾ—someone struck.                | (a) ԾԻՇԵԱՏ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) Ծօ ԾԻՇԵԱՏ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—someone was striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .           |

## 4° Future Indicative:—

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| (a) ԲԱԼԻԲԱՐ—someone will strike.              | (a) ԲԵԻԲԱՐ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) ԲԵԻԲԱՐ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—someone will be striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .           |

## 5° Conditional:—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱԼԻԲԻ—someone would strike.              | (a) ԲԵԻԲԻ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) Ծօ ԲԵԻԲԻ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—someone would be striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .          |

## 6° Imperfect Indicative:—

- |   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱԼԻՇԻ—someone used to strike.             | (a) ԾԻՇԻ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) Ծօ ԾԻՇԻ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—someone used to be striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .         |

## 7° Imperative:—

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| (a) ԲԱԼԻՇԵԱՐ—let someone strike.             | (a) ԾԻՇԵԱՐ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) ԾԻՇԵԱՐ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—let someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .           |

## 8° Present Subjunctive:—

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| (a) Շօ ԵԲԱԼԻՇԵԱՐ—may someone strike.            | (a) Շօ ԵԱԾՇԱՐ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) Շօ ԵԱԾՇԱՐ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—may someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .              |

## 9° Past Subjunctive:—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (a) ԾԱ ԵԲԱԼԻՇԻ—if someone were to strike.        | (a) ԾԱ ԵԲԵԻԲԻ ԲԱԼԻՇԵ. See (a) <b>291</b> . |
| (b) ԾԱ ԵԲԵԻԲԻ ԱՅ ԲԱԼԱԾ—if someone were striking. | (b) Wanting. See <b>292</b> .              |

**292.**—1° The remarks on *buaile* in **291** (a) apply to all the pass.-auton. forms given above. The (b) forms are wanting in all the moods and tenses in the pass.-auton. paradigm. In the fut., e.g., there is no such form for “someone will be being struck.” *beirò tuine éigin* *νά bualað* is a non-auton. pass. *beifar as bualað* *tuine éigin*, is active-autonomous.

2° (a) It is, therefore, wrong to say (as has been said) that the Auton. has a complete Pass., of its own. (b) It is wrong to say that the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used with it. In “*buailear é*” *é* is not disjunctive. It is A. governed by *buailear*, just as in “*buaile é*” it is A. governed by *buaile*. (c) The forms *buailear*, *buaileað*, *buailear*, *buailear*, *buailear*, may be either pass., or auton. This is clear not only from old and mid. I., but also from mod. I. Keating often uses such forms in a pass. sense:—1. *marbada leis é* (FF. Bk. I, 42)—he was slain by him. 2. *ollmhuiscgear long leis* (*Ibid.* 52)—a ship is equipped by him. K., in fact was inordinately fond of the passive. This, however, cannot disprove the fact that there is an Autonomous in mod. I. The *τά-* forms are conclusive proof of this; and those of other intrans. verbs (e.g., *siúbaltear*), though they might be explained as impersonal passives, are certainly autonomous in the minds of many speakers and writers of Irish.

3° The initial consonant of auton. (or pass.) forms often resists aspiration:—(a) *ní dóca go raibadar i bfað sa cáthair sar ar fiafruigeað díob cérb’ as iad* (CMO. 57)—Probably they hadn’t been long in the city before they were asked where they were from. (b) *Do tánachtas ’zam’ iarraib mar bain-céile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to ask me in marriage.

### **293.—Special uses of the Participle:—**

A.—The Participle of Necessity:—In O.I. this was distinct from the ordinary participle. In mod. I. they have become confused:—1° *ní gearánta duit*—You need not complain. 2° *ní beirte duit ann*—You should not be there. 3° *ní h-ormsa is tógta san*—I am not to be blamed for that. 4° *as so an clann is clann dárírib*;



ῤΙÚ so is σύντε súǵ ὃο číoǵ (ḥaic. p. 91)—Here are the genuine children—to them you should offer the milk of your breasts. 5° CREIṪČE ǵNÍOM ROIM ČAINNT IS ČAIRČ (*Ibid.*)—Deeds are to be credited, in preference to words and paper.

B.—Forms with prefix ion, -in:—(a) 1° Δn RIAǴΔIL buṪ inleanτα (ṪṪ. 56)—The rule that should be followed. 2° MÓRÁN ὃο neičIṪ inscríoṪčΔ uIRČI (*Ibid.* 94)—Many things that ought to be written about her. 3° Δs so is iontuigčE (FF. Bk. I, 58)—From this it is to be inferred. 4° Is inmeΔσΔ (*Ibid.* 64)—It is probable. (b) Those like inḑeΔṪma—fit for action:—1° IonΔIRM (*Ibid.*)—able to bear arms. As ΔIRM looked like a G. (which of course it is not) such forms may have given rise to inḑeΔṪma, etc.

2° NÍ ionRÁIṪ (*Ibid.* 146.)—It is not to be said. 3° é ḑéin ὃο čeΔngΔl re Ṫeič ionΔistIR (TBC. 287)—To gird himself to be fit for a journey.

## CHAPTER VI.

### SYNTAX OF ADVERBS.

294.—Note the following:—

1. *An saogal atá suas iníu*—the times that are in existence now.

2. *Óioðar annsúð anuas ar a cúro tailim (bh.)*—There they were—planted on his land!

3. *Šuas* (better *čuas*)—South (Art Bennett):—Is *áro an céim do bair seažán ó dálaiž do ollam's do báro na tíre suas* (CCU. 160)—High degree giveth S. O'D. to the learned bards of the South.

4. *ṽair aníos*—come up (from below); *ṽair anuas*—come down (from above); *ṽair (téanam) suas*—come up (when the speaker is coming up also).

5. *Ražað-sa anonn annso* (with emphasis on *anonn*)—I'll go aside here.

6. *Íoir* still survives in Rathlin I. in the meaning of “at all.”—*An ṽciž tu anočt, nó an ṽciž čú amárač? nó muna ṽciž čú íoir, is truaž atá mé* (CCU. 102)—Will you come to-night, or will you come to-morrow? Or, if you come not at all, my state is to be pitied!

7. *I ṽcreo žo mbeað nearc na namað íoižče amuič is amáč* (bh. 254)—So that the enemies' strength should be utterly exhausted.

8. *Óí an muinntir óž aš éirže suas, 7 an muinntir a óí suas as dul i n-aois* (bh. 256)—The young people were growing up, and those who were grown up were getting old.

9. *In coižčròis is lá iníu*—this day fortnight (in the past), *is=žus an*—*lit.*, a fortnight until to-day; (*žus=žo+initial s-* of article).

10. In *cá*=where? we seem to have the interrog. pron. *ca+an* (the prep. (?) found in *aníar*, etc.) suffixed.

The natural meaning is, therefore, “whence,” but the word is used also meaning “where” and “whither.”

11. When the idea of motion towards is involved, even though the verb is not one of motion, *isteaċ* and *amaċ* are used:—*Ĉóm luaċ is bíodar isteaċ inni do stað an ġaoċ* (CMO. 258)—As soon as they had entered the boat the wind fell.

**295.**—In—*pé sġéal é*, at any rate, etc., *pé* is supposed to stand for *ġrò bé*, where *bé* is pres. subj. of *τά*. This is possible in—*pé oune Δ βερò ann*—whoever will be there—*lit.* though there be a person who will be there. But in—*pé sġéal é, pé hé féin*, etc., where clearly we have to deal with the copula, it seems better to make *pé (bé)=b'é*, i.e., the pres. Subj. of the copula+*é*. Thus:—*pé sġéal é=ġrò b'é an sġéal (Δ is) é*—though the state of affairs be this. There seems to have been confusion between the copula and the substantive vb. here. Note that *é* in *pé* does not change for gender or number. This is due to *pé<bé=*pres. Subj. of *τά*.

**296.**—**Expression of the Date:**—Supposing to-day is Wed., July 14th, note the following way of referring to fut. and past dates:—

1° Fut.—

The 21st July will be:—*seāċtmain ó inniu.*

„ 22nd	„ „	:—	„ „	<i>imbáireāċ.</i>
„ 23rd	„ „	:—	„	<i>ón Aoine seo cúġainn.</i>
„ 16th	„ „	:—	<i>umanoirċear</i>	<i>(arġú, arú, aċrú imbáireāċ).</i>
„ 17th	„ „	:—	<i>dia Saċairn</i>	<i>seo cúġainn.</i>
„ 28th	„ „	:—	<i>Coisċròis</i>	<i>ó inniu.</i>
„ 29th	„ „	:—	„ „	<i>imbáireāċ.</i>
„ 30th	„ „	:—	„	<i>ón Aoine seo cúġainn.</i>
„ 24th	„ „	:—	<i>seāċtmain ón Saċarn</i>	<i>so cúġainn.</i>
„ 4th Aug.	„ „	:—	<i>trí seāċtmaine</i>	<i>ó inniu.</i>
„ 11th	„ „	:—	<i>ċeire</i>	„ „ „
„ 5th	„ „	:—	<i>trí</i>	„ „ <i>imbáireāċ.</i>
„ 6th	„ „	:—	„ „	<i>ón Aoine seo cúġainn.</i>

2° Past.—

- 7th July :—SEACTMÁIN IS LÁ INDIU.  
 6th „ :— „ „ „ INDE.  
 8th „ :—DARDAOIN SEO ŠAIB ĆARAINN.  
 5th „ :—DIA LUAIN „ „ „  
 30th June :—COISCTIÖIS IS LÁ INDIU.  
 23rd „ :—TRÍ SEACTMÁINE IS LÁ INDIU.  
 16th „ :—ĆEITRE „ „ „  
 29th „ :—COISCTIÖIS IS LÁ INDE.  
 22nd „ :—TRÍ SEACTMÁINE IS LÁ INDE.  
 15th „ :—ĆEITRE „ „ „  
 1st July :—SEACTMÁIN IS AN DARDAOIN SEO ŠAIB  
 ĆARAINN.  
 24th June :—COISCTIÖIS IS AN DARDAOIN SEO ŠAIB ĆAR-  
 AINN.  
 17th „ :—TRÍ SEACTMÁINE IS AN DARDAOIN SEO ŠAIB  
 ĆARAINN.  
 10th „ :—ĆEITRE SEACTMÁINE IS AN DARDAOIN SEO  
 ŠAIB ĆARAINN.

**297.**—All these expressions (296) are adverbial. SEACTMÁIN (COISCTIÖIS (-öeas), etc.) Ó—are used only with INDIU and IMBÁIREAC—not with INDE, ARBÚ INDE, or UMANOIRĊEAR. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week. So, seacTMÁin (coisctiÖis, etc.) is LÁ—are to be used only with INDIU, INDE—not with ARBÚ INDE, nor IMBÁIREAC, nor UMANOIRĊEAR. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week.

**298.**—Whenever the day in question can be designated (adverbially) by INDIU, INDE, IMBÁIREAC, AĊRÚ INDE, UMANOIRĊEAR (AĊRÚ IMBÁIREAC) these are the forms to be used—not DIA LUAIN, etc.

## CHAPTER VII.

### SYNTAX OF CONJUNCTIONS.

**299** (a)—The conj. **agus** is connected with the adj. **ogus**, in **fozus**, near. Hence it is used to connect two events which happen simultaneously, or close to each other in time:—1° **Is léir ón scainnt go raib̃ aigne na mair̃e 7 í ag ráð na b̃focal** (CM̃. 30)—It is clear from what she said that the Virgin's mind as she said the words. . . . 2° **b̃í mórán áðbair mãctnaim̃ ag an slánuĩg̃teoir 7 é 'na sũe annsú** (CM̃. 138)—The Saviour had much food for reflection as He sat there. 3° **b̃í an t-arán briste 7 an t-iasc briste ag méadú i láim an t̃igearna 7 é g̃á d̃abairt do sna d̃eisgiobuil** (CM̃. 256)—The pieces of bread and of fish were multiplying in the Lord's hand, as He gave them to the disciples.

(b) In neg. sentences **agus** is conjunctive, **ná** disjunctive:—**Agus**:—1° **ní raib̃ puinn saog̃altais ag loachim 7 Anna** (CM̃. 35)—J. and A. (taken together as one domestic establishment) had not much worldly wealth. 2° **ní raib̃ cailín ar sl̃õct ádam 7 é̃da d̃ob' uaisle os cómair d̃é ná í** (CM̃. 280-1)—There was no maid of the seed of A. and E. higher in God's sight than She. 3° **An té . . . ná d̃eanf̃að meas cruinn roim ré ar an scostas, 7 ar an d̃òbar 7 ar an eolus nár̃b' f̃uláir a b̃eic̃ ag an lũct oibre 7 ag na saoir** (CM̃. 328)—He who would not calculate carefully beforehand the cost and the material and the knowledge that the masons and other workmen must have. . . . (All these items considered, not separately, but together). 4° **ní h-eol dom don liaig̃ is mó eolus 7 tuis̃int ná é**—I know of no leech who combines more knowledge and intelligence than he does.

**ná**:—1° **níl a cũo ná a clú aige sũo**—That fellow

has neither riches nor reputation. 2° *níl so ná súo acu*—They have neither the one thing nor the other. 3° *ní duibear go ndéanfaimn é ná ná ndéanfaimn*—I neither said I would do it nor that I wouldn't.

(c) *ní* followed by *ná* gives a resultant affirmative:—1° *ní deirim ná go bfuil an ceart agat*—I'm inclined to think you're right. 2° *ní déarfaimn ná gur deaḡ-ḡuine é*—I'm disposed to think he's a good fellow. 3° *ní baogal ná gur cuig na Rómánaig luac an tabarctais sin* (bñ. 833)—One may be sure that the Romans realised the value of this gift.

(d) *ní . . . . ná ní*.—This combination has a cumulative negative force:—1° *ní raib eagla Dé air, ná ní raib beann ar ḡuine aige* (CMḶ. 358)—He hadn't the fear of God, no, nor care for man, either. 2° *ní leogaid siad ort go bfeicid siad é, ná ní leigeann seisean air go bfeiceann sé iad* (TBC. 149)—They don't pretend that they see him. No more does he pretend that he sees them.

(e) *ná ná . . . . nó ná*.—In a negative clause, when the negative affects *nó*, the latter becomes *ná*:—*Má deintear toil an tÍgearna is cuma an domhan cad eile a deintear ná ná deintear. Mara ndeintear toil an t., cad é an tairbe don nḡ eile a deintear nú ná deintear?* (CMḶ. 319)—If one does the Lord's will, it matters not one whit what else one does or does not. If one does not do the Lord's will, what's the use of anything else he does or does not?

(f) The use of *má* with the Condit. should be noted:—*Cá bfuil an cura a tabrfad bean leis i scoinnib a toile? Má tabrfad ní fíor-cura é* (TBC. 134)—Where is the knight who would bring a wife with him against her will? If he did, he's no true knight!

This assumes the supposition to be true.

(g) *nó* has often the meaning—"or else":—*ní maic í do ciall, nó níor múinis a gceact go cruinn doḡ ceactairib* (TBC. 17)—You haven't much sense, or else you didn't teach your messengers their lesson well!

(h) *MARA*=*munab*:—1° *Mara fiú, ám, fillfid bur síoccáin oraid féin* (CMḶ. 246)—If, however, it is not worthy (of it) your peace will return to yourselves.

2° **MARA** **MAIT** **LIÖ** **MISE** **DO** **CREIDEAMAINC** (**CMÖ.** 334)—If ye do not wish to believe Me. 3° In U.I. **ACT** **MAR** often=**muna**:—Is **DUINE** **BOCT** **SUARAC** **MÉ** **ACT** **MAR** **BFAIGIÖ** **MÉ** **CU** **MAR** **SPRÉ** (**CÖU.** 100)—I'm a poor wretched fellow, if I do not get you to wed.

(i) **ÖÁ** **mba**=Even.—1° **ÖÁ** **mb'iaö** **na** **deisgiobuil** **féin** **iaö** **bí** **a** **tuaisgint** **maol** (**CMÖ.** 281)—Even the disciples' intelligence was clouded. 2° **ÖÁ** **mba** **as** **tráct** **ar** **áilneact** **féin** **é**, **is** **breáštá** **so** **mór** **í** **ná** **deiröre** (**TBC.** 5)—Talking even of beauty she's fairer far than D. (Supply, as apodosis, something like—**do** **caitfimís** **so** **amál**).

(j) **ÖÁ** introduces an unreal supposition, so that words like **puinn**, which can be used only in a neg. or virtually neg. clause, may occur with it:—**ÖÁ** **mbeaö** **sé** **ann**, **7** **eolas** **na** **h-áite** **in-a** **raib** **sé** **as** **puinn** **daoine**, **ní** **baogal** **ná** **so** **bfašaö** **na** **ríšt** **pášanača** **san** **an** **τ-eolas** (**Mac.** 10)—If it (a supposed hidden treasure) had existed, and many people knew where it was, those pagan kings would certainly have had the knowledge of its whereabouts.

(k) The N. after **ná**, than:—As **ná** contains a petrified form of the rel. 3 sg. of **τá** (**88c**), the n. pron., phrase or clause following it may often be parsed as subj. N. to that verb:—1° **τaoi-se** **i** **bfaö** **níos** **fearr** **na** **mise**—You are much better than I (am). 2° **τá** **sí** **níos** **deise** **ná** **mar** **is** **óic** **leatsa**—She's prettier than you think. But there is sometimes an alternative interpretation:—**níl** **doinne** **is** **fearr** **a** **čáinig** **as** **ná** **mise**—No one escaped better than I.—Here, we may supply after **ná**—**mar** **a** **čáinig** (**mise**) **as**. **Mise** being subj. N. to **čáinig**, and the whole clause **mar** . . . **as**, subj. N. after **ná**.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### SYNTAX OF PREPOSITIONS.

**300.—Partitive *de*:**—Occurs chiefly:—

1° After an adj. or n. of magnitude, multitude, intensity, description, etc.:—(a) *Sluaḡ de òaoimib̃ boḱta na caḱraḱ* (CMṼ. 57)—Many of the poor of the city. (b) *Ón ḡceann ḱeas de'n loḱ* (CMṼ. 254)—from the South end of the lake. (c) *ḡaḱ beaḡ de p̃ionós uirḱi* (CMṼ. 305)—that it is sufficient punishment for her. (d) *Ḍon léas de ḱolus na f̃irinne*—a single ray of the light of truth.

2° After proleptic *sé*, *so*, *san*, *ḁ*; also after analeptic *san*:—

(a) *An mbeaḱ sé de m̃isneac̃ ḁḡ íosa an tsabbóro do ḡárú* (CMṼ. 336)—would Jesus have the courage to violate the Sabbath. (b) Sometimes proleptic *sé* is omitted:—*ḡí raiḱ de òánaḱt ann ḁ súile ḁmáin d̃iompáil suas cun na b̃flaḱas* (CMṼ. 359)—He was not bold enough to raise even his eyes to Heaven. (c) *ḡá cuirimís san de m̃asla ḁr ḁr ḡlóire ḡo d̃teic̃fimis̃ ón ḡcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. (d) *b̃ḁ m̃aiḱ an ḡḡeal ḁ b̃eic̃ de ḱiubaiḱte uirḱi é ḡá p̃osaḱ* (S. 112)—It would have been a good thing if she were so unfortunate as to have him marry her. (e) *Is beaḡ duine ḁ raiḱ sé de òánaid̃eac̃t ann cuairḱ ḱaḱairḱ ḁr ḁ teac̃* (Smb. 15)—Few people were bold enough to visit her house. (f) *ḡí raiḱ sé de m̃isneac̃ aige d̃ul isteac̃* (Smb. 147)—He hadn't the courage to go in.

3° After a neg. (including *ḡan*) with *ḁḱ*:—

(a) *ḡí b̃ioḱ de ḱlúḱac̃ aḱr ḁḱ seic̃e f̃an ḱuim aḱr* (CMṼ. 81)—His only clothing was a hide around his waist. (b) *Ḍḡus ḡan de òaoimib̃ innḱe ḁḱ cúḡ m̃íle f̃ear 7 ḱeic̃re m̃íle ban* (FF. Bk. 1, 168)—Seeing that there were in it only 5,000 men and 4,000 women. (c) *ḡí raiḱ de ḱáirḱib̃*



Δῆ πὸλ τοῦ ἀττ ἀ γλέας ceoil (Smb.)—P.D. had no friend but his instrument.

4° Before the compound relative (Cf. 1°):—

(a) Ἀν τὲ is breaghta d'á bfeacair sùil duine riann ar an saoghal so (S. 61)—The finest person that human eye ever saw in this world. (b) Sí bean is uaisle í d'á raib riann ann, 7 d'á mberò go deo ann—She's the noblest woman that ever was, or ever will be.

5° After the compound relative (Cf. 1°):—

(a) I ndiaib ar cuic d'uaislib lochlannach leis (FF. II. 224)—Seeing he had slain so many Lochlannach nobles, (b) Tréis ar tugamair de grá 7 de cion 7 d'annsaict d'á céile (TBC. 165)—After all the love and heartfelt attachment we had given each other.

6° After comparatives and superlatives:—

(a) Is fearr de tair é ná an Finnbeannach (TBC. 8)—He's a better bull than Whitehorn. (b) Ba measa de duine mé Δῆ τεατ dom (Im. 36)—I was a worse man on leaving them.

7° By a sort of inversion the noun of description follows de:—

le comā de'n tsagas san (TBC. 94)—with this sort of condition. But we say—Δ leiréir de comā, not comā d'á leiréir.

**301.—Defining de (do):**—(a) Is eol duic ó cainnt daoine m'fearbas-sa de rí, 7 a olcas san d'foḡlaib (lúc. 32)—From what people say you know how good a King I was, and how bad a robber he was. (b) Do b'ríḡ go raib do ceangal aise ar an mbás, gan teact d'á ionnsaige gan forfógra (TBB. 106)—Because he had bound Death not to come to him without forewarning him. (c) Rug (sé) neam do roḡain (FF. II, 112)—Took Heaven as his choice.

**302.—Partitive Δῆ:**—(a) Cia'cu acu san is fearr leat?—Which of these do you prefer? (b) D'á ḡeire beirt aḡainn tá dearmad déanta aḡainn—Smart as the two of us are, we've made a mistake. (c) So—Aoine, duine, ana-cuib acu—Any, one, many of them. (d) Do leigis

sé an cúir acu a bí i ngáib le leigeas (CMO. 255)—He cured those of them that needed a cure.

**303.—Prepositional Phrases:—**These may be either:—

A.—Substantival. B.—Adverbial. C.—Adjectival.—A. have been dealt with.

B.—1° bí sé ar meisge—He was in a drunken state. 2° le neart buile 7 badoise adubairt sé an cainnt—He said the words out of sheer mad folly.

C.—1° bean gan riagail bean gan ciall—A lawless woman is a senseless one. 2° fear fé leic riam is eadé—He's altogether an original fellow. 3° Duine le dia, is fearr leis biað ná bean (UP.)—A man of God prefers food to a woman! 4° As gac áir 7 i gcian 7 i gcómgar (n. 120)—From every direction, far and near.

**304.—Meanings and Uses of the Simple Prepositions:—**

A.—Before nouns and pronouns:—

1° **AR**.—Orig. meaning—before, for, because of.

(a) Modal:—**AR** bogad—loose; **AR** tarann—drawn (of a weapon); **AR** fánairdeacht aigne—distractedly; **AR** sodar, trotting, etc.

(b) Local:—**AR** muir, **AR** tír—on sea, on land; **AR** tosaic—in front; **AR** deiread—behind; **AR** an saogal eile—in the next world.

(c) Of the part affected. (An extension of the local meaning):—**DO** rug sé **AR** cluais air—he seized him by the ear; **AR** an sgórnaig—by the throat.

(d) Temporal:—**AR** ball—presently; **AR** a dó a cloig—at 2 o'clock; **AR** teacht a baile dúinn—when we arrived home.

(e) Pass, with vb. n.—**TÁ** an gáoluinn **AR** labairt annso—I. is spoken here; **AR** faigáil—to be had.

(f) In respect of; causal:—**AR** feadbas a pearsan 7 a méin (L.O.)—because of the excellence of his person and disposition.

(g) Of measurement:—**AR** faid, **AR** leithead, **AR** doimneas, **AR** doirde—in length, breadth, depth, height.

(h) Dependent upon:—**Duine** **AR** leat-súil—a one-eyed man; **TÁ** sé **AR** beagán faigáltais—he hasn't much to

live upon; **FEAR** **ḃíos** **AR** **ΔON** **ĊARAİḆ** **SA** **SAOZAI** **Áluinn** **seo** (**Smb.** 1)—A man who is dependent on one friend in this beautiful world.

(i) Of price paid:—**Δn** **mór** **Δ** **ċuzaİs** **AR** **Δn** **mbuin?**—How much did you give for the cow? When the price is not mentioned or alluded to, **Δs**, not **AR**, is used.—**ḆíolḑaİḆ** **sé** **Δs**—He'll pay for it.

(j) Of feelings, burdens, etc.:—**ĊÁ** **ÁċΔs**, **ḃrón**, **eaZla** **ORM**—I'm glad, sorry, afraid, etc.

(k) Among:—**Is** **AR** **ḆO** **ḃuaİḆ-se** **ḆO** **RUZΔḆ** **7** **ḆO** **h-oİleΔḆ** **é** (**TBC.** 8)—It was among your cows he was born and bred.

(l) Duty or obligation:—**Is** **AR** **ríZċİḆ** **na** **múman** **ΔċÁ** **onóİR** **na** **múman** **ḆO** **ċosΔİnt** (**TBC.** 196)—It is incumbent on the M. kings to defend M.'s honour.

(m) N.B.—**ḃíoḆ** **sé** **sin** **AR** **Δn** **ċé** **İs** **lúZΔ** **AR** **ḑΔḆ** (**CMD.** 290)—Let him be the least of all.

2° **Δs**:—(a) Local:—**Δs** **so** **zo** **Ḇás** **na** **RíoZ**—From here to Nass. **ĊΔḆ** **Δs** **ḃuİċ?**—Where are you from?

(b) Temporal:—**Δs** **so** **Δmaċ**—from this on; **Δs** **Δ** **h-aiċle** **sin**—after that; **Δs** **Δn** **nua** (or—**Δs** **Δ** **nua**)—anew, afresh.

(c) Modal:—**Δs** **eaZΔR**—disorderly; **Δs** **İoċİΔḆ**—dislocated; **Δs** **Δ** **ċéİle**—asunder; **Δs** **seİḆ**—evicted.

(d) Various:—**Δs** **Δ** **Δİnm**—by an abusive name. **ḆO** **ZİΔOḆΔḆ** **Δs** **Δ** **Δİnm** **ΔİR**—he was called by an abusive name. **ḆO** **ZİΔOḆΔḆ** **Δs** **Δ** **Δİnm** **é**—he was called by his own name.

(e) Cause, origin:—**Δ** **ḑeİRZ** **Δ** **ḃeİneΔs** **é**—I did it out of anger. **Ḇí** **maoİḆċe** **ḃuİċ** **Δs**—you needn't boast about it.

3° **Ċum**:—(a) Local or temporal:—**ḃerò** **sí** **ċrí** **ḃİana** **ḃéΔZ** **ċum** **na** **ḃeaİċΔİne**—She'll be thirteen next May. (b) **Δn** **ċeİċe** **ċum** **na** **n-ÉZİpċe**—The flight into E.

(b) End, purpose, result:—**RΔZΔİḆ** **sé** **ċum** **ċríċe** **ḃuİċ**—It will turn out to your advantage. **Ċum** **zo** **ḃḑeİċḑİnn** **Δm'** **śúİİḆ** **ċİnn** **é**—In order to see it with my own eyes.

4° **ḆO**:—(a) Possessive:—**ḑİnnḃeΔnnΔċ** **İs** **Δİnm** **ḆO** (**TBC.** 8)—Whitehorn is his name.

(b) Motion towards:—**Do'n** **to bA**R—to the well. Obsolescent, in this sense, in Munster—**go**, **go** **oí**, **cum** and various prep, phrases taking its place.

(c) Final (denoting purpose):—**ús** (<**do** **fios**)—for the purpose of finding out; **o'féacaint**—to see. Now **féacaint** (without prep.). **ba mair liom an leabA san do léigead**—I should like to read that book (**do léigead** denotes the purpose for which I should like the book).

(d) Of time:—**do** (**ve**) **siOR**—always; **do** **gnát**—usually, etc.

(e) Causal:—**Dom'** (**oem'**) **ooin féin**—of my own free-will; **o'aim'ooin do oícll**—in spite of your worst (best).

(f) Of the agent:—**CaD fé nDeARA oit é oéana?**—Why do you do it? **Az taDairt an airgid oí oó (S.)**—as he gave her the money.

5° **De**:—(a) Motion from:—**do léimeas anuas oen** **capall**—I jumped off the horse; **do oit sé siar oen** **cačaoir** (**bh.** 334)—he fell back off the chair.

(b) Partitive:—**Cuio oe sna h-uaisliö**—some of the nobles. (**300**).

(c) Cause, origin:—**Ciar' oioö tu?**—From whom are you sprung? **oá bARR san**—as a result of that; **oá oeasgaio sin** (of bad results).

(d) Temporal:—**De ló is o'oiöce**—by day and night.

(e) Of the material (as distinct from the instrument):—**do líonas an buioéal o'uisge**—I filled the bottle with water.

6° **In**:—(a) Local.—**istig sa tig atá sé**—it is in the house (D.) **do cuio sé isteac**—he went in (A.).

(b) Temporal.—**I n-aon uair a' cluig amáin**—In a single hour.

(c) Modal.—**'n-a cuis a čáinig sé (msf. 179)**—He came on foot.

(d) End, purpose, result.—**tiocfaio an mažaö na oáririo oó**—The joke will end seriously for him. **ražao sé i sočar oúinn**—it will profit us.

(e) With **oul**:—**Az oul i n-aois az oul i n-olcas**—Getting older, getting worse; **oul i öfuaire**—getting colder.

7° **le**:—(a) Local (the radical meaning is “by the side of”):—**Cia éáinig le’ cois?**—Who came with you? **leis an aill**—Over the cliff.

(b) Temporal.—**le cúig bliadhna déag d’aimsir ní raib póil Duib ’sa bheolín míle bealaig ó n-a céile**—For 15 years P. D. and his violin had not been a mile apart.

(c) Cause.—**Tagann maič le cáirde**—Good comes, if one waits for it.

(d) Instrumental.—**le scin do veinead é**—It was done with a knife.

(e) Passive with trans, vb. n.— **Tá so le ráð**—This much is to be said.

(f) Purpose or futurity with intrans. vb. n.—**An slánuičteoir a bí le teacht**—The promised Saviour.

(g) With adj. denoting likeness and the contradictory:—**Is cosmaíl le n’ ačair é**—He’s like his father.

(h) Ownership, subjectivity (with is).—**Is maič liom tae, ač ní maič dom é; is liomsa é sin.**

(i) With vb. of speaking to, listening to:—**Cum go labhairčar leat**—until you’re spoken to; **éist leis**—Listen to him!

8° **Ó**:—(a) Local separation:—**Ó bláč CIAČ go CORCAIG**—From D. to C.

(b) Temporal separation:—**Ó soim i leič**—From then till now.

(c) Agent:—**Do h-oirdeinigead ó Dia é**—He was ordained of God.

(d) Cause, origin, motive:—**Ó’n iomad dúil in-airgead is ead tagann an t-airmleas go minic**—Moral decadence often results from avarice.

9° **mar**.—Chiefly in such phrases as:—**mar gheall ar**—because of; **mar bárr ar gac ndonas**—to crown every calamity; **duine mar é**—one like him; **mar an gcéadna**—likewise.

10° **ós**:—In adv. and compound prep, phrases:—**ós árd**—aloud; **ós íseal**—low, secretly; **ós cómair**—in the presence of; **ós cionn**—above; **bun ós cionn**—upside down.

11° **fé:**—(a) Of motion:—**Ṯo ruḡ íosa an ṽáréas leis isteaḋ fé'n ṽtír** (CMṮ. 254)—Jesus brought the Twelve with Him into the country.

(b) Of Time:—**fé maṽin**—before morning; **fé láḋair**—at present.

(c) Local:—**fé luḡe na ḡréine**—under the Sun.

(d) Modal:—**ṽoisc spiridí a ṽeic fé nṽur smaḋt** (CMṮ. 316)—Because spirits are under your power. **fé séan, sonas, ṽrón, ḡlas**—prosperous, happy, sad, locked up.

(e) Partitive:—**a cúḡ fíḋo fén ḡcéaṽ** (MSF. 167)—25%.

(f) Multiplicative:—**fé ṽó, fé trí, fé céaṽ**—twice, thrice, 100 times.

(g) Causal:—**caṽ fá 'r ḋruḋiḡ ṽia sinn?**—Why did God create us?

12° **fan:**—(a) Local:—1. **ṽí íosa aḡ siúḋal an bóḋar ó ṽeas fan aḋan lórṽain** (CMṮ. 315)—Jesus was walking Southwards on the road alongside the Jordan. 2. **ṽí sé aḡ siúḋal fan an bóḋair** (CMṮ. 362)—He walked along the road.

(b) Temporal:—**fan na haimsire**—all the time; **fan lae**—throughout the day.

13° **um:**—(a) Temporal:—**um noṽlais**—about Xmas; **um an ṽtaḋa san**—by that time.

(b) Causal:—**uime sin**—therefore; **caṽ uime**—wherefore?

(c) Local:—**ḋuir sé uime a ḋuṽ éaṽaiḡ**—he put on his clothes.

14° **ḡo, to:**—(a) Motion towards:—**caṽ é an fáṽo é ó ṽéal feirsṽe ḡo ṽláḋ cliaḋ?**—How far is it from Belfast to Dublin?

(b) Modal:—**ṽo ḋuaṽais i ḡcoḋuḡṽeaḋt ḡo mór**—You've grown much stouter. **ḡo mór**—*lit.*—to a great extent.

(c) Temporal:—**seḋtṽain is** (=ḡu-san) **lá inṽiu**—this day week (in the past). *Lit.*—a week till to-day; **ṽo ṽéanfaṽois ṽroḡaṽ ḡo ṽás**—they'd fast till death.

(d) For a special use in *is* sentences, see 268.

15° **ÍOIR**:—(a) Local:—**ṚÁ ṚACAD míle ÍOIR ĆORCAÍḡ 7 BÉAL ÁC AN ḡAORĊAIṚ**—There are 40 miles between Cork and Ballineary.

(b) Followed by *agus*=including . . . . and:—**ÍOIR mNAIB 7 mION-ṚAOINE (CS.)**—including women and children.

16° **AS**:—(a) Local:—**AS ḡEATA NA CAĊRAĊ IS EADṚ BUAILÉADAR UMÁ céile**—They met at the city gate.

(b) Possession:—**ṚÁ ṚÁ ḡABAIRÍN BUIṚE ASAM (Song)**—I have two little yellow goats.

(c) Partitive:—See 302.

(d) With vb. n. to express the pres. part.—**ṚÁ sé AS BUL A BAILÉ**—he is going home; **BÍ sé AS BÉANAM AR AN BCIḡ**—he was approaching the house.

17° **ḡO**—with:—Rare in mod. prose. Found in the literature, especially poetry:—**ḡO n-ÍOMAD séAD (l.O.)**—with many precious stones. Common in composition. Also in **ḡO leic** (with a half), and **ḡO leor** (enough).

### 305.—B—Prepositions after nouns and adjectives:—

(a) **ÍOR fÁḡ SAN IAD ḡAN BÉIC . . . . ḡO h-ANA AIREAC ORĊA fÉIN (Im. 86)**—That did not prevent them from being very watchful over themselves. **CAĊAIR ATÁ TEORANAC le h-ASÓTUS (bh. 834)**—A city on the borders of Asotus. **BÍ AIREAC BUIT fÉIN**—Be watchful in your own interests. **ṚÁ AICNE MAIC ASAM ORC**—I know you well.

(b) **CAD is BRÍḡ leis?** —What does it mean? **CAD is CIALL leis?** —What's the sense of it? **CAD is míniú leis?** —What's the interpretation of it? **BÍ ṚÁ BRÍḡ leis AN BfÉILE sin (CMṚ. 294)**—This Festival had two meanings. **ṚÁ CIALL AS méib, AC níl CIALL leD' cAINNT-se (TBC. 59)**—M. has sense—your words have none.

(c) 1. **BÍ AN TOBAR AR A BCIḡTAR TOBAR IÁCÓIB BUAILĊE leO (CMṚ. 138)**—The well, known as J.'s well, was near them. 2. **níl sé OIREAMNAC DO RÍḡEACĊ BÉ (CMṚ. 297)**—He's not fit for the Kingdom of God. 3. **ḡAN BAC le BUL Cóm fADa le BEOĊ A B'ÍARRAIṚ UIRĊI (CMṚ. 140)**—Not to mention going so far as to ask her for a drink. 4. **nÁ BÍ RÓ-ḡUGĊA DOO' CAIL fÉIN (Im. 40)**—Be not over-fond of your own will: **ḡUGĊAC DO'n pEACA (Im. 45)**—proneness

to vice. 5. *bíodh grádh aghaidh dá céile*—love one another: *tá fuad ag an mbeirt dá céile*—the two hate each other. 6. *bí sé ró-éugta cun na díoghbála deanamh, 7 bí an iomadh dúil san airgead aise, 7 san onóir* (bh. 86)—He was too much given to injustice, and too fond of money and honour. 7. *tá ag dul dom' misneach fé deire* (TBC. 149)—My courage is at last beginning to fail me. 8. *tá gach daoine buíochas de*—he's very popular.

(d) 1. *D'iarras féin cead ar Ádés beith ón mbád don lá amáin* (lúc. 47)—I also asked leave of Hades to absent myself from the boat for one day. 2. *Ciúin ó fearg 7 ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Free from anger and from worry. 3. *Is gearr ó brise riar brise caith* (TBC. 68)—Defeat in battle is not far from breach of discipline. 4. *Is dail ó méib a ceapadh go nglacfaí i n-donfheacht iad* (TBC. 88)—It is shortsighted of M. to suppose that both would be tolerated. 5. *Táid siad ag baint ó' neart* (TBC. 150)—They are sapping your strength. 6. *Tá an áit follamh ó daoine le fada*—The place is long since uninhabited.

(e) 1. *Ní maoiníte duit as*—You've no reason to boast of it. 2. *A beith orm díol, leis, as na mairb* (lúc. 41)—That I should have to pay for the dead as well! 3. *Níl don ionntaoidh agat asam*—You don't trust me. 4. *bíodh do muinín a dia na glóire*—Put your trust in Almighty God.

(f) 1. *Níor fhan beann acu ar anam ná ar beatha ná ar saogal* (TBC. 127)—They no longer cared aught for life or livelihood or living. 2. *Níl don breith agam air*—It is quite impossible for me. 3. *Is báireamail le n-a céile luict don-céirde*—Same “trade,” same “tirade.” 4. *Ní raib don caoi aise ar é deanamh*—He had no chance of doing it. 5. *pé deire beith ar an ngnó, tá deire le caint shab (S.)*—Whatever the upshot of this affair, there's an end to S.'s talk. 6. *Níl don fágáil agat air*—You'll never secure it. 7. *Tá sé cóim greamuichte sin ar dia na glóire ná cuireann sé don tsuim i neicib saogalta* (Im.)—He is so grappled to Almighty God, that he pays no attention to worldly ways. 8. *Dein iarracht air*—Have a try at it. 9. *bí sé lán-ullamh ar é deanamh*—He



was quite ready to do it. 10. **ṬÁ sé oireamnac go maič air**—He's quite capable of (doing) it. 11. **ṬÁ sé socair ar beič na šažart**—He's determined to become a priest. 12. **Mo šeasam inđiu orraiö (n.)**—On you I rely to-day. 13. **bejö toraö ar a šaočar san**—Such a man's labour will not be in vain. 14. **öfuił aon taitiže ažat ar an nžaluinna a labairt?**—Have you any practice in speaking I.? 15. **ńi raiö uam aici ar a čuille a ráö**—She hadn't time to say any more. 16. **ńil aične (cion, meas, žrám, žreim, nearč) ažam air**—I don't know (love, esteem, hate) him; I have no hold on him; I cannot help it.

(g) 1. **ńi řeavar an mbeivís čóm tužča čun cožaiö do öéanam (TBC. 61)**—I wonder would they be so inclined to make war. 2. **Tužčact čun žéilleaö ö'uačtarán (Im. 47)**—A ready obedience. 3. **Ažus do čoilig šimón čuiže sin go řonnmar (bñ. 836)**—And S. consented to this willingly. 4. **Do tužao řé nđeara nár řéac sé riām cun a čairöe řéiniž (bñ. 843)**—It was observed that he never sought his own advantage.

### 306.—Prepositions after verbs:—

(a) 1. **Áitižim ar**—I convince, argue down one's throat:—**ö'áiteočao sí ort žur ar meisže öí sé**—She would have you believe he was drunk. 2. **žan bac do mñaiö 7 mion-öaoine (čs.)**—Not counting women and children. **ńi öacřao leis**—I shan't mind it. 3. **ńi liomsa a öaineann an čainnt sin**—Those words don't refer to me. **öain an méro sin an mórail öioö (cmö. 366)**—This took the pride out of them. **An řirinne . . . do öaint aisti (cmö. 260)**—To take the truth out of it; **čao do öain öuit?**—What happened to you? **žan cur leis ná öaint uaiö**—Without adding to or taking from it.

(b) 1. **öearřar ort**—you'll be caught. 2. **beir bean-načt óm' čroiöe go čír na héireann. . . . Čum a maireann öe šiolraö ír is éiöir (öonnč. Ruao)**—Bring a blessing from my heart to the land of E. to all that are alive of the seed of Ir. and Eibhear. 3. **beir leat uač čuiž púnt**—Bring with you £5 worth.

(c) 1. **öiovar až cosc na leaö ar čeačč čuiže (cmö.**

362)—They were preventing the children from coming to Him. 2. **ná caillrò orainn**—Don't fail us. 3. **do cail ar a misneac arís**—Her courage failed again. 4. **níor cosain an ciúnas iad ar an asacán san (CMO. 336)**—Silence did not save them from this reproach.

(d) 1. **Caillfar a lán airgid leo san**—much money will be spent in vain on them. 2. **do caitead cloca leo**—stones were thrown at them. 3. **ná caite an iomad aimsire le neitib saogalca**—don't spend too much time on worldly things. 4. **Cia hé a deirir do casa leat (also ort)?** —Whom do you say you met? 5. **ní duitse is cóir é casa liom (S.)**—It isn't you who should cast it up to me. 6. **Az casa leis an nua tráig a tabairt leis (TBC. 76)**—trying to serve the two strands. 7. **Á casa in' asacán le h-íosa (CMO. 340)**—upbraiding Jesus for . . . .

(e) 1. **do cinnead ar cómairle**—a plan was settled on. 2. **do cinn air é leagad**—he failed to knock it down. 3. **sur cinn ar mnáib a cóm-aimsire i sgeim (K.)**—until she surpassed in beauty all her contemporaries.

(f) 1. **ní cuirfid sé suas lib (bh. 259)**—He will not put up with you. 2. **Cuir síos ar**—talk about, describe. 3. **Cuir suas de**—give up. 4. **'Sé cúis a cuirfinn síos leis**—The reason I should assign for it is . . . . 5. **Cuir suas cum**—instigate to. 6. **Cuir cum**—attempt to. 7. **Cuir le**—send with, add to, apprentice; **do cuiread le céird é**—he was apprenticed to a trade. 8. **Cuir fios ar**—send for. 9. **Cuir fé**—settle down. 10. **Cuireadar buidean luict airm uata (CMO. 301-2)**—They dispatched an armed band. 11. **Cuir de**—get over (work, disease, trouble, etc.); cover space. 12. **Cuir díot**—be off; undress. 13. **bí sé az cur de ar a díceall**—he was talking away, as fast as he could. 14. **Á sé az cur alluis de**—he's perspiring. 15. **Cuir tar**—put past (not suspect)—**ní cuirfinn taris é**—I shouldn't put it past him (I'm inclined to suspect him of it). 16. **Cuir i leic**—accuse. **"Cá bfuil na daoine a bí az cur ad' leic?" (CMO. 306)**—"Where are they who accused you?"

(g) 1. *So sguirighò an Rí leat*—May God assist you.  
 2. *An té a cabruigeann leis féin, cabruigeann Dia leis*—God helps those who help themselves.

(h) 1. *Ní déanfainn rud ort*—I didn't do as you wished. 2. *Tá sé ag déanamh amach ar a dhó*—it's coming up to two o'clock. 3. *Do vein sé anonn ar tAdh*—He went over to T. 4. *Do veineadh sagart de*—he was ordained priest. 5. *Dubairt sé leo neam-suim a déanamh de neitib saogalcha (CMO. 245)*—He told them to despise worldly things. 6. *Ní veineann sé puinn taitige de*—he doesn't practise it much.

(i) 1. *Tá an uile duine aca tréis diúltú amuic 7 amach do dul cun cómraic donfir a déanamh, ar breib ná ar mealladh (TBC. 128)*—Everyone of them has refused point-blank to go to fight in single combat, either for bribe or promise. 2. *Do diúltuigh sé mé ar sgilling*—he refused me 1s. 3. *Diolfaid tu as, luach nó mall*—you'll pay for it sooner or later. 4. *An mór a díolais ar an mbuin?*—How much did you pay for the cow? 5. *Cia leis gur díolais í?*—To whom did you sell her? *Cia dó gur . . . í?*—For whom did you sell her?

(j) 1. *Éirigh as*—resign, give up. 2. *Cad b'éirigh dó?*—What happened him? 3. *Conus b'éirigh le Séadna?*—How did it fare with S.? 4. *Níorb' fada gur éirigh eatorcha*—Soon they had a row. 5. *Éirigh a codladh*—go to bed. 6. *Ní éireochadh sé díobh (bh. 28)*—He kept on importuning them. 7. *Is amhlaidh a b'éirigeadar cuige (bh. 28)*—The result was, they attacked him.

(k) 1. *Éist le fuaim na h-abann 7 geobaid tú breac*—Listen to the murmur of the river, and you'll get a trout! (Also *feic le fuaim*). 2. *Nuair a h-eitigeadh iad ar an lóisóin (CMO. 297)*—When they were refused the lodging. *Níor mair liom é eiteadh ar rud cóim suarach*—I shouldn't like to refuse him such a paltry thing. 3. *Fan ort (leat) go fóil*—wait a while (the preps. are intensive): *D'fanfaimís leat (S.)*—we'd have waited for you: *Measadh . . . go mb' féidir na fanfaid sé ar an bfochal adubairt sé ar dtúlis (CMO. 309)*—They thought that possibly he might not stand

by his first account. 4. *Ṣo ḃfóiriḃ ḃia ort*—God help you: *féac, 7 fóir sinn, a tígearna*—Look, o Lord, and save us. 5. *fás fúmsa é*—leave it to me (to decide); *fás aḡamsa é*—leave it to me (to keep); *ḃ'fás sé an gleann 'sa raib ann aḡam*—he left me master of the situation. 6. *fiafrócar ḃíot cár cḃolaís aréir*—you'll be asked where you slept last night: *larr ar ḃia don trí ḡuḃe is toil leat, 7 ḡeḃair iad (S.)*—ask of God any three wishes you like, and you shall have them.

(l) 1. *tá sé aḡ ḡaḃail ḃo'n ḡaoluinn le faḃa*—he has been at Irish for a long time. 2. *ḡeḃair sé ḃ'fuipeanaib ort*—he will whip you. 3. *ḃo ḡaib sé le filiḃeacḡ*—he took to poetry. 4. *ḃo ḡaib sé a leac-sḡéal liom*—he excused himself to me. 5. *ḡaḃaim párdún aḡac*—excuse me. 6. *imḡis leat (ort)*—be off, go on. *Conus ḃ'imḡis le S?*—How did it fare with S.? *tá an ḃuairt úḃ imḡisḡe ḃíom*—that worry has left me: *ḃ'imḡis a ḃean uairḃ inḃé*—his wife left him yesterday.

(m) 1. *ḃo lean a ḡcosa ḃe'n lic-oisre*—their feet stuck to the ice. 2. *ná lean ḃoḃ' cḡeasairḃeacḡ*—don't continue your tricks. *lean ort (leat)*—continue. 4. *tá orm leanamaint siar ar an ḡceist*—I must probe the question thoroughly. 5. *lín an corcán ḃ'uisḡe*—fill the pot with water (the material): *lín leis an ḡcupán é*—fill it with the cup (the instrument). 6. *ná labair cūm ḡo labarḡar leat*—don't speak till you're spoken to: *is air sin ḃo labair an fáir*—it was of Him the prophet spoke: *an tir sin dar' labramur (ZCP. II, 276)*—this land of which we have spoken.

(n) 1. *ná leis ḃó*—don't allow him. 2. *ní leḡfar . . . i n-aisḡe leis*—he will not get off with . . . . 3. *más olc le muinntir na h-áite an tarḃ ḃo leḡaint uacḡa (TBC. 11)*—If the inhabitants are loth to let the bull be taken from them. 4. *ná leḡ ort*—don't pretend. 5. *leḡ ḃeḃ' ḃaoḡ-cainnt feasḃa*—give up your foolish talk now.

(o) 1. *maiḡ ḃúinn ar ḡcionḡa*—forgive us our trespasses. 2. *ḃo méaḃuiḡ ar an mbuairt aḡe*—his worries increased. 3. *ní maorḡḡe ḃuit as ḃo maiḡeas*—you needn't boast

of your goodness. 4. Is **baoglac nár sgar sé ar fóghnam leis (S.)**—I'm afraid he didn't part with him to his advantage: **ní féidir iad a sgaraint ó n-a céile**—they can't be separated.

(p) 1. **“Tá mo bean i gcill créib go tréib, 7 leac le n-a ceann,**

**má tá, ar nóin scaoil léi, ní baogal ná go bfan-faib sí ann”**—

“My wife's in C.C. all spent, with a stone by her head,

Well, then, just let her be—she's sure to remain there.”

2. **An amlaib nár ceart an inġean so Ábraham . . . . do scaoilead ón gceangal san lá na Sabbóide? (CMO. 331)**—Do you mean to say it was wrong to release this daughter of A. from that bondage on the Sabbath?

3. **Do scaoil sé ċairis mé**—he took no notice of me.

4. **Do scaoil sé uair mé**—he let me go without hindrance.

5. **Scaoil cúġainn an sġéal**—let's have the story at once.

6. **Scaoil ċart an deoc**—let the drink pass. 7. **Do scaoil sé urċar fúm (orm, liom)**—he shot at me.

(q) 1. **Seasóċad-sa ċuit**—I'll support you. 2. **Tá oiread airġid aġam 7 a šeasóċaib dom go ceann mí**—I've as much money as will last me for a month. 3. **Mo šeasam inċiu craib (n.)**—I depend on you to-day. 4. **bíob do šeasam ionam (Im.)**—depend upon Me.

(r) 1. **ċuġas ċruim láma le ċroc-bearċaib**—I turned my back on iniquity. 2. **Do ċabrfainn ċruim le scamal-laib an tsaoġail seo (Song)**—I should turn away from the clouds of this life. 3. **Ní féidir dá ċaob an sġeil do ċabairt dá céile**—the two sides of the story cannot be reconciled. 4. **ċuġtar ċum a ċérle iad**—let them be brought together. 5. **Ní tabair ċuine uair an nro nac bí aġe (K.)**—one does not give away what one has not. 6. **ċad é an ainm ba maib leac a tabrfí ar an leand?**—By what name would you have the child called? 7. **Tabair fé**—make the attempt: **ċuġ sé fúm**—he attacked me.

(s) 1. *Do cuair do ná neart* (TBC. 88)—his strength failed. 2. *Do cuair díom é déanam*—I failed to do it. 3. *Annsan beir onóir as dul duit ón gcuideactain* (CMO. 336)—then honour will be due to you from the company. 4. *Do cuig na h-uaisle go raib san as dul na luige ar aigne na ndaoine* (CMO. 301)—the nobles realized that this was being impressed on the people's minds. 5. *Ní ró-olc a raib do greas coiblata dom*—I could do well with a little sleep. 6. *Do raib sé i dtairbe duit go mór*—it would do you a lot of good. 7. *Do cuibais as go mór*—you've failed a lot. 8. *Do cuair ann*—it shrank. 9. *Níl don dul as asat*—you can't escape: *níl don dul uair asat*—you can't escape him. 10. *Teigeann sí le na h-athair*—she resembles her father. 11. *Do cuair an cluice orainn*—we lost the game. 12. *Do cuair as na, trí Colla ort* (K.)—the three C.'s defeated them. 13. "*Teigeann an maonac ó duine go duine, mar teigeann an t-éan ó bile go bile*"—Yawning passes from one to another, as the bird passes from tree to tree. 14. *Do raib sé siú tré poll tarathair as lorg airgid*—your friend would go through an auger-hole for money. 15. *Níor gab doib dul tar an mírbúilt sin . . . cun a d'fheiscint go rabhadar cionntac* (CMO. 311)—This miracle should have sufficed for them to see that they were guilty.

(t) 1. *Ac níor éir leo é marbú* (CMO. 336)—but they did not succeed in killing him. 2. *Éir sé isteach air*—he became proficient in it. 3. *Éir sin isteach go cruinn le n-a ndubart féin*—that fitted in exactly with what I said myself. 4. *Éir duine éirín laistigh díom sa gno san*—someone circumvented me in that affair. 5. *'Sé tiocfaid de go marbóctar duine éirín*—the result will be that someone will be killed. 6. *Éir Séadna ná féadaint*—S. came to see him. 7. *Ní fuláir nó ní hí seo an céad uair asat as aireactaint teact éirsin sin* (S.)—This mustn't be the first time you've heard her mentioned. 8. *Ó buirín a eis bruideann*—contention comes from company. 9. *Éir sí leis go h-éascaid*—it offered no resistance. 10. *Tis leis sin an méid a deir plató*—what P. says agrees with that.

**307.**—(a) **Δξ**=when:—1. **Δξ** **φέδαινε** **δο** **σνα** **η-Aspoil** (**CMO**. 275)—when the A. looked to see . . . . 2. **Δξ** **τράετ** **δό** **λεο** **αρ** **uisge** **σίλόε** (**CMO**. 302)—when speaking to them about the waters of S.

(b) **Τρέις**=when:—1. **Τρέις** **αν** **ῥοκαίλ** **σιν** **δο** **ράδ** **δό**, **δο** **ῥομ** **σέ** **αιρίς** (**CMO**. 305)—when He had said these words He bent down again. 2. **Τρέις** **διαβλαῖδεαῖτα** **έἰσιν** **α** **ῥέαναμ** **ορῖτα**, **τυς** **σέ** **κούκι** **ιστεαῖ** **ιαδ** (**S**. 16)—when he had performed some black magic over them, he brought them in to her.

(c) **Αρ** **εαζλα**—for fear of—denotes the state or condition of the agent:—**λε** **η-εαζλα** denotes that the action was accompanied by fear in the agent: **ῥ'εαζλα** denotes that fear was the origin or motive of the action.

(d) **Ι** **ζκιονν**—after—views the space of time from the beginning:—**Ραζαδ** **α** **ῥαίλε** **ι** **ζκιονν** **μί**—I'll go home in a month's time: **τρέις** views the space of time from the end, backwards:—**ῤυας** **α** **ῥαίλε** **τρέις** **μί** **δο** **ῥαίτεαμ** **ανν**—I went home, after having spent a month there.

(e) There is a similar distinction between **ζο** **σεανν** and **αρ** **φεαδ**, both meaning “for the space of.” The former views it from the beginning, the latter from the end:—1. **Νί** **ραζαδ** **ανν** **αρίς** **ζο** **σεανν** **μί**—I shan't go again for a month. 2. **ῤανῤαδ** **ανν** **αρ** **φεαδ** **αν** **μί**—I shall remain for the month.

(f) **Ι** **ριῖ**, and **ι** **ζκαίτεαμ** mean “at some time in the course of:”—1. **τιοῤαδ** **ιστεαῖ** **κούζατ** **λά** **έἰσιν** **ι** **ριῖ** **να** **σεαῖτμῖαινε**—I'll come in to you, some day during the week. 2. **Νί** **ορ** **λαῖαιρ** **σέ** **ῥοκαί** **ι** **ζκαίτεαμ** **αν** **μέι** **σιν** **αἰμσίρε**—he never opened his lips during all that time.

## CHAPTER IX.

### SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE.

#### 308.—A.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction:—

The starting-point may be found in:—Ar ní derna aithrige, acht dul in derchainiud (PH. 221)—For he did not penance, but despaired. Here derna governs both aithrige and dul. But we must often assume an ellipsis. This occurs chiefly in:—(a) Adversative clauses with *ΔC*. (b) Non-adversative clauses with *ΔZUS*. (c) After *fé mar*, and *cóim mairc ΔZUS . . .* (d) In clauses following others with *μά, ὅά, nuair*. (e) In other kinds of sentences:—

(a) *ḡíor leos sé doinnið air, ΔC an biað ðo cáiteam cóim mairc is ḡféað sé é* (S. 68)—He pretended nothing, but ate the food as well as he could. (After *ΔC*, supply “is *amlaioð a ðein sé*” or “is *é ruð a ðein sé.*” *biað*, A. or N.).

(b) *Cað na ctaoð nár labair sí 7 an sgeal go léir a ḡínnsint ḡó?* (CMð. 37)—Why did she not speak and tell him the whole affair? After 7, supply “*nár ðein sí.*” *sgeal* A. after *ðein*. See also—CMð. 185, 94; Ser. 79; S. 76.

(c) 1. *ḡuiz na ḡaoine . . . gur labair sé fé mar a ḡeað cómaçt aize* (CMð. 158)—The people felt that He spoke as one having power. After *fé mar*, supply—“*a labrfað uine go (mbeað cómaçt aize).*” The ellipsis following the omitted *go* is dropped. 2. Without ellipsis:—*labrann isáias fáro . . . fé mar a labrfað sé ḡá mbeað sé ΔZ féaçaínt ar a páis 7 ar a bás* (CMð. 5)—The prophet I. speaks as if he had been an eye-witness of His passion and death. With ellipsis:—*fé mar a ḡeað sé . . .* See also *lúc.* 40.



(d) *Ḑá neospí ḑí é, 7 annsan ʒo bpóspəḑ sí Séəḑna, ḑo ḑrispeəḑ a māčnnaḑ a sláinte* (S. 96)—If she were told it, and should then marry S., the thought of it would ruin her health. After *annsan*, supply—*ḑá ráiniḑeəḑ*, or *ḑá mba*. The clause *ʒo . . .* is N. to *ráiniḑeəḑ*, or *ba*. See also—*cmḑ*. 198, 46; *s*. 103, 96; *ʒ*. 145; *ṭbc*. 26; *cčú*. 98; *bn*. 409.

(e) 1. *Ṭá ʒač rí acu ʒá māoiḑeəḑ ʒur ʒeallaḑ čusa ḑó féin, ač teəčṭ ar an slóʒəḑ so* (*ṭbc*. 134)—Every one of the Kings is boasting that you were promised to him, provided he came on this hosting. After *ač*, supply “*ʒo nḑeəḑəḑ sé.*” *Ačṭ ʒo*—provided that.

### 309.—B.—Contamination and Other Phenomena:—

1. *Caḑ ba ʒáḑ an māiṭ ḑo loṭ?* (S.)—Where is the need to undo the good?

(a) This might be a contamination of question and answer:—Q.—*Caḑ ba ʒáḑ?* (Regular). A.—*An māiṭ ḑo loṭ.*

(b) Or modelled on—*Caḑ ba ʒáḑ a ḑeəḑnaḑ?* (Regular).

(c) Or “*an māiṭ ḑo loṭ*” may be a phrase-n. gov. by *ʒáḑ*.

(d) Or the “Sense Construction” principle may serve. *Caḑ ḑo ḑeəḑəḑ an māiṭ ḑo loṭ?* or *Caḑ fé nḑeəḑ an māiṭ ḑo loṭ?* (both regular) convey the same meaning.

310.—Many of the exx. in 223, G—where anteced. and rel. are both D. are best explained on this principle of Contamination:—

1° *Ṣarḑuiḑeəḑar an uile ruḑ i ḑfuirḑ ḑuine ḑe śliočṭ ʒaeḑeal ḑár féəḑəḑar teəčṭ suas leis* (Sʒ. 54)—is a contamination of:—(a) *an uile ruḑ ḑ’ar féəḑəḑar*, and (b) *an uile ruḑ ʒur féəḑəḑar teəčṭ suas leis*. The expansion of the compd. rel. into anteced. and rel. is unsatisfactory. One would expect “*leo*” instead of “*leis*.”

2° *ʒráḑḑar čar ʒač níḑ ḑár čuʒ ḑuine ʒráḑ ḑó riaḑ fós* (Im. 248)—is a contamination of—(a) *ʒač níḑ ʒur čuʒ ḑuine ʒráḑ ḑó riaḑ fós*; and (b) *ʒač níḑ ḑár ʒráḑuiʒ ḑuine fós*. Expansion of the compd. rel. would require

ðóib̃ instead of ðó.—*ḡac níð ðíob̃-san ḡur c̃us ðuine ḡráð ðóib̃ riam̃ fós.*

3° *ḡáim̃is amac̃ as an loc̃ an capall ðob̃' áilne ðár leaḡas mo súil riam̃ air* (bR. 33)—is a contamination of—  
(a) *an capall ðob̃' áilne ðá b̃feaca riam̃*, and (b) *an c. ðob̃' áilne ḡur leaḡas mo súil riam̃ air*. Here again, expansion of the compd. rel. would require *or̃c̃a* instead of *air*.

311. (a) *níl leiaḡas ar an meaclú ac̃ muinntir na h-éireann ðo ðul 7 eolas a c̃ur aḡ a ḡcainnt féin airís* (Sḡ. 84)—The only remedy for the degeneracy is for the people of I. to go and re-learn their own language. If the construction had been uniform, we should have had—  
*m. na h-é. ðo ðul 7 ðo c̃ur eolais. . . .* The sentence is a contamination of this, and—*níl . . . . ac̃ ḡo n̄éanfað m. na h-é. ðul 7 eolas a c̃ur . . . .*

(b) *ní raib̃ don tsliḡe c̃uige ac̃ muinntir na h-éireann ðo c̃ur le c̃éite 7 a neart ḡo leir ð'iompaíl i ḡcoinnib̃ na nḡall* (AR. 64)—There was no way for it, but that the I. people should pull together, and turn their united strength against the Foreigner. A contamination of:—  
(a) *m. na h-é ðo c̃ur le c̃., 7 ð'iompaíl a neart ḡo léar . . .* and (b) *ac̃ ḡo n̄éanfað m. na n-é. c̃ur le c̃, 7 a neart ḡo léir. . . .*

(c) *nuaire a b̃í oireað amuic̃ aise 7 ḡur ðóic̃ leo ḡo n̄iúl̃c̃ócað an c̃uir̃ eile ð'é ðíol c̃ar a c̃eann, ðo c̃omáineaðar an ðlíḡe ar siúb̃al* (msf. 26)—When he had spent so much that they believed the others would refuse to pay up for him, they instituted legal proceedings. A contamination of—(a) *b̃í oireað san amuic̃ aise ḡur ðóic̃ leo . . . .* and (b) *ní raib̃ oireað san amuic̃ aise 7 ba ðóic̃ leo.*

(d) *nár̃b̃' f̃uláir é féin a ðul ḡo lerúsalem 7 mórán ð'f̃ulang̃* (CS. 46)—That He must go to J. and suffer many things.—A contamination of (a) *é féin a ðul 7 a ð'f̃ulang̃*; and (b) *nár̃b̃' f̃uláir ðó féin ðul 7 mórán a ð'f̃.*

(e) Multiple Rel. Construction is a sort of contamination:—*Is iad̃ is tréine atá aḡ ðéanam̃ na hoibre*—They

are doing the work most zealously—is a contamination of:—(a) IS  $\text{IA}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{ATÁ}$  . . . . and (b) IS  $\text{IA}\bar{\text{O}}$  IS  $\text{TRÉine}$ .

(f) The use of  $\text{NÁ}$ ,  $\text{AC}$ ,  $\text{MAR}$  in Identification sentences, Type II, b, c, d, is also a sort of contamination. E.g., IS  $\text{É}$  IS  $\text{FEARRA}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UIT}$   $\text{NÁ}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UL}$  7  $\text{GREAS}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{O}\bar{\text{U}}\text{LA}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UIT}$   $\text{FÉin}$ , is a contamination of:—1. IS  $\text{É}$  IS  $\text{FEARRA}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UIT}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UL}$  . . . . and 2. NÍ  $\text{FEARRA}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UIT}$   $\text{RUO}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{ÉANFA}$   $\text{NÁ}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UL}$  . . . .

(g) “ $\text{AGUS}$ ” is often due to contamination:—BÍ  $\text{IONGNA}$   $\text{ORM}$   $\text{A}$   $\text{FEABAS}$  IS  $\bar{\text{O}}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EIN}$   $\text{SÉ}$   $\text{AN}$   $\text{GNÓ}$ —is a contamination of:—1. BÍ . . . .  $\text{A}$   $\text{FEABAS}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EIN}$  . . . . and 2. BÍ . . . .  $\bar{\text{C}}\text{OM}$   $\text{MAIC}$  IS  $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EIN}$  . . . .

(h) BÍ  $\text{UIRRI}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{EACHT}$   $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{CÉAR}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{IOCFAD}$   $\text{AS}$  (Smb. 35)—She had to come whatever the result might be.—A contamination of:—1.  $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{RUO}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{IOCFAD}$   $\text{AS}$ ; and 2.  $\text{BA}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{UMA}$   $\text{CÉAR}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{IOCFAD}$   $\text{AS}$ .

(i)  $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{CÉ}$   $\text{AN}$   $\text{ZALAR}$  BÍ  $\text{AZ}$   $\text{ZABAIL}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{ON}$   $\bar{\text{G}}\text{LUAI}\bar{\text{S}}\text{TEÁN}$  (Smb. 108)—Whatever malady affected the motor.—A contamination of:—1.  $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{ZALAR}$  BÍ . . . . and 2.  $\text{BA}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{UMA}$   $\text{CÉ'n}$   $\text{ZALAR}$  BÍ. . . .

(j)  $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{CÉ'n}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{OIR}$   $\text{ATÁ}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{ÉANTA}$   $\text{AZAT}$  (Smb. 164)—Whatever crime you have committed.—A contamination of:—1.  $\text{PÉ}$   $\text{AR}$   $\text{BI}\bar{\text{C}}$   $\text{COIR}$   $\text{ATÁ}$  . . . . and 2. IS  $\text{CUMA}$   $\text{CÉ'n}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{OIR}$   $\text{ATÁ}$  . . . .

312. (a) In “ $\text{BREIS AGUS}$ ,” more than, and “ $\text{IONANN AGUS}$ ,” the same as,  $\text{agus}$  has developed a new meaning:—1.  $\text{TÁ}$   $\text{BREIS}$  IS  $\text{MÓ}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{Ó}\bar{\text{C}}\text{AIN}$   $\text{AIR}\bar{\text{G}}\bar{\text{I}}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{AZAM}$ —I have more than enough money—goes back to— $\text{TÁ}$   $\text{MÓ}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{Ó}\bar{\text{C}}\text{AIN}$   $\text{A}$   $\text{AZAM}$  7  $\text{BREIS}$ . Similarly—IS  $\text{IONANN}$  7  $\text{BÁS}$   $\text{AN}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EAC}\bar{\text{T}}\text{A}$  so—this life is a sort of death < IS  $\text{IONANN}$   $\text{AN}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EAC}\bar{\text{T}}\text{A}$  so 7  $\text{BÁS}$ .

(b)  $\text{MUNAB IONANN AGUS}$ —is always elliptical:—1.  $\text{TÁim}$   $\text{RÉ}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{ANOIS}$   $\text{MUNAB}$   $\text{IONANN}$  IS  $\text{RIAM}$  (S.)—I’m done for now, if ever I was.— $\text{TÁim}$   $\text{RÉ}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{ANOIS}$   $\text{MUNAB}$   $\text{IONANN}$  ( $\text{ANOIS}$ ) 7  $\text{RIAM}$ . 2.  $\bar{\text{O}}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{EIN}$   $\text{SÉ}$   $\text{AN}$   $\text{TEAZASZ}$   $\text{MAR}$   $\text{A}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{ÉANFA}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\bar{\text{O}}\text{UINE}$   $\text{GO}$   $\text{RAIB}$   $\bar{\text{C}}\text{OMACHT}$   $\text{AIGE}$ ,  $\text{MUNAR}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{IONANN}$  IS  $\text{NA}$   $\text{SCRIB-NEOIRI}$  7  $\text{NA}$   $\text{FAIRISÍNI}\bar{\text{Z}}$  (CS. 19)—He taught as one having power, as compared with the S. and Ph.< $\text{munar}\bar{\text{O}}$   $\text{IONANN}$  ( $\text{É}$   $\text{FÉin}$ ) IS . . . .

(c) 1. NÍ  $\text{FIÚ}$   $\text{BIORÁN}$  IS  $\text{É}$ —It is insignificant.—Instead of saying “it is not worth a pin,” a pin (a type of the insignificant) and it (the thing in question) are put

together, and the statement is made about the combination. So—2. *níorb' fíú leo biorán 7 anam duine* (S. 221)—They cared nothing whatever about a human life.

(d) In “*nó go*,” until, *nó* has originated in much the same way as *nó* in “*ní fúláir nó*.”—1. *Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann go bfuigeað sé bás, nó go dtiocfað duine éigin á fuasgaile*—He said he would stay until he died, or until someone came to save him. Omitting the first *go*-clause, we get, with illogical retention of *nó*—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé nó go dtiocfað . . .* 2. Or it might have developed more simply thus:—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann, nó go dtiocfað . . .* He said he would stay, or else that someone would come. This would easily lead to:—He said he would stay till someone came.

### 313.—C.—Repetition of Words:—

1. Repetition often implies emphasis:—(a) *cuḡ sé ciall dóib' 7 tuisgint, 7 cuḡ sé dóib' saor-choil* (CM. 1)—He gave them sense and understanding, and over and above these, free-will. (b) *D'fhuilís íosa an páis ear ceann na cine daonna, le grá do'n cine daonna, 7 do tós an páis sin de'n cine daonna an easgaine do bí curtha as an bpeaca ar an gcine daonna*. (CM. 48)—J. suffered His passion for the human race, out of love for the human race, and this passion released the human race from the curse which sin had laid upon the human race. Here the repetition is most effective. It is a solemn reminder of the universality of the sin-curse, and of the beneficent effects of Redemption.

2. When the Projected N. occurs, a pron. takes its place where the subj. (or pred. in *is* sentences) would normally be:—(a) *An té mactnócaḁ air is dóic liom go dtuigfeað sé* (MSF. 206)—I think anyone who reflected would understand . . . . Here, if the Projected N. were not used, too many words would intervene between *tuigfeað* and its object. (b) *An bean cos-noctaithe is í a bí ann* (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman (í essential, in order to avoid VS!).

3. Both the vb. and the subj. (in pron. form) are repeated, when a clause or phrase qualifying the subj. or obj. intervenes:—(a) between a trans. vb. and its obj. (b) between an intrans. vb. and the complement of the pred.—(a) *Ṯo ṯós an fear n-a raiḃ an gunna 'na láim aige, Ṯo ṯós sé an gunna le spórt* (MSF. 27)—The man who held the gun raised it in sport. (b) *Ḷuairḃ an duine Ṯo leigiseaḃ ḷuairḃ sé suas go ṽtí an teampul* (CMṮ. 183)—The man who had been cured went up to the Temple.

4. Sometimes the vb. is repeated in the pl., or with a preceding particle:—(a) *Ḷí ṽaoine, ins na h-áiteanaib a Ḷí i ḃfad ó Ierúsalem, Ḷíodar aḡ tosnú ar iad féin a ḷur i ṽtreo taistil* (CMṮ. 295)—People in places far from J. were beginning to prepare for the journey. (b) *Ṯá n-abrainn-se leis na fearaib úo a ṯáinig ḷúḡam an oirḃe uo, ḡá iarraib orm ḃeic am' stiúrṯóir orḷa, Ṯá n-abrainn ná féaḃfainn é* (MSF. 170)—Had I said to the men who came to me that night, asking me to guide them—had I said that I couldn't . . . .

5. A word is repeated sometimes to avoid vagueness and ambiguity.—*Ḷí a ḷroirḃe lán ḃe ṽroḷ-aigne, aḷ ḷoimeáḃ sé istig an ṽroḷ-aigne* (CMṮ. 58)—His heart was full of evil thoughts, but he kept these evil thoughts concealed.

**314.—D.—Order of Words:** 1. For departures from the normal order, see 309-313. 2. With vbs. other than *is*, the normal order is vb., subj., complement of pred. But often the whole pred. must come first, the subj. coming last:—(a) *Ṯo ṯiocfaḃ orḷa an bás a ḡeall Ṯia ṽóib* (CMṮ. 1)—The death with which God had threatened them would come upon them. K.'s prose sometimes ignores this device for securing lucidity:—(b) *ḡo ṽarla an tsoileac ḷéaḃna lér léig mac na ḃaintreaḃṯairḃe a rún ṽó* (Bk. 2)—Until he met the same willow to which the widow's son had confided his secret. (Better put *ṽó* immediately after *ṽarla*). (c) Or the logical subj. comes first:—*An t-uisge a ṯaḃrfad-sa ṽó, ḃéanfaiḃ tobair uisge ḃe istig ann, aḡ fiaraḃ ḷun beaḷa síoruirḃe* (CMṮ. 148)—The water I will give him shall

become a well within him springing up to life everlasting. **An** τ-uisge is abs. The grammatical subj. is τobad. (d) In emphatic is sentences, where the pred. is indefinite, it is projected (231). (e) In emphatic is sentences, where the pred. is definite, it may come either first (Types IV., V., XI.), or last (Types II., III., IX.).

### 315.—E.—Simile and Metaphor:—

1. K. uses metaphor freely:—(a) Ceirín do gac créacht an crádh (TBB. 64)—Piety is a salve for every wound. Spiritual failings are compared to bodily wounds, which facilitates the otherwise bold statement that piety is “a healing plaster.” (b) luib-leigeadh do gac lot an lóir-ghíom (TBB. 64)—Satisfaction is a healing herb for every hurt. Note the alliteration, and see F.

2. In his bolder metaphors K. invariably prepares the way, by giving the fact or fable on which the metaphor is founded:—

(a) Re triall éar lear luath-éanna na loch (TBB. 22)—while journeying over the swift-waved sea of sin. Here, and in the metaphors which follow, there was a previous reference to “frail earthen vessels sailing on stormy seas in the darkness of the night.” Hence:—(b) bóchna na beadhach tadhail, —the ocean of this material life. (c) oíche na h-urcóide—the night of iniquity. (d) fá oíle-éio duáilce 7 droc-rúin—under the darksome fog of vice and ill-will. (e) go cuan a críche déireanaíge i gcurrachán crídh na colna—to the haven of his last end, in the earthy skiff of the flesh. (f) lámh-éie na locht do leonadh 7 do ladrad le h-óir na h-aicríge ar leic luim an lóir-ghíoma (TBB. 24)—to wound and mangle the idols of our vices with the hammer of repentance on the bare anvil of satisfaction.

The alliteration in these exx. may be taken as a symbol of the comparison involved in every metaphor, and this symbolic function is a justification of the artifice, when kept within due bounds. See F.

3.—Modern prose writers use metaphor more sparingly, especially if the comparison involved is strange. Where

English has a metaphor, I. will:—(a) have no metaphor at all; or it will be “toned down.” (b) there will be a different metaphor. (c) there will be a definitely stated metaphor, instead of allusiveness of English; or, instead of a metaphor, a simile:—

(a) 1. . . . revealing her noble graceful hull (Wreck of the Grosvenor)—*do žeiðčí RAðARC AR AðMAð A sleasa*. 2. who strain their eyes—*atá aš faire so olúç*. 3. forging new implements—*slizte nua aici 'á sceapað*.

(b) The fulness of his heart would not suffer him to eat a morsel—*bí toçt cóm trom san ar a croidhe ná leogfað sé òó pioc d'íche*.

(c) 1. icy temper—*há méio doiceall 7 duairceas a bí air*. 2. the gay butterflies—*is cuma nó peirleacáin iad*.

4. Where the metaphor would seem crude, it is toned down by such clauses as—*mar a véarfá*—so to speak; *ðar leat*—one would think; or *atá* is used, +in+a G. pron., instead of a downright predication with *is*:—  
(a) *b'uaçðás, mar a véarfá, a žníom*—Her deed was, if I may put it so, a terror. (b) *ða cuma nó splannc, ðar leat, a žníom*—his deed, if I may say so, was as a lightning flash. (c) *ní ðeað mo ceann na çloic, ná mo croidhe na çró çeine, mar atá*—I should not have a head of stone, nor a heart of fire, as I have.

### 316.—F—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets:—

Alliteration symbolizes the unity of idea involved in Hendiadys, *i.e.*, the vivid expression of a single idea by two or more words representing facets of that idea:—  
1. *bí ualaç ar m'aigne, 7 sžeic 7 sžeon am' croidhe* (TBC. 133)—There was a load on my mind and fright and terror in my heart. 2. *atá tuirse 7 troma-çroidhe orm* (TBC. 148)—I'm weary and heavy of heart. 3. *ní béal žan binneas é* (TBC. 91)—His mouth is a mouth of melody. 4. *žan cneað žan créaçt air* (TBC. 160)—absolutely unwounded.

### 317.—G.—Illogical Elements in Construction:—

1. *níl aoinne is fearr so bfuil a fios san aige ná aige féin* (CMD. 309)—No one knows better than him-

self. Here, instead of *aiġe féin*, we should expect *é féin*, as the sentence is a combination of:—(a) *níl daoine is fearr ná é féin*. (b) *níl daoine go bfuil 'fios san aiġe*.

2. Cf. the exx. under Contamination, 309, and the retention of *nó*, in *ní fular nó*, and in *nó go*=until (312, d).

3. Cf. also the use of the copula with verbal forms:—(a) *bá bobaí dom tuicim*—I almost fell. (b) *b'fachtas dom* (Conn.)—It seemed to me. (c) *isfeas dom*—I know.

### 318.—H.—Chiastic Construction:—

*bí cumas ar ceangal 7 ar scaoile, ar neamh 7 an talamh, geallta bío; 7 bí geallta bío ná buabairt geataí lfrinn ar an eaglais sin* (CMO. 278)—The power of binding and loosing, in heaven and on earth, had been promised him, and there had been promised him that the gates of Hell should not prevail against the Church.

### 319.—I.—Progressive Forms:—

I. often prefers the progressive forms, with *ta*, where English has no vb. to be:—1. *Is móire mo mian é clos tusa beir gá ráib san liom* (FSA.)—I desire to hear it all the more, since you tell me this. 2. *bí an t-athair ab' iarraib é cur cun suaimnis* (CMO. 341)—The father tried to soothe him. 3. *Sé gnó an tsagairt beir as cur a gairde suas*—It is the priest's business to pray.

### 320.—J.—Irish objective rather than subjective:—

1. *bá greannmar an sgeal é*—We have thus the singular spectacle. 2. In the case of Dublin we have seen the conflict . . . .—*Do b'ein muinntir bláit cliait a noiceall cum . . . .*

### 321.—K.—Irish concrete rather than abstract:—

1. “the excellencies of full-bodied narrative”—*ínnsint a cur air a beab ar feabhas 7 ar áilneacht 7 ar crumneas*. 2. “the onward sweep of events”—*gníomh á b'eanamh i ndiaibh gníomh*. 3. “the calm and chastity



of the pauses of Fate”—ζαῖν νίῶ να σταῶ, 7 αν ἑννεαμ-  
αινε αἷ φέαῖαινε ανuas ορεῖα ἕο νεαμ-φuaῶραῖ 7 ἕο νεαμ-  
ῖσεαῖ.

### 322.—Difference of Colouring:—

1. Less highly-coloured than English:—(a) “without taking this precaution”—ιν’ ἐαῖμuis sin. (b) “alive with children”—λάν αν ὕαιλλ βαλιῖτε ανn. (c) “basket-chairs”—να καῖαιορεαῖα μόρα λεῖτανα. (d) “flaming sword”—claiῶeαμ noῖταιῖe. (e) “children of Taliesin and Ossian”—clann na breῖtaine biῖe, 7 ζαeῶil na h-ῖireann.

2. I. more highly-coloured than E.—(a) “of the utmost beauty”—αρ αῖlneαῖτ αν ὀmαιν (αρ αιτεas na cruinne). (b) “generation after generation”—να σεαῖτ sleαῖτα. (c) “the greater delicacy and spirituality”—αν blas ὕῶ αρ αῖlneαῖτ 7 αρ uaisleαῖτ 7 αρ spioraῶαῖῖαῖτ. (d) “as she went over to starboard”—nuair a luaisῖti í ὀeiseal le τruime nirt na ζαοιῖe. (e) “I don’t know in the world”—ní φeαῶar ó cúis árῶaiῶ na naoi ὀῖfionn (S.). (f) “exquisite”—áluinn ῖar na beaῖταιῶ.

## PART IV.

### PROSODY.

**323.**—Irish metres are either syllabic or accentual. The former developed from the L. hymns of the 5th and 6th centuries (*Thurn.*), and most I. poetry, between the 8th and the 17th centuries, was written in one or other of the many varieties (there were more than seventy! ). The accentual metres were introduced about the end of the 16th century, under the influence of English poetry.

### SYLLABIC METRES.

**324.**—**ḐÁn ḐÍreΔc:**—

A. **Ḑeibḥe:**—*Lit.* “cut in two” <de composition form of **Ḑó**, and *bithe*, part of O.I. *benaid*, cuts, etc. The metre was so called, because the couplets (except in **Ḑ. Imrinn**) do not rhyme or assonate, as they do in the other syllabic metres. The rules of **Ḑeibḥe** are:—

1° Four lines (**ceΔcramain**) in each stanza (**Rann**). The first couplet is the **seolΔḐ** (**leΔc-Rann cōsaiḡ**), the second the **cōmΔḐ** (**leΔc-Rann ḐeiriḐ**).

2° Seven syllables in each line. (Elision to be reckoned with).

3° **CōmΔRḐΔḐ**—rhyme or assonance between the last word of each of the odd lines and the last word of the even lines. The initial consonant of the **Rinn** (see 4°) is neglected, but the vowels must agree with those of the rhyming portion of the **ÁirḐ-Rinn**, and the following consonants must be of the same class.

The consonants are divided thus:—(a) S (the Queen of consonants) stands alone. (b) The breath stops—p, t, c. (c) The voiced stops—b, d, g. (d) The breath

continuants—ph (þ, ƿ), t̃ (older th), c̃. (e) The voiced continuants—b̃, d̃, g̃, l̃, m̃, r̃; and ñ. (f) The double consonants—ll, m̃ (O.I. mm mb) nn rr̃; and ñg̃. When the consonants are of the same class the *cómarðað* is *slán*; otherwise, *briste*.

4° *Rinn* and *Áirð-rinn*.—I.e., the final words of lines 2 and 4 (*Áirð-rinn*) must have at least (and in the strictest *Deibíðe*, at most) one syllable more than the final words in lines 1 and 3 (*rinn*). The rhyme in *Deibíðe* is un-rhythmical, for, while the *rinn* is stressed, the rhyming part of the *Áirð-rinn* is unstressed.

5° *Uaim*=Alliteration:—(a) Any init. vowel alliterates with any other init. vowel. (b) Any consonant alliterates with the same consonant, or its aspirated or eclipsed form. (c) But þ alliterates only with ƿ or þ (not p). When init. ƿ is aspirated, it is the following sound that alliterates:—*ταζαίν λεαμ, Δ ƿλαίτ λıƿε*—Prove to me, O Lord of Liffey (l: ı). *τs* strictly alliterates only with *τs*, and *ś* only with *ś*. (d) Only unstressed words may stand between alliterating words. When these latter are the last stressed words in the line, we have *ƿíor-uaim*, or *uaim c̃luaise*. Otherwise, *uaim ġnúise*, or *uaim súla*, or *cúl-uaim*.

6° *Uaiçne*—Union or vowel-concord:—(a) Between the word in caesura (I.e., the final word of the odd lines) and a word in the 2nd line of the couplet. This is called *Δiciłł* (Anticipation), and is obligatory in the *cómarð* of most non-*Deibíðe* metres, when the word in caesura does not consonate with the end-rhyme. *Δiciłł* may be *amus* (7°). (b) Between any word in the 1st line and any word in the 2nd line of the couplet. It is sufficient if the vowels are both broad or both slender.

7° *Amus*:—Vowel and consonant correspondence between a word in the odd lines, and a word of the same number of syllables in the even lines. The vowels should be the same, the consonants of the same class.

Ex.— *lomðá scéal maič ar m̃uire*  
*ƿá moltar Δ míorb̃uile,*  
*Do ġéab̃ an an óiġ n-ıoðain*  
*Scéal as cóir do c̃reıdıom̃ain (ΔÓð. 56)—*

Many a good tale is told of M., in which her wonders are extolled; I will tell of the pure Virgin, A tale worthy of credit.

Observe:—1. Four lines of 7 syllables. 2. **CÓMARDAË slán:**—**MUIRE:** míorbúile (r: l), and **IOËAIN:** creid-iomáin (ö: m̃). 3. **Rinn** and **ÁIRË-RINN.** 4. **UAIM** cluaise: **MAIT,** **MUIRE;** molcar, míorbúile; **ÓIG,** n-ioëain (n- does not count); **CÓIR,** creid-iomáin. 5. **AMUS:**—**ÓIG:** cóir (ǵ: r); **ǵEAB:** scéal (ö: l).

**ḃÁCTAË** (Elision):—When a word ending in a vowel is followed by a word beginning with a short vowel, the latter is generally elided. Thus:—**FADA AN TRÉIMSE ATÁ SISE** (KP. 62)—here the **A** of **an**, and of **atá** are both elided. Hiatus is sometimes allowed:—**NOCAN FACA BEOLA EIC**—Never have I seen any horse's mouth.

**B.—Rannaigheacht MÓR:**—1. The stanza=7<sup>1</sup>, 7<sup>1</sup>, 7<sup>1</sup>, 7<sup>1</sup> (7<sup>1</sup>×4). 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. There is generally **UAIM, UAIÇNE, AMUS.**

**Exx. (a)** **CÉADAOIN** luid lúdas tar ord  
 I lorg deamha, díogal garz,  
**CÉADAOIN** ro-ǵaib sainnt um saic  
**CÉADAOIN** ro-ḃraic íosa n-ard (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Observe:—1. **CÓMARDAË slán:**—**GARZ:** n-ard (ǵ: o; both vowels short). 2. **AMUS:**—**ORD:** lorg (monosyllable—o: ǵ); **SAIC:** ḃraic (ro- does not count). This latter is **Aicill**—obligatory, as **saic** and **ard** do not rhyme. 3. **UAIM** absent in line 1, if the **l** of **lúdas** is consonantal; **UAIM** ǵnúise:—**deamha:** díogal. **FÍOR-UAIM:**—**sainnt:** saic; **ÍOSA:** n-ard (n- does not interfere).

**(b)** **DEACAIR** teact ó ǵalar ǵráib,  
 An ǵalar dom-car fá ciac,  
 ní bí an ǵalar ǵan goin bróin,  
 ǵalar nac fóir luid ná liaig (pf. 31)—

Hard to escape from love's disease, The disease that hath settled me in sorrow; It lacketh not the wound of grief, Nor can be eased by herb or leech.

Observe:—1. The **A** of **an** is elided (line 3). 2. **FÍOR-UAIM:**—**ǵALAR:** ǵráib; **dom-car:** ciac (dom- does not count); **luid:** liaig. 3. **UAIM** ǵnúise: **ǵALAR:** goin.

4. ΔΙCΙΛΛ:—BRÓIN: FÓIR (AMUS). 5. The rhyme CIAĆ: UIAİŻ is not good, ċ and ž do not belong to the same class. The diphthongs also disagree.

C.—RANNAIĖEACȚ MÓR ŽAIRIO (=3<sup>1</sup>+3(7<sup>1</sup>)):—

Δ RÍ RIONN,

ŽIO ĐUB MO ĆEAC NÓ ŽIO FIONN,

NOĆA N-IAĐFAIDĖEAR FRI NEAC

NÁR<sup>1</sup> IAĐA CRÍOST Δ ĆEAC FRIOM (Cf. PIM. 14)

O King of stars, Whether my house be dark or light,  
It shall not be closed against anyone, Lest Christ close  
His against me.

Observe:—1. UAIM absent except in line 1. The rhymes RIONN: FIONN: FRIOM compensate somewhat. 2. ΔΙCΙΛΛ:—NEAC: ĆEAC. 3. CÓMARĐAĐ SLÁN:—RIONN: FIONN: FRIOM. 4. NÁR<sup>1</sup>=lest; IAĐA, 3 sg. pres. Subj.

D.—RANNAIĖEACȚ ĐEAG:—1. Stanza=7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>=7<sup>2</sup>×4. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. Generally UAIM, UIĆNE, AMUS.

EX.—Δ EAMAIN IOĐNAC DOIĐINN,

ΔS Δ FIOĐRAĐ AIO-FÉIĐIM,

IS MÓR NĐINE ĐEĐ' ŽUALAINN

RO-ŽAIĐ RÍĖE FOR ÉIRINN (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Pleasant Emania, full of ranked hosts, Whose woods I  
tell of, Many a generation from your shoulder has  
obtained Kingship over Ireland.

Observe:—1. UAIM only in:—IOĐNAC: DOIĐINN; FIOĐRAĐ: FÉIĐIM (AIO- does not count). The UAIM in ŽUALAINN: ŽAIĐ may be intentional. 2. UIĆNE:—IOĐNAC: FIOĐRAĐ (not AMUS, as ċ and đ are in different classes). 3. ΔΙCΙΛΛ absent in the CÓMAĐ, though there is AMUS—NĐINE: RÍĖE (n: ž). 4. No elision in line 1. 5. CÓMARĐAĐ SLÁN:—FÉIĐIM: ÉIRINN. 6. MÓR is neut. Hence the eclipsis. ĐINE is G. pl.

E.—RANNAIĖEACȚ ĐEAG ŽAIRIO (3<sup>2</sup>+3(7<sup>2</sup>)):—

CORP SLEAMAN

AĞUS TAĐĐ FADA REAMAR,

ĐEĐ AN CŌLANN AĞ LOĐAĐ

IS AN T-ANAM AĞ ĐEAMAN (Cf. PIM. 14)—

Nearly all characteristics absent, except the requisite no. of lines and syllables, and the end-rhymes. These latter make up, to some extent, for the absence of the other essentials. In the older version there was *uaidne*:—*cholainn*: *anim*.

F.—**SÉADHNAÖ** (**SÉADRAÖ**):—Derived from *séad*, path (or *séad*, jewel) and an old generic word for “metre,” *nath*. **SÉADRAÖ** has the collective or abstract suffix—**RAÖ**—1. The stanza= $8^2, 7^1, 8^2, 7^1$ . 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. *Uaim* obligatory between last stressed word of line 1, and the 1st stressed word of line 2. 4. *Uaidne* or *amus*, or both. 5. *Aicill*—between final word of line 3, and the 2nd last stressed word of line 4. 6. *Ceann*—the final word of lines 2, 4, is monosyllabic.

CLANN ISRAÉL UAIR SAN ÉIGIPT  
FA ANBUIO NIRT NÁMAÖ DÉ,  
SO MBRIOCT NGLÉISIOMLÁIN NGEAS NDORÇA,  
ÉISIOMLÁIR DÈAS TOLÇA TÉ (HAIÖ. 85)—

The children of I. of old in E., Under dire oppression  
from God's enemies, With fully prepared magic of dark  
spells Were a pretty exemplar of Ireland.

Observe:—1. *FÍOR-UAIM*:—*UAIR*: *ÉIGIPT*; *TOLÇA*: *TÉ*.  
2. *Uaim* *ġnuise*:—*NIRT*: *NÁMAÖ*; *NGLÉISIOMLÁIN*: *NGEAS*.  
3. The special *uaim* in lines 1, 2:—*ÉIGIPT*: *ANBUIO*.  
4. *CÓMARDAÖ slán*:—*DÉ*: *TÉ*. 5. *Amus*:—*NGLÉISIOMLÁIN*:  
*ÉISIOMLÁIR*; *NGEAS*: *DÈAS*; *NDORÇA*: *TOLÇA* (This last  
is the obligatory *Aicill*). 6. Hiatus in line 2. 7. *Ceann*:—  
Final word in lines 2, 4, is monosyllabic.

G.—**DÉACHNAÖ** **DEAG**:—1. Stanza =  $4 \times 5^1$ . 2. Rhyming couplets. 3. *Uaim*, *uaidne*, *amus*.

BAOÖ ĠAC BEART NAÖ BUAN,  
NÍ CUAN SO CUAN DÉ,  
ÍOSA IS LÁIRE LUAM,  
TRUAĠ NÁ TOĠAS É!

Foolish each deed that perishes, There is no haven save  
God's, Jesus is the stoutest Pilot, Pity that chooseth  
Him not.

Observe:—1. *FÍOR-UAIM* in lines 1, 3; *uaim* *ġnuise* in  
lines 2, 4. 2. *CÓMARDAÖ slán*:—*DÉ*: *É*. 3. Elision of *i*

of is in line 3. 4.  $\tau o\zeta as$  is dissyllabic. 5.  $\Delta icill$  in both couplets.

H.— $\mathfrak{D}ea\check{c}na\mathfrak{D}$   $m\acute{o}r$ :—1. Stanza= $8^2$ ,  $6^2$ ,  $8^2$ ,  $6^2$ . 2. Couplets rhyme. 3.  $Uaim$ ,  $uai\check{c}ne$  or  $\Delta mus$ , or both. 4.  $\Delta icill$  not obligatory.

$\mathfrak{F}ear\zeta an \check{C}oim\mathfrak{D}ea\mathfrak{D} re cloinn \acute{A}\mathfrak{D}aim,$   
 $\tau oirne\mathfrak{D} roinn \Delta r\acute{u}in-nim,$   
 $n\acute{í} iom\mathfrak{D}a \mathfrak{D}\acute{u}nn in-\Delta r n\mathfrak{D}aoini\mathfrak{D}$

$\zeta an t\acute{u}r \mathfrak{D}iom\mathfrak{D}a an \mathfrak{D}\acute{u}lim (\mathfrak{D}\mathfrak{D}. 22)$ —

May the Lord's wrath with Adam's children, His bitterness against us decrease; not many of us men but merit the Creator's anger.

Observe:—1.  $C\acute{o}mar\mathfrak{D}a\mathfrak{D}$   $sl\acute{a}n$ :— $r\acute{u}in-nim$ :  $\mathfrak{D}\acute{u}lim$ .—Consonants of class (f), when preceded by a long vowel, may rank with class (e) (ISP. 5); hence the double n does not spoil the rhyme. 2.  $\Delta mus$ :— $cloinn$ :  $roinn$ ;  $\check{C}oim\mathfrak{D}ea\mathfrak{D}$ :  $\tau oirne\mathfrak{D}$ ;  $iom\mathfrak{D}a$ :  $\mathfrak{D}iom\mathfrak{D}a$ . 3.  $Uaim$   $\zeta n\acute{u}ise$  in line 1;  $\mathfrak{F}ior uaim$  in the others. 4.  $Uai\check{c}ne$ :— $\mathfrak{D}\acute{u}nn$ :  $t\acute{u}r$  (Or  $\Delta mus$  acc. to 1. above). 5. No  $\Delta icill$ . 6. The  $\Delta$  of  $an$  is elided in line 4.

I.— $Cas-\mathfrak{D}\acute{a}ir\mathfrak{D}ne$ :—"Twisted (complex) Bardic Art":—1. Stanza= $4 (7^3)$ . 2. Couplets rhyme. 3.  $Uaim$ ,  $uai\check{c}ne$ ,  $\Delta mus$ .

$\mathfrak{D}\acute{o}il molta maor \tau i\zeta earna$   
 $n\acute{í} maor so na\check{c} so\zeta arma,$   
 $\mathfrak{F}i\acute{u} maor m\acute{u}ir mo \tau i\zeta earna$   
 $na \check{c}ao\mathfrak{D} \mathfrak{D}\acute{u}in n\acute{í} \mathfrak{D}ola\mathfrak{D}ra (\Delta\acute{O}\mathfrak{D}. 35)$ —

Worthy of praise is the Lord's Steward, No steward this that cannot be called upon! The Steward of my Lord's castle deserves That I should find it easy to tell of him.

Observe:—1. Seven syllables in each line with trisyllabic verse-ends. 2.  $Uaim-\zeta n\acute{u}ise$ :— $molta$ :  $maor$ ;  $maor$ :  $m\acute{u}ir$ .  $\mathfrak{F}ior-uaim$ :— $so$ :  $so\zeta arma$ ;  $\mathfrak{D}\acute{u}in$ :  $\mathfrak{D}ola\mathfrak{D}ra$ . 3.  $C\acute{o}mar\mathfrak{D}a\mathfrak{D}$   $sl\acute{a}n$ :— $so\zeta arma$ :  $\mathfrak{D}ola\mathfrak{D}ra$ . 4.  $\Delta mus$ :— $maor$ :  $\check{c}ao\mathfrak{D}$ ;  $m\acute{u}ir$ :  $\mathfrak{D}\acute{u}in$ . 5. No  $\Delta icill$ .

J.— $Rionnair\mathfrak{D}$ :—1. Stanza= $4 (6^2)$ . 2. Couplets rhyme. 3.  $Uaim$ ,  $uai\check{c}ne$ ,  $\Delta mus$ . 4.  $\Delta icill$  frequent, though not always, in the  $c\acute{o}m\mathfrak{D}$ .

SÉAN, A CRÍOST, MO LABRA,  
 A COIMHNE SEACHT NÍME,  
 RO-M-BEIRTEAR BUAIÖ LÉIRE  
 A RÍ GRÉINE GILE (F.O. Prol. 1-4)—

Bless, O Christ, my speech, Lord of seven heavens,  
 Let the guerdon of devotion be given to me, O King  
 of the white sun.

Observe:—1. Six syllables in each line with dissyllabic  
 verse-ends. 2. Cómardad slán:—níme: gile. 3. Uaim  
 ghnúise:—beirtear (Ro-m- does not count): buaiö.  
 4. Fíor-uaim:—gréine: gile. 5. Amus (and Aicill):—  
 léire: gréine.

### ACCENTUAL METRES.

**325.**—General conditions:—(a) The feet are measured  
 from stress to stress, one stress often governing several  
 syllables, so that a foot may contain one, two or more  
 syllables. (b) In elision, the unaccented vowel  
 is elided; if both are unaccented and both short,  
 either may be elided. (c) Uaim is common enough.  
 (d) Unaccented syllables before the first stress are  
 called the “*ručaz*.” (e) Internal and end rhymes will  
 be noted in each species.

A.—**LAOI** (laoiö; l. *fiannaiöeac̃ta*):—This repre-  
 sents a transition stage between the old syllabic, and  
 the later accentual metres.

Note:—1. Four-lined stanzas. 2. Three or four  
 stresses in each line. 3. The no. of syllables varies  
 from 6 to 9. 4. Rhyming couplets. 5. Internal rhyme  
 in each couplet like *Aicill* in most non-*Deiöre* metres.  
 6. There is not the same regulated stress in the *laoi*  
 as there is in the other accentual metres. Examples:—

(a) **A OISÍN UASAIL, A MÍC AN RÍOĠ**  
**DOB’ FÉARR GNÍOM̃ ĠAISĠE ĠĠUS ĠLIAÖ,**  
**ĠIC̃RIS DÚINN ANOIS ĠAN M̃AIRĠ**  
**CIÖNNUS DO M̃AIRIS D’ÉIS NA ÖFIANN (L.O.).**

Observe:—1. The stresses are marked. 2. Uaim in  
 lines 1, 2. 3. The end-rhyme—*ĠLIAÖ*: *öfiann*. 4. *Aicill*:—  
*RÍOĠ*: *GNÍOM̃*; *M̃AIR(Ġ)Ġ*: *M̃AIRIS*.



1. Four-lined stanza. 2. Three or four feet in each line. 3. Last foot in each line has the same rhyme all through the poem. 4. The other stresses vary in each line or in each couplet. 5. But there must be assonance between two of these stresses in each line.

(a)  $\text{Do b} \acute{a} \tau \Delta \text{o} \text{ } \text{io} \tau \text{ } \text{is } \text{blio} \tau \text{ } \text{na } \text{f} \acute{o} \text{o} \text{la},$   
 $\text{n} \acute{\text{i}} \text{ } \tau \text{is } \text{f} \text{eo} \text{i} \tau \text{ne } \text{f} \text{eo} \text{ir } \Delta \text{r } \text{m} \acute{o} \text{i} \text{n} \tau \text{i} \text{o},$   
 $\text{t} \text{u} \text{s } \text{san } \text{s} \acute{\text{i}} \text{on } \Delta \text{r } \text{g} \Delta \text{o} \text{i} \tau \text{ } \text{b} \text{ei} \tau \text{ } \text{g} \text{l} \acute{o} \text{ra} \tau$

$\text{Is } \text{t} \text{u} \text{s } \Delta \text{n } \text{i} \text{m} \tau \text{ea} \tau \text{ } \text{t} \text{i} \text{n} \text{n} \tau \text{ea} \tau \text{ } \text{is } \text{t} \acute{o} \text{i} \text{r} \text{ne} \Delta \tau \text{ } (\text{KP. 25}).$

The metre is:—

1.	—	á	—	i	—	i	—	ó	—
2.	—	i	—	eo	—	eo	—	ó	—
3.	—	u	—	í	—	í	—	ó	—
4.	—	u	—	i	—	i	—	ó	—

Observe:—1. The last foot is  $\text{ó} \text{—}$  all through this  $\text{caome} \Delta \text{o}$ . 2. Assonance in 2nd and 3rd foot in each line. 3. First foot of line 2 is monosyllable. 4. No  $\text{ru} \tau \Delta \text{s}$  in line 3. 4. Third foot in line 4 is trisyllabic.

(b)  $\text{Do cua} \text{la } \text{sc} \acute{\text{e}} \text{al } \text{do } \acute{\text{c}} \text{eas } \Delta \text{r } \text{l} \acute{o} \text{ mé},$   
 $\text{Is } \tau \text{u} \text{s } \text{san } \text{o} \text{i} \tau \text{ce} \text{—} \text{i } \text{n} \Delta \text{o} \text{ir} \text{se } \text{b} \text{r} \acute{o} \text{i} \text{n } \text{mé},$   
 $\text{D'f} \acute{\text{a}} \text{s } \text{mo } \acute{\text{c}} \text{re} \Delta \text{t } \text{g} \Delta \text{n } \text{n} \text{ea} \text{r} \text{t } \text{m} \text{n} \acute{\text{a}} \text{ seol} \tau \Delta,$   
 $\text{g} \Delta \text{n } \text{b} \text{r} \acute{\text{i}} \text{g} \text{ } \text{g} \Delta \text{n } \text{m} \text{ea} \text{b} \Delta \text{ir}, \text{ } \text{g} \Delta \text{n } \text{g} \text{re} \Delta \text{nn}, \text{ } \text{g} \Delta \text{n } \text{f} \acute{o} \text{g} \text{n} \Delta \text{m}$   
(p.f. 9).

The metre is:—

1.	—	ua	—	é	—	é	—	ó	—
2.	—	u	—	í	—	í	—	ó	—
3.	—	á	—	ea	—	ea	—	ó	—
4.	—	í	—	au	—	au	—	ó	—

Observe:—1. Last foot  $\text{ó} \text{—}$  all through the poem. 2. Assonance in 2nd and 3rd feet. But the assonating vowels are different in each line. This prevents a monotonous effect. 3. The stresses in 1st foot also are different in each line. 4. Elision in line 2. 5. The entire absence of  $\text{uaim}$ .

D.—**Amráin**:—Originally a song to be sung. Now, any accentual poem (other than A. B. C. above), whether meant to be sung or not. There are many varieties, according to the no. of lines in the stanza, this often depending on the exigencies of the music, or of the *motif* in the mind of the poet:—

(a) **Amráin** written in couplets the stresses generally varying from couplet to couplet. Brian Merriman's "**Cúirt an Meabóin Oíche**" is a typical example:—

1. {  $\text{Do } \text{b} \text{ua} \text{i} \text{l } \text{s} \acute{\text{i}} \text{ } \text{cr} \acute{\text{u}} \text{ca} \text{—} \text{i} \text{m}' \text{ } \text{c} \acute{\text{u}} \text{l } \text{'s } \text{i} \text{m}' \text{ } \text{c} \acute{\text{a}} \text{b} \Delta,$   
 $\text{Is } \text{g} \text{l} \text{ua} \text{i} \text{s } \text{c} \text{u} \text{m } \text{s} \text{i} \text{ú} \text{b} \Delta \text{i} \text{r } \text{g} \text{o } \text{l} \acute{\text{u}} \text{b} \Delta \text{c } \text{l} \acute{\text{a}} \text{i} \text{o} \text{i} \text{r},$

2. {Sciob léi síos mé trío na gleanna,  
 {Cnuic báim buíde  $\bigcirc$  is go binn an teampaill (CmO.11)

The metre of the couplets is:—

- 1.—2 (  $\bigcirc$  | ue  $\bigcirc$  | ú  $\bigcirc$  | ú  $\bigcirc$  | á  $\bigcirc$  ).  
 2.—2 (  $\bigcirc$  | i  $\bigcirc$  | í  $\bigcirc$  | í  $\bigcirc$  | au  $\bigcirc$  ).

Observe:—1. Elision in lines 1, 4. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each couplet.

(b) **Amrán Féin**:—1. Stanza=four lines with uniform stresses in each. 2. Five feet in each line. 3. Two feet in the line assonate:—

Ó'm sceol ar árd-muig fáil ní cochlaim oíche,  
 'S do breoíð go bháit mé dála  $\bigcirc$  a pobuil dílis,  
 Sió ró  $\bigcirc$  fáda  $\bigcirc$  atáio 'na béal re broscar bíodáð,  
 Fá deoíð gur fás a lán do'n cozal tríoča (KP. 19).

The metre is:—4 (  $\bigcirc$  | ó  $\bigcirc$  | á  $\bigcirc$  | á  $\bigcirc$  | o  $\bigcirc$  | í  $\bigcirc$  ).

Observe:—1. Elision in lines 2, 3. Ró-fáda atáio = róo atáio. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each line.

(c) Four-footed line **amrán**, with uniform stresses in each line. Assonance either between the first two feet, or between the second and third. For Exx. see p. 5. 54-5, and compare with **Caoinead**.

(d) Four-line **amrán**, with two systems of stress, or even three, the number of stresses varying somewhat:—

An fáid a beir éan 'san aer amuig,  
 Is taicneam na gréine  $\bigcirc$  ar sléibte mis,  
 Seasfaid a bonn ar a talam go teann,  
 Is ní leasfar a ceann le náire.

Three stress-systems here:—

- (a) Lines 1,2:—  $\bigcirc$  | a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | é  $\bigcirc$  | é  $\bigcirc$  | i (ü)  
 (b) Line 3:—  $\bigcirc$  | a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | ou  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | au  
 (c) „ 4:—  $\bigcirc$  | a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | au  $\bigcirc$  | á  $\bigcirc$

Observe:—1. The stanza=2a+b+c. 2. The 2nd and 3rd feet in (a) assonate (é: é) in every stanza of the poem. 3. There is **aioll** **óubalča** between the end of (b) and the beginning of (c).—a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | ou  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | a  $\bigcirc$   $\bigcirc$  | au.  
 4. No end-rhyme between (b) and (c), but the last foot

(of c) (á ◡) is the same throughout the whole poem.  
5. Elision in line 2.

(e) Five-line *amrán*—the 5th line being a refrain— the same in every stanza:—

MO ġROIÒN ġO BRÁĊ ĊU, ◡A PÁISTÍN Óġ,  
MAR TAOI'N TU BUARĊA SUAITHE D'REOIL,  
MÁ ĊġEANN TU LIOMSA ġEOBĀIR FOĊIN IS CÓIR,  
AġUS ġEOBĀIR TU DUAIS NÁR LUADĀD LEAT FÓS,  
AġUS SEÓ LEÓ ĊOIL, IS NÁ ġOIL ġO FÓIL. (MÁIRE BUIÒE  
NÍ LAOġAIRE).

The metre is:—

1.	◡	OI◡	Á◡	Á◡	Ó
2.	◡	Í◡	UA◡	UA◡	Ó
3.	◡	Í◡	O◡◡	O◡◡	Ó
4.	◡	Ó◡	UA◡	UA◡	Ó
5.	◡	Ó◡	O◡◡	O◡◡	Ó

Observe:—1. *RuĊaġ* in every line, and last foot monosyllabic. 2. The two middle feet in each line assonate.

(f) *Amrán* with eight-line stanzas:—

1° *An Raċcán*:—(a) Eight lines of three feet each, the odd and even lines respectively having the same stresses in the same order. (b) *Aicill* in each couplet.—

ATÁ MO CÓRAID ġAN FUIĊIN,  
IS MO ĊUINGIR ġAN FÉAR ġAN FÁS,  
ATÁ AN-SÓġ AR MO MUIREAR,  
IS A N-UILLINN ġAN ÉADAC SLÁN;  
ATÁ AN TÓIR AR MO MULLAC,  
ġO MINIC Ó ĊġEARNADAN STÁIT,  
ATÁ MO BROSAD-SA BRISTE,  
'SġAN PINGINN DÁ BFIACA ◡IM' LÁIM. (SEÁN CLÁRAC).

The metre is:—

(a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.— ◡ | Á◡ | Ó◡◡ | 1 (ü)◡  
(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.— ◡ | 1◡◡ | É (ia)◡ | Á.

Observe:—1. Stanza=4 (a+b) alternating. 2. Elision in lines 6, 8. 3. *Aicill* *Donair* connecting the lines of each couplet:— 1◡◡:1◡◡.

2° *An τ-Oċtfoclaċ*:—In eight-lined stanzas, when each couplet can be sub-divided into three uniform members, + a fourth of different structure, the metre is called *Oċtfoclaċ* (p.ġ. 64).—

NUAIR ċÉIRĠM ŻO TIGĠAN TABĠAIRNEĠIS ŻLAOĠAIM AR AN  
Drawer,

Is ÉASCAIĠ ĠÍONN TÁIN ĠÍOĠ AŻ TEACT SÍOS;

Is ÉIGEAN LE ĠÁRACT NÁ RÉABAIM MO CÁNÁ

NUAIR PLÉASCAIM AN CLÁR IS MÉĠAŻ FEADŻAIL;

ĠÍONN SAOĠAR AN ĠÁIS ORĠA—"Pray, do you call, Sir?"

NÍ FEADAIM ŻAN ŻÁIRE FÁ'N EALAĠAIN,

Is TRÉAN TIG AN MÁIŻISTIR ŻO SÉISREAC IM' ĠAIL-se,

Is SÉIM TIG IM' LÁĠAIR IS BEANNUIŻEAS. (Seán ó Tuama).

The metre is:—

(a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.—  $\text{—} | \text{é} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{é} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—}$

(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.—  $\text{—} | \text{é} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{ í}.$

This is equivalent to:—  $\text{—} \{ 3 (\text{é} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—}) \} + \text{á} \text{ í}.$

If we call the segment " $| \text{é} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} |$ "  $a^1$ , and " $\text{á} \text{ í}$ "  $b^1$ , then  $a+b$  will  $= 3 a^1+b^1$ , and the final formula for the stanza, instead of 4 (a+b) will be 4 (3  $a^1+b^1$ ). Note the elision in lines 1, 4.

3° Eight-line stanzas of which four constitute a refrain:—

NÁR ĠAILLEAĠ-SA AMARC MO ŠUL,

'S NÁR LAŻAIĠ MO LUĠ LE FOIRĠĠEACT,

ŻO ĠFAICEAĠ AN ĠRAĠAIN I BPÚNNC,

'S AN SEANA-POC ĠACT ŻAN ŻIOTTAĠAIŻE;

Is OSCARĠAĠAŻ COSCAIRT A NAMÁĠ

Le FUNNEAM ŻAC CROĠAIRE ĠINE SCUIT,

SCRIOFAIĠ AS INNIS ŻAC ŻALL,

'SIS SINNE BEAS TEANN'NA ĠFIONNA-ĠRUIŻ. (MAC CRAIĠ).

The metre is:— (a) lines 1, 3.—  $\text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{ú}$   
(b) lines 2, 4.—  $\text{—} | \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{ú} \text{—} | \text{í} \text{—}$   
(c) lines 5, 7.—  $(\text{—}) | \text{o} (\text{í}) \text{—} \text{—} | \text{o} (\text{í}) \text{—} \text{—} | \text{au}$   
(d) lines 6, 8.—  $\text{—} | \text{í} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{ou} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{í} \text{—} \text{—}$

Observe:—1. The stanza  $= 2 (a+b) + 2 (c+d)$ . 2. No elision in line 1. AMARC  $= \Delta V \Delta RC$ . 3. AICILL ĠUBALĠA between a and b:—  $\text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{ú} \text{—} : \text{á} \text{—} \text{—} | \text{ú} \text{—}$ ; and between c and d:—  $\text{o} (\text{í}) \text{—} \text{—} | \text{au} \text{—} : \text{í} (\text{o}) \text{—} \text{—} | \text{au} \text{—}$ . 4. FOIRĠĠEACT is trisyllabic. 5. ĠALL  $= \text{oull}$ .

4° Eight-lined stanzas without AICILL:—



## APPENDIX.

### WORD FORMATION.

#### A.—Verbal Nouns.

**326.-1°** In many compounds the **root** (especially when it ended in a guttural) is inflected as a neuter o- stem:—

**Δῆαῤῥαῖ** (Διῇαῤῥαῖ), change (<O.I. ad-eir-rig, reforms). Cf. Διῇριῇ, Διῇρεαῖ, repentance; **κνῖβεαῖ** (κνῖμρεαῖ), binding, etc. (<O.I. con-rig, binds). New vb.—κνῖβριῇ; **κνῖβαῖ**, covering, etc. (<O.I. con-utaining). New vb.—κνῖβνιῇ; **φοῖαῖ**, hiding <φο-λνιῇ; **τοῖαῖ**, levying, etc. (<O.I. do-boing); **τοῖμαῖ**, increase, etc. (<O.I. do-formaig); **φνῖρεαῖ**, detaining, waiting, watching (<fo-rig).

The above give rise to the vb. n. ending -αῖ:—**κεαῖναῖ**, buying, vb.—κεαῖννιῇ; **κυαῖρβαῖ**, seeking, vb.—κυαῖρβνιῇ; **κνῖαῖσαῖ**, gathering, vb.—κνῖαῖσνιῇ.

**φῦλαῖς**, suffering (<O.I. fo-loing); **ταῖφανν** (ταῖῇαντ), driving, barking at, etc. (<O.I. do-seinn, drives). Vb.—ταῖφναιμ; **ἀῖδαῖ**, adultery, etc. (<O.I. ad-ella, visits); **ταῖδαῖ**, touching, etc. (<O.I. do-aidlea, approaches, assails); **οῖαῖ**, declension (now οῖο-ῇλαοναῖ).

**327.—2°** Some are neuter **io-** stems:—

**Διῇνε**, acquaintance (<O.I. ad-gnin, recognises); **εαῖςνα**, wisdom (<O.I. asa-gnin); **φοῖβα** (φοῖῇ), attack (<O.I. fo-ben); **φρεαῖςρα**, answer (<O.I. fris-gair); **αῖςρα**, **ταῖςρα**, **φοῖςρα**, from the same vb. root; **λνῖςε**, lying. Cf. **φοῖαῖ**, above; **σνῖρε**, sitting (<\*sodium—rt. sed, sod).

**328.**—3° Some are **ia-** stems (F.):—

**CLAR̥e**, fence (act of digging); **ṡur̥e**, prayer, etc.; **ir̥e**, to eat; **sl̥iḡe**, way, road, etc.

**329.**—4° Different stems (**i-** or **a-**), but with **-τ** ending in modern Irish. All Feminine:—

**ḃeirt̥**, to be; **ḃreirt̥**, to bear, etc. In compounds it takes the form **-ḃairτ**. E.g.—**τΔḃairτ**, **ioḃḃairτ**; **τεΔḃτ**, coming (going); **meirt̥**, grinding (O.I. *mlith*); **ceirt̥**, conceal (O.I. *cleith*). Cf.—**cumirt̥**, rubbing, **coiḡirt̥**, concealing, sparing.

**330.**—5° Some were originally neuter **o-** stems, with **-to** suffix. (Cf. **326**, where there was no such suffix):—

**ḃraċ̣**, to betray, etc. (O.I. *mrath*<*mairnid*, betrays); **raċ̣**, grace, etc. (no longer verbal); **ḃearmaḃ**, mistake (**ḃearmaḃ**, with unaspirated *m*, because of **formaḃ**, envy).

**331.**—6° Masculine **u-** stems, some with suffix **-tu-** others with **-mu-**.

(a) With **-tu**:—**molΔḃ**, praise; **síneΔḃ**, stretch. (So all verbals in **-Δḃ**); **ḡios** (<\**vid-tu-s*); **meas**, esteem, etc. (O.I. *midiur*, I judge); **coimeÁḃ**, keep, etc. (O.I. *comét*. U. *coimeáḃ*). In **ḡiosruḡim**, I enquire (<**ḡios**) the *r* is due to **ḡiaḡruḡim**.

(b) With **-mu**:—**ṡn̥ioṃ**, deed; **ḃéanaḡ**, to do; **ḡóḡnaḡ**, service; **conḡnaḡ**, help; **sn̥ioṃ**, spin, etc. **téarnaḡ** from same root; **cosnaḡ**, defend (now also **cosaint̥**); **tuilleaḡ**, earn (<O.I. *do·sli*); **iomraḡ**, voyage (O.I. *im·rá*, voyages).

**332.**—7° Feminine **n-** stems, with **-tiu** in old N. sg.—

**ḃíḃean**, protection (O.I. *do·eim*, protects); **ḡoiḡḃe**, **ḡor̥ne**, patience (O.I. *foditiu*, from *fo·daim*, suffers); **ḡeiscint̥** (**ḡaic̣sin**), to see,—v.n. of O.I. *ad·ci* was *aicsiu*<*ad-ces-tiō*; **ḡaoisḃm**, confession (O.I. *foisitiu*, modelled on O.I. *aititiu*, v.n. of *ad·daim*, admits).

**333.**—8° Feminine **ā-** stems (with suffix **-mā-**):—

**Δḡaḡḡaḡṃ**, dialogue, etc. (G. now **ΔḡaḡḡṃΔ**). New vb.



ἈΓΑΛΛΑΙΜ; CΡΕΙΘΕΑΜ, faith (now M.); Εἰγεαμ, cry, etc. Cf. O.I. erigem, complaint; ΜΑΟΙΘΕΑΜ, boasting (now M.).

**334.—9° Neuter n- stems (with suffix -mn- or -smn-):—**

βέιμ, a blow, v.n. of O.I. benaid. New vb. βέιμιμ; céim, step, v.n. of O.I. cingid. New vb.—céimniḡim; φοḡluim, learn, v.n. of O.I. fo-gleinn. New vb.—φοḡluimiḡim; ὄρέιμ, endeavour, etc., v.n. of ὄρινḡiò, climbs. Cf. ὄρέιμιρε, ladder; ἡαίρμ, calling. But in compounds -ἡρα (neut. iò- stem), φρεἡἡρα, etc.; léim, leap, v.n. of O.I. lingid. Mod. lḡim, léimiμ; μαίòμ, rout, v.n. of O.I. maidid, there is a bursting; réim, course, etc., v.n. of O.I. rédid, journeys; seinm (G. seannma, seinme), playing, etc. (Also seinnt, seinneamaint); snaiòμ, knot. O.I. naidm, v.n. of nascid, knots; tuicim, fall. O.I. tothaim.

**335.—10° Feminine i- stems (with suffix -ni-):—**

Áin, τάιν, ιομάιντ, τιομάιντ, comáιντ—all=the act of driving (Rt. ag, L. ago); buain, reap, <\*bog-ni- v.n. of O.I. bongid, breaks, etc. New verbs, buainim, bainim (v.n. bainτ). Cf. buanuròe, a reaper.

**336.—11° Miscellaneous:—**

Ἀλτραμ, fosterage, etc.—v.n. of O.I. alid, nurtures. Mod. oilim, v.n.—oileamaint. But there is also a verb Ἀλτραμαίμ; Ἀνακαί, protection <O.I. aingid, protects; Ἀὐνακαί, burial—a compound of the previous word; τίοὐλακαὐ, gift, etc.—O.I. tindnacul, v.n. of do·indnaig, bestows; gabáil (O.I. N. gabál, an a- stem, with a doubtful suffix); reic, sell, v.n. of O.I. renaid, sells, modelled on íoc (O.I. ícc). From reic comes éiric, compensation, “eric”; leanamaint, follow (O.I. lenamon); fanamaint, wait (Mid. I. anad); cinneamaint, fate, v.n. of cinnim, I fix, appoint, etc.; céavdal, chanting, v.n. of O.I. canid, sings, with suffix -tlo, can-tlo (neuter o- stem). There are two well-known compounds: cláisceavdal—singing in harmony (now M.), and—φοίρceavdal, instruction, etc.—v.n. of O.I. for·cun, I teach; scríbeann, a writing, léiḡeann, a lesson, etc., and Διφ-

reann, Mass, are modelled on L. gerundial forms, and are not strictly vb. nouns.

**337.**—12° The v.n. is sometimes from a root other than that of the verb:—

ζαλ, is used as v.n. of O.I. fichid. It survives in—εαζαλ, fear (<ek-gal), υίοζαλ, vengeance (υίοζαλτας), ροζαλ, robbery, ροζλυòe, robber, τοζαλ, destruction (Earlier togal), ριονζαλ, the murder of a kinsman; searc, v.n. of caraid loves. υείrc (<υέ+searc), the love of God, alms; ράυ, v.n. of rádíd, is now v.n. of υeirim, I say, the old v.n. of which—epert, now αβαιrc—means phrase, sentence; τεαčτ, v.n. of O.I. tiagu (now τείζim) is used as v.n. of τizim, ταζαim, while ουl is used as v.n. of τειζim.

### B.—Other Nouns.

**338.**—I.—Combination of adjective and noun:—

υεαζ-ćómairle, good advice; ιολαr, many people, things (<il, many and fear); άρυ-rí, high King; ρionn-βαrra, “fair-head,” St. Fionbarr; mór-ćús, self-esteem; ζεαρ(α)-ćuυò, a considerable number (amount).

**339.**—II.—Combination of noun and noun:—

ταλαm-ćúmscuζαò, earthquake; muir-υran, sea-raven; ρίζ-čeač, palace; ρίοò-čac, mousetrap, *lit.*—wood-cat; marc-şluαζ, cavalcade; briačar-čac, word battle; óún-marυαò, homicide; ban-čara, woman-friend; bainis (bain+feis), wedding-feast; anam-čara, spiritual director; ρíon-ζorτ, vineyard; αβαλλ-ζorτ, orchard.

**340.**—III.—Combination of indeclinable particle (other than a preposition) with a noun:—

Sorleas (<so+leas), comfort, etc.; soiceall, joy, opposed to υoiceall, churlishness; sočar, profit, opposed to υočar, loss; mí-meas, disrespect; mí-śásam, dissatisfaction; mí-maise, ugliness; mí-čeist, infamy; υeoζair, diphthong (<de-ρoζar). De is composition form of υó, two; ana-λά, a great day; ana-čaβairτ αμαč, a

great display; *bíċ-ċríġ*, essence; *ḁon-m̃ac ʾé*, the only Son of God; *m̃eom* (*ḁim̃eom*) in phrase *m̃eom*, in spite of; *ḁineolas*, ignorance; *ḁiñeise*, affliction, etc; *ḁiñmian*, passion; *éascóir* (<*en-cóir*), injustice; *éascarĩeac̃t*, promptitude (from *scíċ*, weariness); *ḁim̃leas*, disimprovement, etc.; *ḁm̃ras* (<*ḁim-ireas*, *lit.*—want of faith), doubt *neam̃níċ*, nothing; *neam̃-suim*, carelessness.

**341.**—IV.—By means of prepositional prefixes. (Some vb. nouns are included):—

1° The prep. *ḁ*, Lat. ad:—

(a) Before vowels and old *u*, it appears as *ḁ*:—

*ḁonacal*, burial (<*ad-anācal*); *tar̃b̃se*, ghost, v.n. of O.I. *do-ad-bat*, shows; *ḁoraċ*, adoration.

(b) The *o* assimilates with *t*, *ċ*, *c*, *g*, *b*, *m*:—

*ḁitreab̃*, dwelling, <*ad-treabh*, with *á* because of *ḁit*; *ḁouġaċ*, kindling (fire), from *ḁo-ċóġaċ*; *ḁicsin* (*feiscint*), from \**ad-ces-tio*; *ḁmus*, aim, etc., from *ad-mess*.

(c) Before *l*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *á*:—

*ḁil*, pleasure, from *ad-li*; *áram̃*, counting, from *ḁo-ríom̃*; *áinsiċ*, Accusative case, from *ad-ness*—(O.I. *ainsem*).

(d) With the preposition *oċ* following, it combined to form generally *eċ*, *iċ*, and in modern I. *íoċ*, *íċ*:—

*íoċb̃airt*, *íċb̃irt*, sacrifice, from O.I. *ad-od-beir*, *ad-opair*.

**342.**—2° The prep, *ar*:—

When stressed it appears in modern Irish as:—

(a) OIR.—*oir̃earcas*, conspicuousness (from *ċearc*).

(b) UR, or UR.—*urnuig̃e*, prayer, prayers. O.I. *er-ini-gude*, *irnigde*; *úr̃laċra*, speech, rhetoric. Syncopated in *ḁic̃rig̃e*, repentance (O.I. *ad-eir-rige*).

**343.**—3° The prep, *aiċ* (*aiċe*). It has three forces in modern Irish:—*reiterative*, *intensive* and *negative*:—

*aiċne*, acquaintance; *aiċeasc*, answer (Same rt. as in *cosc*, check); *ac̃-lá*, another day; *aiċb̃liam̃*, New Year; *ac̃cuing̃e*, request; *taċ̃aoir*, reproach.

**344.-4°** The prep. **céΔϑ**:—

Found only in **céΔϑραιϑ**, sense. Thurneysen equiparates it with Gk. *κατά*. We have the same formation in W. *canfod*, to perceive.

**345.—5°** The prep, **com** (L. *cum*, *con-*):—

(a) Before vowels, and *l, n, r*,—**cóm**:—

**Cómairle**, advice; **coim̃deact**, accompanying; **cóm-luad̃ar**, company; **cómnasc**, conjunction; **cómr̃ad̃**, conversation.

(b) Before *i, e, u*, sometimes **cum** (**cuĩm**):—

**Cuĩmreac̃** (**cuĩbreac̃**), binding; **cúmsanaϑ**, repose, etc. (**cóm-ũ-ess-anadh?**).

(c) Before *ϑ*, **con**; before *ς*, **con-** combining with *ς* to form **ng** (single consonant):—

**Coim̃deals̃**, comparison; **cong̃nam̃**, help (**ng̃n=nn**); **cong̃b̃ail**, to keep.

(d) It eclipses *τ, c*, giving **coϑ-**, **coς-**:—

**Coϑlaϑ**; sleep (<**con-tulud**); **cogađ**, war (<**con-cač**); **cogar**, whisper (<**con-cor**).

(e) Before *s* it becomes **co-** (with original doubling of *s*):—**Cos̃mail**, like (<**sãmail**), **cosam̃lačt**, likeness; **cosnam̃**, protection (<**co-sníom̃**).

(f) Before old *v* the *m* disappears in **cũaϑ** (**com-ved**); so in **cuĩmne** (**com-men**). But **cumasc**, mixture, and **cuĩmit̃**, rubbing, have unaspirated *m*. In other cases *m—v* (f) give *ḃ*:—**cuḃus**, conscience, <*ϣios*; **cuḃaϑ**, **cuĩbe**, fitting (**com+fid**). Noun **cuĩbeas**; **coĩḃneas**, relation (**com+fine+as**).

(g) In borrowed words:—

1° **Con** (**com**) renders the L. *con-*:—

**Coim̃liočt**, conflict (with eclipsis of *ϣ-*); **coim̃tinn**, contention; **coínsias**, conscience.

2° **Com-** before *p*:—

**Compóρϑ**, comfort; **comp̃arãiϑ**, comparison; **comp̃ánač**, companion. But see other exx. under (h).

(h) In later compounds the antevocalic form **cóm-** is used before all consonants, and aspirates (in imitation of **réam̃-** before):—

**Cóm̃ct̃ionól**, gathering; **cóm̃ḃruςaϑ**, contrition; **cóm̃-ςluaiseact̃**, simultaneous movement; **cóm̃p̃ãir̃t̃ĩḃe**, part-

ner; *cóm̃ceangal*, union; *cóm̃ðalτα*, member of a society; *cóm̃maoiðeām*, congratulation.

**346.**—6° The prep. *ᾠί*, *ᾠe*:—

(a) Before vowels, and most consonants, *ᾠί*:—

*ᾠiall*, declension; *ᾠioḡḃál*, injury; *ᾠíc̃reab̃*, hermitage; *ᾠímeas*, disrespect; *ᾠíoc̃uim̃ne*, forgetfulness; *ᾠíḃfeir̃z*, vengeance.

(b) Before *ro*, and broad *ć*, *ḡ*, *ḃ*,—*ᾠe*:—

*ᾠearm̃ab̃*, mistake, etc.; *ᾠeac̃or*, difference; *ᾠéañam̃*, to do (with compensatory lengthening); *ᾠeab̃aiḃ*, strife (*de+buith*).

**347.**—7° The prep, *as* (L. ex.):—

(a) Before vowels, and *c*, *τ*, *s*,—*eas*, *eis*:—

*easonóir*, dishonour; *eisiompláir*, example; *eis-ceac̃t*, exception to a rule; *eascara*, enemy; *teas̃taḃ-ál*, v.n. of O.I. *do·esta*, is wanting, etc.; *eas̃laint̃e*, illness (*eas-s̃laint̃e*).

(b) Sometimes *ais*:—

*Aiséir̃ḡe*, resurrection. Perhaps due to *ais* in *ćar n-ais*, back. Cf.—*aiseas̃* (*ícíoc*), restitution: vomiting; *aisnéis*, predication.

(c) Before *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *é*:—

*éaloḃ*, escape, etc. (*ess-lud*); *énir̃ce*, weakness. Now *inir̃ce*, owing to inert, inertia; *éir̃ic*, compensation (*ess-reic*).

(d) Before *b*, *ḃ*, *ḡ*, it appears as *ek-* with assimilation of *k*, giving unaspirated *b*, *ḃ*, *ḡ*:—

*Ab̃air̃t*, phrase=O.I. *epert*< \**ek-bert*; *eas̃gal*, fear, < \**ek-gal*.

**348.**—8° The prep. *ḡan*, O.I. *cen*:—

Only in *ceanñtar*, the district on this side, as opposed to *all̃tar* (obs.) the district on the other side. The radical meaning of O.I. *cen* was “on this side of,” hence “without.” Cf.—L. *cis*, *citra*; Gk. *ἐ-κεῖ*, there; and I. bith *cé*, this world here.

**349.**—9° The prep. *id̃ir*, *eab̃ar*, L. *inter*:—

*eab̃arḡuiḃćeoir*, intercessor; *ḃarḃaoim*, Thursday—

“the day between two fasts.” **IOIR** causes aspiration (imitating **AR**). If **IOARIOIN** is from “**IOAR IOÁ IOIN**,” the non-aspiration of the second **io** may be due to **CÉAOIOIN** (which it follows), or to assimilation to the initial **io**.

**350.**—10° The prep. **FO** (Modern **FO**, **FE**, **FA**, **FAOI**):—

(a) Before consonants, **FO**, **FO** (with compensatory lengthening):—

**FOIGNE**, **FOINE**, patience; **FOIGNAM**, service.

(b) Before **o**, **a**,—**FO**, **FUA**, **FA**:—

**FOGRA**, announcement (**fo-od-gaire**); **FOBART**, attack (**fo-od-bert**); **FUASNAO**, tumult (**fo-od-ess-anad?**); **FAGAIL**, leaving (**fo-ad-gabhail**).

(c) Before syncopated **a** in second syllable—**FA**:—

**FAGAIL**, to get (**fo-gabhail**; **FAGALTAS**, means, property).

**351.**—11° The prep, **FOR**, Gk. *ὑπέρ* L. super:—

**FORMAO**, envy (**for-ment**); **FORAIL**, excess. With metathesis, **FULAIR**, unnecessary; **FORGNUIGTEOIR**, a builder (CMD. 338). Often with **ó**, and aspirating:—**FOIRCEANN**, the very end; **FORLAMAS** (**FORLAMAS**), usurpation, etc.; **FOIRNEART**, tyranny.

**352.**—12° The prep. **FRI**(**ċ**). Root **vrt.** of L. *vorsus*:—

(a) Before vowels, **FRIċ**:—

**FRIċING**, return track; **FRIċÁLAM**, service; **ARÍS**, again < a **frith-éissi**, Accus. of Space.

(b) Before consonants, the orig. **th** of **frith** assimilates: **FREAĞRA**, an answer (<**frith-gaire**).

(c) Later compounds show **FRIċ** before consonants (aspirating like **AIċ**):—

**FRIċBUALAO**, repercussion; **FRIċNAM**, care, diligence = earlier **frithgnam** (<**gníomh**). **Th** became **h**, unvoicing **gh**. The long **í** may be due to **CRÍċNAMAIL**, which has the same meaning as the adj. **FRIċNAMAIL**.

**353.**—13° The prep, **IAR**, after:—

**FIARFUIOE**, enquiry (**v.n.** of O.I. **iarfóig**, with prothetic **f**, metathesis of **r** and **f**, and (in finite verb forms) assimilation to verbs in **-ig**; **IARĊAR**, West (aspiration in imitation of **oirċear**). So **IAR-MIOE**, **IAR-MUMÁ**;

ΙΑΡΛΑΝΝ, pantry; ΙΑΡΣCÚΛ, backward place; ΙΑΡΜΒΕΑΡΛΑ, adverb, etc.

**354.**—14° The prep, **ιμ**ι, **ιμ** (modern **um**):—

(a) Before vowels and **ρ**—**ιμ**, **ιομ**:—

**ιμε**ΔζΛΑ, great fear; **ιομ**Áιν, hurling; **ιμρε**ιμρε, obesity; **τίμ**κεΔλλ (with **το**-), round, about.

(b) Before **ς**—**ιμρ**:—

**ιομ**πόϑ, to turn (<**imbi**-shoud); **ίμρ**ιϑε, supplication (<**imbi**-**sur**ιϑε). But later:—**ιμσε**ΔρC, warm affection, **ιμσ**νίομ, fatigue, etc.

(c) Before other consonants, **ιμ**- (aspirating):—

**ιμ**τσεΔτ, going away; **ιμϑε**ΔρζΔϑ, reviling, etc.; **ιμ**-**ιμ**ιζCέιν, afar. (A contamination of **ιμ**Cέιν and **ιζCέιν**).

**355.**—15° The prep, **ιν**:—

In composition it has three forms, **in**-, **en**- and **ini**- (Gk. *ἐνί*), and a fourth form **ind**- is probably identical with the L. prep, **endo**, **indu** in **induere**, to put on, **Induperator**, archaic form of **Imperator**.

(a) **en**—which becomes **έ** before **ς**, **τ**:—

**έ**ιστεΔτ, listening. O.I. **étsecht**; **έ**ΔζCόρ, wrong. In **τε**ΔζΔςζ, teaching, and **ε**ΔζΔρ, arrangement, the short **e** is irregular.

(b) **ινϑ**- (now **ιονν**):—

**τιονν**σCΔϑΔλ, a beginning, v.n. of O.I. **do·in·scanna**; **τιονν**σCΔλ, design, etc. (Pron. **tiûscal** in W. Munster); **τιονν**τCόϑ, turning (<**to**-**indi**-**soud**) **ιονν**ΔρβΔ, exile (O.I. **indarbae**); **ιονν**ρΔϑ, attack (K.), O.I. **indred**.

(c) Before vowels, and many consonants, **ιν**:—

**ιν**φίúCΔϑ, scanning; **ιν**ιϑ, Shrovetide. L. **initium**, beginning (of Lent); **ινϑε**Δρ, estuary; **τιν**φεΔϑ, aspiration. O.I. **tinfed**<**to**-**in**-**fed** (**sved**).

(d) **ιμ**ι-:—

Úρνuiğtce (See **342**); **ιν**ğean, daughter, Ogham **inigena**. Cf. L. **indigena**, native.

**356.**—16° The prep. **ó** (**υ**Δ, **ο**ϑ, **υ**Δϑ):—

(a) Syncopated:—

**ιο**ϑβΔιρC, sacrifice; **ϑ**ίομυς, pride (<**di**-**ud**-**mess**);

cúmhach, protection, etc. (<com-ud-ding—conutaing).

(b) After fo, ro, to, we get fó, ró, tó:—

fógra, announcement; tógáil, raising. In tobar, well, and tosač, beginning, the short o is irregular.

(c) Before l,—ó:—

tionól, a gathering.

**357.**—17° The prep, **re**, before:

The composition form in modern I. is réam.

Réamfocal, preposition; réamráð, foreword; réam-  
cheachtáir, antecedent (of relative).

**358.**—18° The prep, **ro**, L. pro:—

Roḡa, choice (subjective), toḡa (objective); ros, promontory (<prosthā?); dearmad, mistake, etc.

**359.**—19° The prep. **se**ach:—

Seachadad nóblaḡ, Xmas box (<2 sg. prep. pron. seachad, past you).

**360.**—20° The prep, **tar**:—

Coirmeasc, confusion, etc.; tairmcheacht, transgression.

**361.**—21° The prep, **to** (pretonic, to):—

(a) Before consonants—mostly to (tu), tó (with compensatory lengthening):—

tuirim, falling, O.I. tothaim; tómas, riddle, etc. (<to-fo-mess); ti- in tiḡeacht (modelled on tiḡim?). O.I. tuidecht, with ð for th.

(b) **ta**, **tá**:—

taðairt, <to-bert, because of the Perf. tarat (<do-rat); tárla, happened, <O.I. tarla (<do·rala.)

(c) **te**- in teilḡim, I throw away, v.n. teilḡean. From to-en-léig <teillg, teilg (*Thurn.*, 481).

(d) **tí**- in Conn. Fut. tiubrad, on the model of the old reduplicated Fut. with i in reduplicating syllable.

(e) Before vowels, **t**- (tó, tua, before oð-, tógáil):—

táin, drove, etc. (<to-ag-ni-s); tuisḡint, tímceall (í because of *position* before -mbč).



(f) **τό-** before **φορ**, **οῖ**:—

**τόρμας**, increase, v.n. of O.I. **do-for-maig**; **τόζάιλ**, raising, <**to-od-gabáil**.

**362.**—22° The prep. **τρέ**:—

**τριαλλ**, journey. Cf. **αῖοαλλ**, **ταῖοαλλ**, **οιαλλ**, from the same root.

**363.**—V.—By means of Suffixes.

A.—From adjectives:—

1° The suffix **-e** (=old **-ια**):—

**ῥαίλτε**, welcome, from **ῥαίλιος**, joyous; **ῥυαίρε**, coldness. With many adjectives, however, this suffix is not used. E.g.—**μόρ**, **βεας**, **οίς**, those in **-αῖμαίλ**, or those ending in a vowel.

2° **-e** (< **-ιο**, orig. neut. stems):—

**ῥεῖσε**, prettiness, etc.; **μαῖσε**, beauty. Now F. like those in 1°.

3° **-ise**, **-se** (an extension of 2°):—

**σαοίρσε**, freedom; **ῥαοίρσε**, bondage. Now F. like 1° and 2°.

4° **-τυτ**. O.I. Nom. in **-u** (Now in **-α**, or **-e**):—

**βεαττα**, life, O.I. **bethu**; **σλάντε**, health, O.I. **slántu**.

5° **-ας**. Old **-us** < **essus**, **estus**; and **ας** from **-assus**:—

**lonnracas**, uprightness; **binneas**, melody. O.I. **bindius**.

6° **-s**, from monosyllabic adjectives:—

**ῥαοίς**, folly (**ῥαοτ**); **ζαοίς**, wisdom (**ζαοτ**, wise); **ζηάς**, fashion (**ζηάτ**); **scíos** (**scís**), fatigue (**scíτ**).

7° **-ατ** (Collective and abstract):—

**Cosamlaτ**, likeness, etc.; **clisteατ**, cleverness; **mórῥατ**, majesty. Nouns in **-ατ** from adjectives in **-μαρ** seem to come through the abstract in **-e**:—**líonμαρ**, numerous, gives **líonmaíre**, **líonmaíreατ**; **neartμαρ**, strong, gives **neartmaíre**, **neartmaíreατ**.

8° **-α** (Now mostly **-e**. O.I. **bochta**, poverty, now **boicté**). But—**úrlaῖῥα**, speech; **ceannsa**, gentleness (Now usually an adj. The old adj. was **ceannais**. K. has **ceannais**).

9° -**τας**, -**δας**=Mid. I. tu+as. The former is used after consonants, the latter after vowels:—

**βρέαντας**, putridity, Mid. I. bréntu; **δورδάδας**, darkness, Mid. I. dorchatu.

10° -**αρ**, -**αῖαρ**:—

**ιολαρ**, many, from ιλ-; the few in -**αῖαρ** may have originated in **σαλαῖαρ**, dirt, from **σαλαῖ**, dirty (lit. salacious); **λαῖααρ**, weakness; **μαλλιαρ**, weakness (mostly of sight).

11° -**τ**, from adjs. in -**αῖ**:—

**ῥεαῖμannaτ**, stewardship; **καρῖannaτ**, charity.

12° -**αῖ**:—

**υαῖαῖ**, singleness, etc., either from the rt. seen in Gk. *αὐτός* self, same, or from pau- as in L. paucus, few.

13° **ιῖε** (preceded by a dim. suffix -**γο**-):—

**Seanῖαιε**, story-teller. Cf. L. senex, I. **seanῖas**, history, etc. The L. re-ci-pro-cu-s, going backwards and forwards, contains the suffix -**γο**- twice.

14° -**σεαῖ**, a F. termination. Cf. L. -issa:—

**ῥαιλλσεαῖ**, foreign women, ear-wig; **céirseαῖ**, female blackbird (**ciar**, black); **βáινσεαῖ**, white cow; **mínnσεαῖ**, young she-goat (**míonn-án**, **meann-án**, kid); **ῥirrσεαῖ**, girl (**ῥεarr**). **lonῖσεαῖ**, exile, etc., does not contain this suffix, but -**αῖ** from **lonῖεas** exile, etc.

15° **is-tero-**. A double comparative suffix found in:—

**Sínnsear**, elder, ancestor <sen-is-teros; **sóisear**, junior (O.I. óssar) modelled on the preceding. The suffix -**is-** is the weakest form of the compar. suffix found in L. iōs, ies, is. (L. major <mag-iōs; majestas <mag-ies-tas; mag-is).

16° -**αῖ**:—

**ῥάσαῖ**, desert, from **ῥάς**, waste, L. vastus.

17° -**ινε**. Cf. L. -inia:—

**ῥíninne**, truth.

18° **ός**:—

**ῥνάτος**, wild beast's lair; **ciarός**, black chafer (**ciar**, black).

19° -**άν** (dim.):—

**βεαῖζάν**, little, few; **mórán**, much, many; **Ciarán** (man's name).

364.—B.—From nouns:—

1° -**ΔĆȚ**:—

**ȚeΔĆȚaireΔĆȚ**, message; **ȚilȚeΔĆȚ**, poetry; **breiȚeΔġnaĆȚ**, judgeship. From nouns like this last one—**ΔġnaĆȚ**, spread. E.g.—*Bibdamnacht*, from *bibdu* (a dental stem). Hence **bȚeΔġnaĆ**, thief, villain.

2° -**ΔĆȚain** (in vb. nouns, -**ΔĆȚaint**, -**Ćaint**):—

**CuȚeΔĆȚain**, company; **aireΔĆȚaint**, hearing; **aiȚ-ȚeoȚĆaint**, reviving. In vb. nouns -**ΔĆȚaint** seems to come from **beΔġnaĆȚain**, **maġlaĆȚain** (D. sg.), with -**Ț** added, as in **Țanaġaint**, **leanaġaint**.

3° -**Δs**:—

**lānaġnas**, carnal intercourse; **ΔȚalȚras**, adultery. This contains also the compar. -**ter** (syncopated, -**tr**), with reminiscence, no doubt, of L. adulter, adulterium. The other form, **ΔȚalȚranas**, from **ΔȚalȚrannaĆ**, which, perhaps, owes its -**annaĆ**, to **eΔĆȚrannaĆ**, foreigner.

4° -**isse**, Mod. -**ise**:—

**ȚiaȚnaise**, witness, O.I. *fiadu*, a witness, g. *fiadan*. there is no need to call in the Mid. Eng. *witnesse* to explain our form.

5° -**raȚ**, -**raȚ**, collective.

**luaiȚreaȚ** (**luaiȚreaĆ**) ashes. Cf. L. *lavo*, I wash. Ashes are Nature's soap; **oiȚre(ΔȚ)**, ice, O.I. *aig-red*; **ȚnȚoġmaȚraȚ**, deeds. From this **ȚnȚoġmaȚraĆ**, used as Pl. of *gnȚoġm*. Cf. **connaȚraĆ**, Pl. of **connaȚraȚ**; **laȚȚraȚ**, fighting men. L. *laicus*, layman (Clerics were exempt from military service); **maĆraȚ**, youths; **saġmaȚraȚ**, Summer (Gk. *ἡμέρα*, day); **ȚeiġmaȚreaȚ**, Winter (L. *hiems*).

6° -**laȚ**, collective (Really the n. **ȚlaȚ**, Kingdom):—

**ēΔnlaȚ**, birds (the bird Kingdom).

7° -**ȚraĆȚ**, collective:—

**ȚΔnȚraĆȚ**, women-folk.

8° -**Δirt**, collective:—

**conΔirt**, hounds. Possibly the noun **sraȚ**, series (Cf. L. *sero*). For the change in form in compounds, cf. **breiȚ**, **ȚΔȚΔirt**, etc.

9° -**laĆ**, collective. (The n. **slȚȚ**, **sluΔȚ**, host):—

**ȚeΔȚlaĆ**, household; **muĆlaĆ**, piggery, drove of pigs.

10° -**iȚe** (earlier -**iȚ**, -**ith**), denoting the agent:—

**scēΔlaȚiȚe**, story-teller; **ΔinmniȚe**, the Nominative.

11° -**am̃**, -**eam̃**, denoting the agent:—

**breiceam̃**, judge; **féiceam̃**, debtor, from **fiaċa**, debts; **luam̃**, pilot, <\*pleu-; **ḡúileam̃**, Creator, from **ḡúil**, creature, element. **feallsam̃**, philosopher, is assimilated to this class. Earlier **felsub**, from L. (Gk.) **philosophus**.

12° -**aire** (L. -ārius), denoting the agent:—

**teachtair**, messenger; **básaire**, executioner; **reachtair**, law-giver; **álair**, brood-mare.

13° -**óir**, agent, instrument:—

**ḡóirseoir**, door-keeper; **coinnleoir**, candlestick.

14° -**úir**, -**túir**, agent:—

**ḡoċtúir**, doctor; **créatúir**, creature, is, like Eng. creature, derived from L. **creatura**.

15° -**tóir**, -**ḡóir**, -**adóir**, also denote the agent:—

**ceoltóir**, musician; **spealadóir**, mower; **breadadóir**, wheedler; **seanadóir**, senator; **purgadóir**, Purgatory. From these last two the suffix -**adóir** spread.

16° -**án**, diminutive:—

**liomán**, elm. O.I. **lem**, L. **ulmus**; **cnocán**, hillock; **corcán**, pot, from **crocán**, from E. **crook**.

17° -**ḡán**, -**asán**, diminutive:—

**íosasán**, little Jesus; **doḡasán**, Egan, <**doḡ**. We may have here a blending of the Britannic -og (=I. **ac̃**) with -**án**. Or **ḡ** may be due to **beasán**, etc. We find also:—

-**acán**—**méaracán**, thimble; -**acán**—**scasacán**, strainer; -**nacán**—**sam̃nacán**, salmon-trout, from **sam̃**, summer; -**adán**—**breadadán**, toy, **bioránadán**, pin-cushion; -**racán** **boḡracán**, blubberer.

18° -**naid** (-**naic**), diminutive:—

**bláċnaid**, Little Flower; **ḡreanncaid**, flea, <**dearg-naid**; **ḡobnaic**, St. Gobnait; **ḡiallaid**, saddle, may also have this suffix; **truasḡnaic** (KP. 75), poor wretch.

19° -**ín**, diminutive:—

**firín**, little man; **nóirín**, little Nora.

20° -**ós**, -**tós** (diminutive originally):—

**siḡeós**, fairy; **míoltós**, gnat; **cuasnós** (**cúnsós**) nest of honey-bees—from **cuas**, recess, hollow.

21° -**ne**, -**ine**, diminutive, collective, singulative:—

**foirtne**, single hair—from **foit** (collective); **ḡráinne**, a grain; **ainḡċine**, stormy weather—from **anḡad**, storm.

22° -lo (I. -**ΔΛ**):—

Τυαῖ**ḗ**Δλ, withershins. Cf. τυαῖ**ῶ**, North (the left); **ῶ**εῖσεΔλ, the turn to the right; τεῖμεΔλ, darkness; νέΔλ, cloud—from neb-lo. L. nebula.

23° -**ΔΝΑΣ**:—

Τρεῖ**ῶ**εΔνας, abstinence. (Three days, three days' fast and abstinence—from τρεῖ**ῶ**e, three things, under the influence of L. triduanus. Cf. ἈῶΔαλτραΔνας. 3°.)

24° -**CEART**, with local meaning:—

Τυαῖσε**ART**, the North (the -s- is due to **ῶ**εῖσε**ART**, the South).

25° -**ΛANN**, where things or persons are kept:—

ῶεΔ**ḗ**Λann, apiary; λεΔῶΔ**ḗ**Λann, library; οῖΔ**ḗ**Λann, infirmary; Δ**ḗ**μα**ḗ**Λann, theatre; Δ**ḗ**ρμ**ḗ**Λann, armoury; β**ḗ**αῶ**ḗ**Λann (*Oriel*), kitchen. Δann**ḗ**Λann, sauce, contains the root of W. llyn, drink. Cf. I. linn.

26° -**ΤΑΣ**, -**ΤΑΣ**:—

Δ**ḗ**τε**ḗ**αν**ḗ**Τας, knowledge; φ**ḗ**αῶ**ḗ**αν**ḗ**Τας, wildness; ὕ**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**ḗ**αν**ḗ**Τας (ὕ**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**ḗ**αν**ḗ**Τας) authority. Mid. I. augtortas.

27° -**ΔḤ**:—

Conn**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ** (conn**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**), stubble—from Mid. I. condall, stalk, stubble.

28° -**ΔRNAḤ** (In some instances, from -ΔR and -**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, the suffix -**ΔḤ** with accretion of **n** from **n**- stems):—

Co**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, whispering; cla**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, heavy rain. In these two the suffix is really -**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**. From them may have spread -Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**; cna**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, crackling; lia**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, sighing; lui**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, weeds; sio**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, whispering (sio**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**, a hiss); ḡ**ḗ**nu**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RNA**Ḥ**, soft lowing of a cow.

29° -**ΔḤΤΔḤ**, collective or iterative:—

Ca**ḗ**sa**ḗ**Ḥ**Ḥ**Τ**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, coughing—from rt. cas, W. pas, hooping cough; ḡ**ḗ**nu**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**Ḥ**Ḥ**Τ**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, soft lowing.

30° -**RAḤ**, -**LAḤ**—of the noises made by animals:—

Δ**ḗ**ma**ḗ**stra**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, barking—from Δ**ḗ**ma**ḗ**stra**Ḥ** (suffix really -**ΔḤ**); ḡ**ḗ**im**ḗ**re**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ** (also ḡ**ḗ**im**ḗ**ne**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**), lowing; ḡ**ḗ**ra**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, clucking of hens (onomatopoeic); sio**ḗ**sa**Ḥ**RA**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, sio**ḗ**ta**Ḥ**RA**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ** (sio**ḗ**re**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**), neighing; -**ART**Δ**Ḥ**, in:— srao**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RT**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**, sneezing (srao**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**), uall**ḗ**ḡ**ḗ**Δ**Ḥ**RT**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ** (uall**ḗ**fa**Ḥ**RT**Ḥ**Δ**Ḥ**), said of swine (uall**ḗ**fa**Ḥ**RT**Ḥ**, growl). Here the suffix is really -**ΔḤ**.

31° -**ḡail**, -**ḡal**, -**uíol**:—

**camastuíol**, moral crookedness; **ḡráḡḡail**, clucking; **ḡnúḡḡail**, lowing; **pusuíol**, pouting; **ḡeabuíol**, whistling.

32° -**sine**:—

**ḡáistine**, prophecy—from **ḡáiṛ**, prophet. O.I. fáith-sine.

**365.—C.—**From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns.

1° -**tar**:—

**oirṡear**, the East. Cf. prep. **ar**, and adv. **ṡoir**; **iarṡar**, the West. Cf. prep. **iar**, and adv. **ṡiar**; **uaṡtar**, the top; **ioṡtar**, the bottom; **ceanntar**, district; **neṡtar**, **ceṡtar**, one of two or more.

2° -**lann**:—

**iarlann**, back room, pantry. The word **iarleac**, tombstone, occurs in the U. song, **éamonn buirṡe**.

**366.—D.—**From Verbs.

1° -**ṡ**, the agent, or kindred meaning:—

**áinsirṡ**, Accusative case—from ad-ness-.

2° -**ṡṡ**, abstract:—

**ṡuḡṡṡ**, proneness to—from the participle **ṡuḡṡ**.

3° -**as**, -**ṡas**:—

**ṡaḡarṡas**, gift—from the participle **ṡaḡarṡ**; **ḡáḡalṡas**, means—from the participle **ḡáḡalṡ** (**ḡaḡalṡ**).

4° -**nt** (-**ṡṡ**):—

**carṡ**, friend—from **caraiṡ**, loves. Cf. L. participle in -nt.

5° -**vōs** (Cf. Gk. Perf. Part. Act. in -*ως*):—

**Coimdiu**, Lord, mod. **Coimṡe**, from \*com-med-vōs.

O.I. **midur**, I judge.

6° -**s**:—

**bás**, death. Orig. v.n. to root **ba-**. Cf. Gk. *ἔβη*, Sk. *agat*, he went.

7° -**am**, the agent:—

**luam**, pilot—from root \*pleu, to sail.

8° -**neoir** (through v. nouns in -n), -**tóir**, -**adóir**:—

**scríḡneoir**, writer; **moltóir**, adjudicator; **ḡiḡeadóir**, weaver.

9° -tro- (I. -τᾶρ):—

λότᾶρ (λοτᾶρ), canal, cauldron, etc. L. lavacrum, bath; τᾶρατᾶρ (τράτᾶρ), gimlet. Gk. τέρε-τρο-ν.

10° -aire:—

κλαῶaire, thief, rogue, a fish after shedding its spawn. Cf. κλαῖριζιμ, I dig. For the deterioration in meaning, cf. E. knave, villain, pagan.

### Formation of Adjectives.

**367.**—See 84. Besides the suffixes enumerated there, note the following:—

1° From Numerals:—

(a) -to, -eto (I. **εᾶῶ**):—

Κύζεεᾶῶ, seiseeᾶῶ, 5th, 6th.

(b) The double suffix -mmo+-eto (I. **-ῃᾶῶ**):—

τρίῃᾶῶ, ceᾶτᾶῃᾶῶ, 3rd, 4th, etc. In the I.G. period sometimes -mo was used, sometimes to. E.g.—L. decimus, 10th <\*dekm-mo-s. Gk. δέκατος <\*dekm-to-s. The two are combined in the I. suffix **-ῃᾶῶ**.

2° From Nouns:—

**-ineᾶč, -ᾶᾶč**:—

τοῖτᾶᾶᾶč, willing (τοῖτ); ὀλίστεᾶᾶᾶč, legal (ὀλίγε). These suffixes originated from words like ᾶῃᾶᾶᾶč, ᾶῃᾶᾶᾶč (from ῃᾶ-, ῃᾶ- stems) with the suffix **-ᾶč**; ᾶᾶᾶᾶč, lasting—from ᾶᾶᾶᾶᾶᾶ, G. ᾶᾶᾶᾶᾶ.

3° From Prepositions:—

**-lo**:—

ᾶᾶᾶᾶ, noble (ός, above); ῖᾶᾶᾶ, lowly (ίος, ῖς, below).

### Formation of Verbs.

**368.**—1° Many verbs are derived from nouns and adjectives, by adding the termination **-ιῡ, ᾶιῡ**:—

ᾶοῡᾶῡῡῡῡῡ, I work; ῡᾶᾶᾶῡῡῡῡῡ, I improve, etc. When the noun was an ῃᾶ- stem, this ῃᾶ appears before the suffix;—

Διῃμνίσιμ, I name; céimníσιμ, I step, advance. This class affects other verbs, “n” appearing by analogy:—

CRÍOC-n-UIŚIM, I finish—from CRÍOC (Δ- stem); CRUIČ-n-İŚIM, I create, form—from CRUIČ (U- stem); CRIOČ-n-UIŚIM, I tremble—from CRIČ, G. CREΔČΔ, shaking, ague.

Further *normal* examples:—

SLÁNUİŚIM, I make well; FOİLLİŚIM, I publish (FOİLLUS, clear); ÁRDUİŚIM, I raise; ÍSLİĞIM, I lower.

2° Many verbs are compounded with prepositions. These have been dealt with already.

### CRÍOC.

















